This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

Palladius on Husbondrie.

4173

Palladius

On Husbondrie.

FROM THE UNIQUE MS. OF ABOUT 1420 A.D.
IN COLCHESTER CASTLE.

EDITED BY THE

REV. BARTON LODGE, M.A.,

FORMERLY RECTOR OF ST. MARY MAGDALEN, COLCHESTER.

WITH A RYME INDEX

EDITED BY

SIDNEY J. H. HERRTAGE, B.A.,

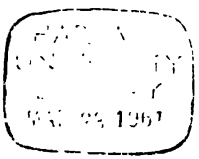
EDITOR OF TUSSER'S "FIVE HUNDRED POINTS OF GOOD HUSBANDRY."

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY, BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXIII. *and* MDCCCLXXIX.

11472.52



52 AND 72.
HERTFORD:
PRINTED BY STEPHEN AUSTIN AND SONS.

PREFACE.

Of the author of this translation nothing certain is known, and he has not left us any clue by which we may hope to discover traces of his name, position, or history: *stat nominis umbra.* Very possibly he may have been a member of one of the Religious Houses in Colchester, or the neighbourhood; but this is only conjecture, founded upon the known facts that gardening was a favourite pursuit of the inmates of these houses, and Palladius was held in repute amongst them. The translator occasionally speaks in his own person, in parentheses, and in the Prologues and Epilogues, and though he does not thus help us in determining directly who he was and where he lived, he affords us abundant evidence that he was a religious and devout man. He must have been possessed also of considerable learning, for those times, to have been enabled to render his Author so correctly as he generally does; and his success in reproducing a Prose writer in a Poetic dress indicates some literary taste as well as leisure. The Editor is not aware of the existence of any other translation of Palladius into English, though he has been published in the vernacular of most of the other European nations. Of the time and place at which the present translation was produced, we may judge approximately by internal evidence. The form and structure of the language point decidedly to a period little subsequent to the age of Chaucer. The grammatical peculiarities lead to this conclusion; the Stanza adopted was a favourite one with the great Poet in his early Canterbury Tales; and in our text expressions and turns of thought frequently occur, which may justify the surmise that the translator, whoever he

was, had recently read and admired Chaucer's wonderful poem, and was led to an unconscious and humble imitation of his verse. Some of the grammatical forms ordinarily employed by this writer shall be appended, by which the Chaucerian reader will be enabled to see at once the similarity referred to. In the structure of the verse it is worth remarking that there is the same tendency as in Chaucer to conclude a paragraph with a syllable, the rhyme to which occurs at the commencement of the next paragraph, and not to complete the rhyme with the paragraph, according to modern usage. Both writers also are in the habit of making words of the same form rhyme together if used in different senses. The author of this translation frequently in a marked manner is at pains to show by his Latin explanations that there is this difference in the words of the same sound at the conclusion of his lines. With respect to the final *e*, this writer's usage cannot be made amenable to the same laws which have been applied with so much ingenious plausibility to Chaucer. Whether these rules were strictly observed by the great poet or not, enough has been done by Dr. Morris, Professor Child, and others, to vindicate him from the absurd charges made against his versification by Dryden. Whilst I am on this subject I must just remark with regard to the common word "atte," which is generally explained to mean *at the*, that in this work it repeatedly occurs, sometimes as a monosyllable, sometimes as a dissyllable, with the definite article immediately following. Our language was then evidently in a transitional state; and the dialect employed by our translator was, according to the *criteria* supplied by Dr. Morris, that of the East Midland districts. The Anglo-Saxon letters þ (thorn) and ƿ (wen) are not once used; the plural of verbs ends generally in *th*, the infinitive often in *en*, the present participle in *yng* or *ing*, but never in *and* or *ande*; the past participle has often the *i* or *y* prefixed to it: the pronouns are frequently used in the dative. But more of this in the Grammatical Paradigm.

The Manuscript from which this transcript has been made had been lying long unnoticed in the Library of Colchester Castle; but how it came there, and whence it was brought, there is no record to show. Probably it was presented to the Book Society, with many other volumes, by the late Charles Gray, Esq.: it has the printed Book-plate of the Society within the cover, and the same impressed on the outside. It had evidently been subject to much ill-treatment before binding; for the title-page is gone, several pages at the end have been rudely torn, and the blank pages have been scribbled over. The MS. is on parchment, in a good hand, carefully written in most places, though sometimes showing signs of carelessness in the copyist; occasionally a whole line is omitted, probably from inadvertence, but once or twice a space is left, as if the author had not completed the translation. Reference will be made to these in the notes. The binder, by a strange blunder, has lettered the volume "Tusser's Calendar MS."

With regard to the personal history of Palladius himself, known facts are very scanty. We can assert that he was called Palladius Rutilius Taurus Æmilianus, that he lived and wrote about the time of Theodosius, in the fourth century, and that his work on Husbandry in fourteen Books obtained some celebrity; but in determining the place of his birth, or whether he was a lawyer or physician, as well as a practical agriculturist, we have little more than conjecture to rely on. There is, however, every reason, short of absolute demonstration, for believing that the following verses apply to the author of the treatise here translated: at any rate they have merit enough of their own to justify their reproduction. They are by Rutilius, and were published in his Itinerary.

Tum discessurus studiis urbique remitto
Palladium generis spemque, decusque mei,
Facundus juvenis Gallorum nuper ab arvis
Missus Romani discere jura fori.

Ille meæ secum dulcissima vinculacuræ,
Filius affectu, stirpe propinquus habet,
Cujus Aremoricas pater Exsuperantius oras
Nunc postliminium pacis amare docet.

The purity of Palladius's Latin style is remarkable, considering the time at which he wrote; and numerous copies of his work attest the honour in which he was held. Not only in Italy, to which country his directions are more particularly adapted, but in other countries also, he has been much read; and when our own Milton undertook the office of tutor to his sister's two sons and others of his friends, according to Toland, "not content to acquaint his disciples with those books that are commonly read in the schools, wherof several are no doubt excellent in their kind, tho' others are as trivial or impertinent, he made them read in Latin the ancient authors concerning Husbandry, as Cato, Varro, Columella, and Palladius." That part of the work which relates to the vine, and has apparently little to interest the practical husbandman in this country, was once perhaps as acceptable as any: for, beyond a doubt, vine-growing and wine-making were formerly carried on to a great extent in England, as Master Barnaby Googe, who wrote in the year 1614, bears witness on this wise in the Introduction to his work, founded on a German original, on the "whole art and trade of Husbandry, contained in foure Bookes, viz.—I. of Earable-Ground, Tillage and Pasture; II. of Gardens, Orchards, and Woods; III. of feeding, breeding, and curing all manner of Cattell; IIII. of poultrie, fowle, fish, and bees:—

I have also beene carefull about the planting and ordering of the Vine (though some of my friends would have had it omitted, as altogether impertinent to our countrie): because I am fully perswaded, if diligence and good husbandrie might be used, wee might have a reasonable good Wine, growing in many places of this Realme; as undoubtedly we had immediately after the Conquest, till partly by slothfulnesse, not liking any thing long that is painefull, partly by Civill discord long continuing, it was left, and so with time lost, as

appeareth by a number of places in this Realme, that keepes still the name of Vineyards; and upon many Cliffes and Hilles are yet to be seene the rootes, and old remaines of Vines. There is besides Notingham an ancient house called Chilwell, in which house remaineth yet, as an auncient monument in a great vvindow of glasse, the whole order of planting, proyning, stamping, and pressing of Vines. Besides there is yet also growing an olde Vine that yeelds a Grape sufficient to make a right good Wine, as vvas lately proved by a Gentlewoman in the sayd House. There hath moreover good experience of late yeeres beene made, by two noble and honourable Barons of this Realme, the Lord Villiams of Tame, and the Lord Cobham, vvho both had growing about their houses as good Vines, as are in many places of France. And if they answere not in all points every man's expectation, the fault is rather to be imputed to the malice and disdaine peradventure of the Frenchmen that kept them, then to any ill disposition, or fault of the soyle. For vvhere have you in any place better, or pleasanter Wines, then about Backrach, Colin, Andernach, and divers other places of Germanie, that have in manner the selfe-same latitude and disposition of the Heavens that we have? Beside that the nearenesse to the South is not altogether the causer of good Wines, appeareth in that you have about Orleans, great store of good and excellent Wine: wheras if you go to Burges, two days journey farther to the south, you shall finde a Wine not worth the drinking. The like is (as I have heard reported by Master D. Dale, Embassadour for his Majestie in these parts) of Paris, and Barleduke, the Towne being Southward, with noughtie wines: the others a great wayes farther to the North, vvith as good Wines as may be. But admit England would yeeld none so strong and pleasant Wines as are desired (as I am fully perswaded it would), yet is it worth the triall and travaile to have Wines of our owne, though they be the smaller; and therefore I thought it not meet to leave out of my booke the ordering and trimming of Vines."

I would remark, in confirmation of Barnaby Googe's statement, that, in an old map of Colchester, I have seen vines depicted in the streets; and in the Corporation Rolls, preserved amongst the Colchester Records, we find that in the 3rd & 4th Richard II., a sufficient piece of land was granted to place three *stulps* (spores, or spars) to support a certain vine opposite the house of one Clement, a dyer in North Street: and "in

4th & 5th Edward II., Hugh de Stowe raised two stulps under his vine opposite his tenement in Chero," *i.e.* the chair, or scherd. And, further, in an account of Belhus, the seat of the *Barrett-Lennard* family at Avely, in Essex, we are told that Belhus is described as "a capital manor, with house and chambers, garden and vineyard from which there is record that wine was made." Mr. Godwin, in the *English Archæologists' Handbook*, informs us that vineyards are mentioned thirty-eight times in the Doomsday Book. Few great Monasteries were without them. They are referred to in the laws of King Alfred, and are said by Vopiscus to be as old as A.D. 280. One in Essex is alluded to, *quæ reddit xx modios vini si bene procedit.* One also is stated to have existed at Bisham, Berks. Mr. Roach Smith has not only called attention to the subject in a very interesting pamphlet, but has also attempted on a large scale to restore the cultivation of the vine in England as a branch of husbandry; and it is to be hoped that his patriotic experiment may be attended with success.

The Editor is well aware, however, that the value of this publication will consist mainly in the specimens it affords of the structure of our language at an important period, and to its first use in English of many agricultural and horticultural terms. He trusts that in these directions it will render sufficient aid to the philologist, in pursuing his interesting investigations, to justify the labour and expense which have been bestowed upon it.

GRAMMATICAL NOTICES.

I WOULD first venture a remark on the great variety of the spelling. It is not only that the present participle is written sometimes with an *i*, sometimes with a *y*, sometimes with a final *e*, sometimes without it; that the past participle sometimes has the *i* or *y* prefixed, though oftener not; that the infinitive appears now with the suffix *en* or *ene*, and now without it: but the same word, without any apparent reason, is represented in every possible variety of form. Thus in the compass of a few pages the word *air* is spelt in four different ways: *e.g.* we have 1, *aier*; 2, *aire*; 3, *ayer*; 4, *eire*; and the common adverb *well* appears in 13/334 as *wele*, and in the same page as *weel*, whilst in other places, as 195/282, it is *wel*. There is the same want of uniformity in many other words; and such queer spellings as *auntceaunt* for ancient, and *medessyng* for medicine, do not point to any clearly defined rules for the guidance of writers of that period. Most of the MSS. of the time are equally obnoxious to the same charge; and it is hardly reasonable to suppose that there was an abrupt descent into this confusion from an age of greater uniformity. It therefore appears to me that clever men are building their ingenious theories on a rather unsafe and uncertain foundation, when they make them to depend on the presence or absence of the final *e* in early MSS. In the grammatical forms which follow, I make no attempt to systematize or account for them. I simply lay before the reader some of the more prominent, and leave to others the task of applying them to scientific use.

The Plural of Nouns Substantive

agrees, in the great majority of instances, with modern usage, ending in *s* or *es*: but remains of the old plural in *n* are not wanting, not only in *housen*, and *oxen* and *exon*, but the following also occur:

Treen, for trees, 4/86.
Cleen, for claws, 34/937.
Foon, for foes, 139/964.
Been, for bees, 138/953.
Fleen, for fleas, 34/915.
Boon, for bones, 58/394.
Kyen, for cows, 130/707.
Stren, for straws, 74/362.
Een, for eyes, 105/25; and 129/677.
Toon, for toes, 188/49.

There are some few instances of plurals in *ys*, e.g.:

Wormys, for worms, 138/945.
Bonys, for bones, 213/170.
Hillys, for hills, 213/181.
Marys, for mares, 132/779.
Malys, for males, 134/821.

Traces of a still older plural are to be noticed in

Eldron, for elders, 26/714.
Eyon, for eyes, 80/552.
Eyron, for eggs, 22/582.
Lamber and *lambron*, for lambs, 145/154, and following.

Peson, for peas, 106/68, will not appear extraordinary to readers of Tusser; but in 149/8 we find also *peses*, *pese* being the singular. *Foot* in the plural occurs regularly in its modern form *feet*, but when it signifies a measure of length, it is for the most part written *footes*, e.g. 210/87. There are some rare examples of the plural in *e*: I can only call to mind *kynde*, 13/335; *stede* = places in 183/127; and *pigge* in 100/1086.

Inflexion of Nouns Substantive.

The genitive singular ends most frequently in *es*, or *s* only, as:

Hienes skynne=Hiena's skin, 180/43.
Strengthes qualitee=quality of strength, 33/786.
Generacions libertee=liberty of generation, 130/724.
Cannys knottes=knots of cane, 123/542.
This trees feet and legges=this tree's feet, etc., 88/750.
Oon dayes while=the duration of a day, 201/389.

The genitive plural is also formed by adding *s* or *es*, e.g.

Myrtes bayes=berries of myrtles, 59/414.
Vynes rootes=roots of vines, 101/114.
Swynes dounge, 92/860.
Greynes names=names of grains, 9/232.

But the preposition *of*, as in Modern English, is much more commonly used instead of the genitive, both singular and plural, as "part of our laboure," 1/14; "preef of holsom air," 2/34; "dyvers kynde of treen," 13/336.

Numerous instances occur in which the preposition is omitted. It may be worth while to specify a few of them:

Every maner pere, 88/177.
A potful hony, 95/968.
Every syde it, 105/34.
An acre lande, 106/56.
This maner drove, 134/826.
A sester old wyne, 145/146.
A strike floure, 205/520.
Sycomore a certayne, 185/185.
This wyne the fourthe part, 202/428.
A conge wyne=congius of wine, 203/453.
Two sester hony, 205/514.
A galon muste, 205/519.

I am unable to produce instances of any other case; unless *Summer* and *Winter*, in 13/328 and 9, and *alibi*, are to be considered as ablatives. I have looked for datives differing in form from the accusative, but I cannot find any that I should like to vouch for. For instance, though "in hoot lande," 124/573, "in bareine lande," 7/169, seem to have a dative *e*, when compared with "Yf that thi land," 9/220, yet other instances like "The lande is goode," 5/110; "the lande . . is efte to plowe, 164/2; "deep land also thai seke," 8/193; "oute of that land," 8/194, prevent one's giving any inflexional value to the final *e*.

Adjectives

present fewer variations from modern usage. I speak, of course, of those occurring in this translation. The adjective more frequently has the final *e* than not, whether it be definite or indefinite; in the

plural the occurrence of the *e* is more uniform. I will first produce examples, carefully verified, of its indiscriminate use.

"This fals humour let goode water oute trie" (180/40).
"Kest it so *thyne* wyne amonge," i.e. *thin wine* (200/382).
"Yf me shall hoote water sprynge" (143/95).
"In reed (=red), and hoore, and blake unvariable,
Of hem the reed is best, the hoor is able" (14/354-5).
"The landes fatte, or lene, or thicke, or rare,
Or drie or moiste" (5/100).

But even in the plural there are exceptions, *e.g.*:

"In places colde and moist" (10/243).
"Mystes derk" (2/30).
"In places moist" (84/646).
"Ther swymmeth seeke, & *hool* adowne wol hie" (216/264).

The possessive pronoun almost invariably has the final *e*: thaire browes, 135/867; thaire hornes, 134/830; thaire landes, 181/55; but this does not apply to *his* nor to *her* for "their"; and *thin* for "thy" is frequently used without the *e*, as in 3/56, "No doubte is in thi water nor thin aire."

There is one instance of an adjective declined with *es* in the plural, "Of children clennes in virginitee," 9/229.

If "myres," 35/966, be an adjective, it is worth notice; but I incline to think it is a substantive in the genitive singular.

Such adjectives as "eschewe" for *to eschew*, or *to be eschewed*, are not of infrequent occurrence, 20/528; 125/586.

Degrees of Comparison

are formed by *er* for the comparative, and *est* for the superlative, whatever may be the number of syllables: thus, we have not only *sweeter*, *sweetest*, and *rather*, *rathest*; but also

diligenter, for more diligent, 119/435,
konnyngest, for most skilful, 151/63,
fertilest, for most fertile, 101/1136,
lattest, 14/364,

and the old comparative *herre*, for higher, occurs 77/445.

We have the usual irregular comparatives and superlatives, *e.g.*

better, best; worse, worst; more, most; less, least, etc.: "better" often assumes the form "bette," as "more" does that of "mo," or "moo."

"This Feveryere and Marche is for hem bette" (97/1011).
"The bitterest erthe and werst that thou canst thinke" (4/81).

Forme occurs (60/447) in its old sense of *first* (A.S. *forma*), and the double superlative *formest* (which we now write *foremost*, as if from *fore* and *most*), appears in 72/317, and again in 190/93.

There is a peculiar use of the adjectives great, small, etc., which is worthy of attention. "Bushell greete" is an example; but the instances are so numerous that it is easy to adduce others, thus:

"The griffes to be litel finger grete," (74/379).
"A finger greet is rounde ynough to sette" (85/673).
"The chanels fynger grete thou most espie" (155/187).
"And therupon doo stones handfull grete" (155/181).
"Grynde it pouder small" (169/149).
"Til it be hony fatte and thicke iche dele" (205/516).
"And stere it until hony thick it renne" (185/189).

Similar to these are "water tempered" (215/232), and "dounge ywette" (191/122); though they may be regarded as no more than ordinary compound words to be joined by a hyphen, like "sonne ydried," in 185/170; but "ox dounge ennoynte," three lines above, does not so easily reconcile itself to our notions; and we meet with other similar expressions quite as strange.

Pronouns.

The Pronoun of the first person is uniformly *I* or *Y* in the singular, and *we* or *wee* in the plural. The genitive, I believe, does not occur. The dative *me* is very common preceding impersonal verbs, as *me thynketh*, *me lysteth*, etc. The pronominal accusative *me* is to be carefully distinguished from the indefinite *me*, meaning *one* or *men*, and used in the nominative, *e.g.* "me moost" (1/2)=one must. *Us* in the dative plural is to be remarked in such phrases as, "Us is to write," 1/8, etc.

The Pronoun of the second person is *thou*, or *thowe*, in the singular, and in the plural *ye*. I am unable to produce an instance of the

genitive. The dative *the* or *thee* is common enough with impersonals, *e.g.* "What the liketh" (48/113). The most usual form of the accusative is *the*, but we meet *thee* also.

The Pronouns of the third person are *he*, *she*, and *it*, or *yt*, or *hit*, or *hyt*. The dative and accusative of *he* are *him* or *hym*; of *she* most frequently *hir*, e.g. "Yf he bite hir in his rage" (136/882).

The plural of the third person is *thai*, *thay*, or *thei*, gen. *her*, or *er*, or *here*. Dative and accusative very generally *hem*, but we do meet with *thayme*, e.g. 92/875: "Thayme that are of gentilnesse." It may be remarked here that *self* and *selve* are joined indifferently to singular and plural: thus, in 1/4, *hemself*=themselves; in 3/64, *itselve*=itself. In 5/117, we have *hemself* again=themselves; and in 94/931, *himselve*=himself.

The possessive pronouns are *mi*, *my*, *min*, *myne*; and in the plural *oure*, *ower*.

For the second person, *thi*, *thy*, *thin*, *thine;* and in the plural *youre;* and for the third person *his* or *hys* for neuter as well as masculine, and *her*, *hir*, *hire*, for the feminine; in the plural *thaire*, *thayre*, *theire*, *her*, *here*. In 135/867, *her* and *thaire* occur in the same line:

"Thaire browes hoore, her tempils holgh unevon."

Demonstrative Pronouns.

The is without inflexion, singular and plural.

This admits no variation in the singular; but in the plural we have *thees*, 3/43; *this*, 30/801; 104/6; *thoo*, 68/194. But *thoo* would seem rather to be the plural of *that*.

Professor Child (see Ellis's Early English Pronunciation, pp. 354, et seq.) has noticed the frequent use in Chaucer of *this* instead of the definite article. It is very common, also, in our author. I will produce a few examples.

"And in is kest
This opium Quyrynaike" (101/1139),

which had not been mentioned before.

"Nowe pulverised be this vynes yonge" (106/71).

The first mention of vines here. In like circumstances,

"Noo man spare
This goldes outher rabes forto sowe" (110/173).

In

"This gourdes in this Moone also beth sowe" (114/280),
"This Mules for to make who so delite" (136/870),

where nothing had before been said about mules. See also 38/1044.

It occurs frequently in the form *hit*, e.g. 29/780, 37/1011. The possessive form is *his*, as in 29/773:

"That it may in itself *his* moisture kepe."

The Relative.

"Who" is of all genders, as "Seedes who descende," 112/220, and that not only in the nominative, but also in the genitive, and other cases, and in both numbers; *e.g.*

"Whoos seede in moolde if that me delve" (82/584).
"The vyne and fruyt, and place in whom thai growe" (6/128).
"Eke places unto whome from hilles sonder" (49/145).
"As hony me may kepe it in a stene,
In stede of whome in metes it demene" (205/501).

That occurs most frequently as a relative. Sometimes it is used for *he who*, e.g.

"That" (*i.e.* he that) "robeth hem well worthi go to hell is" (196/271).
"And that" (*i.e.* that which) "was cut of, close it after clene" (127/655).

Adverbs.

We refer to the Glossary for a goodly number of rare and interesting adverbs; not only the original form of the ordinary adverb in *ly;* e.g. *joyfulliche*, 215/222, and *iliche* = equally, 7/167, and such specimens as *pitchelonges*, 150/42, *afterlonges*, 66/139, *allyng*, 208/42, etc., etc.; but the following are also noteworthy: *by and by*=now and then; and *nowe and nowe*, used much in the same sense. *Eft and eft*=again and again; *to and to*=regularly, in course; *from nowe forth*=henceforth; *atte alle*=altogether, *omnino*, see 77/463; *therayeine*=on the other hand; *amonge*=in the meantime, 105/29; *so or soo*=as the case may be, 155/166; *every*

amonge=every now and then, 105/29. The interjection *wellesay* occurs, 167/91, but I have not been able to meet with it elsewhere. It is hardly necessary to mention the numerals *ones, twies, thries.*

The ordinary comparison is by the suffixes *er*, and *est.*

Verbs.

All the persons of the verb in the plural number end most frequently in *th*, in the present indicative, and the imperative. As was to be expected from the nature of the subject, we have not many *preterites;* but in 79/500, instead of the strong form *grew*, we meet with *growed.* The third singular subjunctive is of most frequent occurrence, *e.g.* 149/4 :

"Untouched nowe the Tilman let hem growe."

And *let, do, make,* with an infinitive active, like the French *laisser*, and the German *lassen*, are very frequent. We have repeated instances of the infinitive in *en*, as *kepen, slen, doon;* but the omission of the *en* or *n* is much more frequent, as, to *sle*, to *kepe*, to *do.* Sometimes the two forms occur in the same line, *e.g.* :

"What is to rere or doon in everything" (1/11).

The following are examples of *to* omitted before the infinitive :

"Suffice it the there as thowe casteth dwelle" (9/234).
"Thai loveth derk Septentrion beholde" (217/279).
"When he his gemmy tail begynneth splay" (23/625).
"And right as hennes heel her maladie
Is goode" (25/686)
"Barly and whete & sengul sedes owe
VIII daies floure," *i.e.* ought to flower (149/6).
"The plaunte in yeres two wol gynne grone" (216/255).
"And after suffre thay the sonne it drie" (158/8).
"And yf the tree begynne seke," *i.e.* to sicken (193/177).

On the contrary, *to* is often redundant before the imperative, *e.g.* :

"Oonly the litel feet to cleme in cley" (92/888).

In the following passage we have both the redundant *as* and the *to* before the imperative :

"Lowe on the truncke *as* wounde him in the rynde,
A lite humoure whenne oute of it is ronne,
With chaved cley the wounde ayein *to* bynde" (212/141-3).

Participles.

Those of the present tense all end in *ing* or *yng*, as bering, 4/7, havyng, 38/1038. The following are various instances of the past participle: taken, 1/1; overtake, 8/2; fonde, 2/3; brought, 6/2; hidde, 7/2; overgrowe, 9/220; forferde, 109/160; spende, 105/40; turne, 45/26; gonnen, 159/23; eete = eaten, 123/553; bende = bent; sprad, 31/135; letted=hindred, 105/31; holde from verb held, lest=lost; taked=having taken, 83/630; wende, 93/902; sayen=seen, 93/907; unrende, 104/9; stolon, 113/269; umvironne, 13/334; sene, 122/520; heede=hidden, 111/199; wrion=covered, 171/11; rope=reaped, 183/127.

The following occur with the prefix *i* or *y*: ywonden, 115/314; ygrounde, 15/400; ychaunged, 21/566; ywesh=washed, 27/762; ymeddled, 28/763; ypitte=put, 41/1119; Ysowe=sowed, passim; Idolve = delved, Itaught = taught, 81/570; ywronge = squeezed, 90/814; iholde, 250/48; ycalled, 93/921: ydoon, 70/259; ydoo, 75/405.

Negatives.

Two in the same sentence strengthen the negation, according to the usual rule, as "ne" and "not."

"So that they ne touche not" (89/804).

The negative verbs nath=has not, na=have not, nys=is not, nare =are not, nass=was not, nylle=will not, nolde=would not, have frequently, but not always, another negative adding emphasis, *e.g.*

"The frostes *na* noo dominacion" (188/41).
"And naked cley nys nought" (77/450).

Nominative Absolute.

Numerous instances might be produced; the following will suffice:

"This flooring wol be black and wynter warme
And, lycoure shedde, anoon it wol up drie" [1] (13/344-5).
"Sprad the winges outte, sette up an oule" [2] (31/835).

[1] Orig. "et siqua fundentur ex poculis velociter rapta desuget."
[2] Orig. "Noctua pennis patentibus extenta suffigitur."

"The corse idelve in grounde, the rootes wol abounde"[1] (73/336).
"Men graffe hem nowe, thaire graffes buddes ungrowe"[2] (98/1046).
"This doon, is other thinges for to doo"[3] (27/736).

Peculiar Order of Words.

Professor Child (in Ellis's *E. E. Pron.* p. 375) has collected several instances from Chaucer, but none more peculiar than some of these in our author:

"Coloured, stonde not on to besily to se thi lande" (4/71); *i.e.* stand not too much on seeing thy land high coloured.

"Yit if that he Vulturnus oversette a vyne in heete or other blastes lette" (6/144); *i.e.* if he let the N.E. or other blastes overset a vine.

"The pament under thorled and suspense, bete under fyre" (19/500); *i.e.* make a fire under the hollow pavement.

"The lupinge is noo wedyng on to spende" (46/71); *i.e.* no weeding is to be expended on the lupine.

"The vynes roote umwried be fayne wolde" (171/7); *i.e.* would fain be covered.

"This moone is good, to make in, pastyning" (46/71); *i.e.* in this month it is good to do pastining.

"The galle, is boote to touche hem with, of neutes grene" (92/865); *i.e.* it is good to touch them with a green newt's gall.

"Other with noo holde" (130/715); *i.e.* hold with no other.

"A fressh potte on hem sevred pitcheth ynne" (127/657); *i.e.* put them in separately on a fresh pot.

"A comune busshell greet circumferent, one of thi worchers falle" (151/60); *i.e.* let one of thy workmen fall the tree when it is as large round as a common bushel.

Dissyllables Pronounced as Monosyllables.

Thorowe, 90/814; over, 92/879; sayen, 92/884; *cometh*, and several verbs of the third singular, 97/1019 (as so often in Chaucer, etc.); forowe, 105/41; theroute=*sub divo* passim; *eree* to plough, 62/40; and *ayenie* is pronounced as a dissyllable.

[1] "Si infossione totius corporis obsuatur." [2] "Antequam germenint."
[3] "His ordinatis."

A TABLE OF CONTENTS

was prefixed to the MS.; but the part coming under A. and B. has been lost. That which appears here under these letters is supplied by the Editor; the rest is carefully transcribed from the MS., and adapted to the pages of this edition. The references to the lost portions of this translation have been retained, and are merely assigned to their respective months.

Ablaqueacion of vynes, what it is, 44.
Ache to sowe in Aprill in sweete lande, 142.
Ador is sowe atte October, 187.
Age of hors, markes of, 135.
Aier, its importance in husbondrie, 2.
Almand-tree to be sette in Januarie, 53.
Almand-treen bitter if beestes bite hem, 54.
Alsike made with Barly, 163.
Ammoniake goode to stop chenes in baths, 41.
Antes, to preserve nuttes from, 57.
Anyes sowe in Marche in gladsom ayer, 114.
Appultreen graffed in Feuerer & Marche, 78, 91.
Armarik wol growe in Octob'r, 192.
Askes medled with dounge goode for Appul-treen, 91.
Asperages, wilde, tried into erth ytilde, 84.
Asses, howe to chese, 136.
Asse stalon, to swage his melincoly, 136.
Aysel procured from serves, 53.

Baathes, helthe aryses from, 40.
Baathes, to bilde, 40.
Balke, what it is, 44.
Bathes suspensures, 40.

Bayes of myrte, wine made of, 59.
Bees, plauntes & busshes proper for, 37.
Bees to be kept from odoure of kychen, etc., 38.
Bees not to be kept where there is an echo, 38.
Bees not to be kept in Potters' hyves, 38.
Been, howe to bey, 39.
Been when seke, howe to helpp oute of pyne, 137.
Been, felicitee ennoieth hem, 138.
Been, howe to fynde where thai dwell, 145.
Been, howe to hyve hem, 147.
Been, butterflies ennoye hem, 147.
Bees, strong swarmes of, in May, 155.
Bee, kyng, howe called by the Greeks, 155.
Bees pike hony from thamarike atte gynnyng of Novemb'r, 218.
Benes to be yweded twyes, 46.
Benes howe to pull in Juyn, 160.
Bildyng House, 12.
Bildyng Mues, 20.
Bildyng cisterne, 17.
Bildyng celar for oyles, 19.
Bildyng wyne-celar, 17.
Bildyng columbary, 20.
Blichenyng, remedies against, 31.
Blite rooted in Marche wol endure, 114.
Boles bloode used for cements, 41.
Brik is maade in May, 156.
Bulles, to chese, 130.
Butterflies ennoye bees, 147.

Cisterne, celar for oyles, wine-celar, and columbary, in B, at bildyng.

Chiches
Cresses
Chyues or cyues
Cunnila
Com'yn
Cicera
} Colcase, Cappare, Coriandre, Cerfoile, Cucūber } In S atte sowyng.

Cucumber in ffeveryere to sowe and make swete and longe withouten core, or elles lyke a rede in lengthe, 110, 111.
Cocumber is so ferde of thounder that it turneth, and from oiles it woll clicche awaye, 111.
To make cucūbres of what fourme the list, 111.
To graffe cucūber in breere and ferule, 111.
Cannetes in ffeuerer to make, 80.
Chastentree plantyng and settyng in Novemb'r, 216.
Citurtree (orenges) tylling in Marche, 119.
Citurtree graffyng, and of his eternite in fruyte and floures, 121.
Citurtrees bitter mary to chaunge into swete, 121.
Citurfruyte to kepe, 121.
Citurtrees tillyng in May, 152.
Citurtree plauntyng in Juyn.
Cornes may not be touched in flouryng, 149.
Chiritree in Octob'r graffyng and setting, and what lande is good for hem, 195.
Chiries to growe withouten stones, 195.
Remedie for rootynge of chiritrees, and for auntz, 195.
Coltes or foles of hors to knowe in Marche, 135.
Causinge of teeth, 135.
Calues geldyng in dyuers wyse, 152.
Castracion of calues in Juyn, 162.
Chese-makyng, kepinge, and counfityng in May, 154.
Carene, defruyte, and sape counfit in Octob'r, 204.
Cydonite counfit in Octobre, 205.

Dales beth not to duelle, June.
Douves to multiplie, 20.
To save douves from the wesell, 20.
Donge or myddyng, howe it shal stonde, 28.
Deluyng aboute vynes or treen, 79.
Date-stones to sette in Octob'r, 193.
Defruyte to counfit in Octob'r, 204.

Erthe in L atte lande.
Excodicacioun of vynes in Januarie, 44.

Eringe of lande in L atte londe.
Exon to chese in Marche, 129.
Exon of dyvers condicions, 130.
Exon tamynge, 131.
Exon tamyng in other wyse, 132.
Emplastryng solempne in Juyn, 161.
Emplastringe in Juyll, 165.
Emplastering in Aust, 173.

Feelde in L atte lande.
ffeeldes to beye discrecion, 11.
ffleen for to destroie, 33.
ffloring for threshing, 36.
ffallyng tymbre in Januarie, 59.
ffigtree plantyng in Marche, 123.
ffiggtree land, and settyng in III maners, 123.
ffigtree to caprifie and scarifie with moche remedy, 125.
ffigtree that casteth his fruyte goode remedie, 126.
ffigtree fele and fatte to make, 126.
ffiges sone ripe to be lately ripe, and econt, 126.
ffigtree plechyng and inoculinge, 127.
ffiges keping, 127.
ffiges of dyvers colours upon oon tree, 128.
ffigtree settyng in May, 145.
ffigtree caprified and graffed in Juyn, 161.
ffallyng of tymb'r for gutters in May, 151.
ffeyngreek hervest for fodder in Juyn, 160.
ffitches { ffeyngreek } in S atte sowyng.
ffasele { fforage }
ffern and segges to destroye in Aust, 172.
fferment musty, 205.
ffesauntes to rere and fatte, 25.

Gouvernaunce is the grete crafte of husbondrie, 5.
Graynes in S atte seed.
Gravel pref: and grosshing gravel is best, 3.

Garner makyng, 18.
Garden howe it shal stande, 28.
Garden closure, 29.
Gardyn remedie, 31, etc., al thourgh til 37.
Graffe in the Countree gyse, 30.
Graffyng in III maners, in the rynde, and in the stocke, and emplastring, in ffeurer, 73.
Graffes chesyng gretenesse and shappe, 75.
Graffyng of vynes in Elmes, 75.
Graffyng Peches to growe withoute stones, 76.
Graffyng of Peretreen in ffeurer, 88.
Graffyng of Molbury-tree, 97.
Graffyng Pertree and Citurtree in Aust, 173.
Grape ungreyned in dyvers maner maade, 101.
Grapes white and blake in oon vyne.[1]
Grapes whiche for the borde, which for the wyne, 63.
Grapes to kepe in the wyne til veer, 186.
Garlek / Goordes { Gooldes / Gith } in S atte sowyng.
Greek reysons, 206.
Gresse to destroie in III maners, 168.
Geese to rere and fatte, 27.
Goot buckes to chese and gouuerne, Nov^r.
Gynnes makyng for foulinge in Septemb'r, 183.
Gynnes and foulynge in Decemb'r.

Husbondrie standeth in IIII things, 2.
Haliday hath noon necessitee, 7.
Housyng in B atte bildyng.
Horstalons putte forth to mares in Marche, 132.
Hors shold have III thinges: fourme, coloure, mite, and pulcritude, 136.
Hors stalons age, and mares, 135.
Stalons of asses with her age, 137.
Hennes to rere, and make hem ofte hatche, 22.

[1] Not in the translation.

Hennes to hele of the pippe and cornes, 22.
Hony-counfit, 168.
Hony and wexe of dyvers herbes, 38.
Hony-onfake counfit, 178.
Heruest in Juyn, 158.
Heruest in Juyl, 164.
Hervest of Panyk in Septemb'r, 183.
Houres in Januarie, 60.
Houres in Feuerer.
Houres in Marche, 139.
Houres in Aprill, 147.
Houres in May, 157.
Houres in Juyn, 163.
Houres in Juyl, 169.
Houres in August, 178.
Houres in Septemb'r, 186.
Houres in Octob'r, 206.
Houres in Novemb'r.
Houres in Decemb'r.

Iuglandes, 98.

Kareme, defruite, and sape Counfit, 204.

Landes election, 3, 4.
Londe feble; fertile lande, 6.
Lande bareyn is to be fledde fro, 7.
Lande is not to be balked, 8.
Lande profounde for greet olyues, 8.
Lande is to take on hande as men may til, 8.
Lande ouergrowe is holpen with gouernance, 9.
Lande for wheete and barly, 10.
Lande that is salt to be remedied, 10.
Lande chesyng in colde countree, 10.
Lande fenny nys to eree or plowe, 45.
Lande for vynes, 48, 49.
Lande ofte ereed or plowed, 49.
Lande for meles, 91.
Lande for quynces, 94.
Lande for molbury tree, 97.
Lande plowyng in Januarie, 45.
In ffeuerer, 61.

Lande in Marche, 105.
In Aprill, 140.
Lande plowing in May, 150.
Lande plowyng in Juyn, 160.
Lande plowyng and stookkyng in Juyl, 164.
Lande plowyng in August, 171.
Lande plowyng in Septemb'r, 179.
Lande donginge in Septemb'r, 180.
Lande to remedie for euel humour, 180.
Lande to remedie for evel bestes, 180.
Landes weete, moddy, stony, or wedy to remedie, 180.
Lyme the makyng therof, 17, 41.
Lilies to sette or sowe, 80/538, where read *lilly*.
Letuce sowing, and to make white letuce, 50, 51.
Letuce with other herbes in a wride, 51/207.[1]
Letuce and lynseed in S. atte sowing.
Leek seede sowing to make tender leekes and greete heded leekes, 84.
Leek plantes the gretenesse; the maner of kittyng the blades and rootes, and to make hem heded grete, 84.
Lupyne reping, kepyng, and sowyng, 151.
Lambes to rere, 167.
Liquamen castimonial, 90.
Lard, Bacons, and echyne fish, to salt, 58.

Molde is to be moeved about a roote, 79.
Mues in B. atte bildyng.
Middyng or dunghill, 28.
Markyng of beestes, and makyng condimentz, 58.
Medues in leene and drie lande, 44.
Medys in tempre lande, 61.
Medys in colde lande to clense, 105.
Medys newe to make, 182, 208.
Meles to graffe in ffeuerer, 91.
Meles lande to growe, 91.
Meles to remedie, 92.

[1] *Wride* evidently is here the substantive, and *wonder* the adjective. "A wonder wride" seems to mean a strange lump or mass. A.S. *wriðan*, to twist.

Meles may be graffed in dyvers treen, 92.
Meles fruyte kepinge, 93.
Meles maade aisell and wyne of, 93.
Melons to [blank left in MS] in Marche, and make swete as Mylk and smellying as Roses, 110.
Meddelers to sette in March, 122.
Meddelers to remedie for wormes and make fertile, 122.
Meddelers to remedie for auntes and castyng fruyte, 122.
Meddelers to graffe and to kepe, 122, 123.
Moldewarpps to sle, 34.
Molbury tree tilynge in ffeuerer, 96.
Plantyng molbery tree, remedie for hem, and graffing of the same, 97.
Mixe sowyng and settyng in Marche, 98.
Mastik tree to plaunte and graffe in Marche, 98.
Male apultreen in Octob'r to sette, 196.
Male apples to counfit in Octob'r, 203.
Malves, Medice } { Myntes, Milde } in S. atte sowyng.
Mares to chese and gouuerne, 132.
Mules to have in dyvers wyses, 136.

Nuttrees to sette in Januarie, 56.
Remedy for Nuttrees, and Nuttes Tarentyne, 57.
To kepe Nuttes, 57.
Nepes and Rapes in Juyl to sowe and make grete, 165.

Olyve is to be planted of children, 9.
Olyves grete stande in depe lande, 8.
Olyuetes to sette in ffeuerer, and goode lande for hem, 76.
Olyve bayes of dyvers names, and order of thaire standyng, 77.
Olyves to rere withouten olyve plantes, 78.
Olyves (to) seek to hele in Marche, 108.
Olyves bareyne to make bere, 108.
Olyves graffyng in Aprill that fier distroye hem not, 141.
Olyvetes to ordeigne, sette, and donge in Octob'r, 189.
Olyves bareyne to bring into beringe cum coitu suo, 190.

Olyves putacion in Novemb'r with oil makyng, 209.
Olyves to sette and cure in Novemb'r, 209.
Oile myrtite made in Januarie, 59.
Oile Lauryne in Januarie maade, 59.
Oile Lentiscyne maade in Januarie, 59.
Oile liliate counfit in May, 156.
Oile de Rose counfit in May, 156.
Oile verde counfit in Octob'r, 190.
Oile lauryne counfit in Octob'r, 190.
Oile makyng in Novemb'r, 219.
Oile like Liburnyke in Novemb'r, 219.
Oyle filthy to pure in Novemb'r, 219.
Oyle evel smellyng to amende, 219.
Oyle browsty smellyng to amende, 219.
Olyves to counfit in dyvers wyse, 220.
Oyle dregges, and bryne for olyves, 78.
Origon, Oynons, in S. atte sowyng.
Oxen at E. in Exon.

Poocok to rere, 23.
Poondes for water-foule, 17.
Pastynyng in dyvers wyse in Januarie, 46.
Puls sowing in Januarie, 46.
Plowing of lande in L. atte lande.
Peche tylling in ffeuerer to growe withoute stones, 76.
Peches emplastringe in May, 152.
Peches inoculacioun a fygtree in Juyn, 161.
Peches settyng in Novemb'r, 211.
Peches ablaqueacioun, putacion, and sanacioun, 211.
Peches to growe writen with tres, 211.
Peches of III kyndes and dyvers remedie, 211.
Peches to make greet and swete, 212.
Peches graffyng, inoculynge, plasturinge, and kepinge, with dyvers remedie for hem, 213.
Perys settyng and graffyng in Fuerer, 86.
Perys tender, swete, sauery, and long-lastynge, 87.

Peertrees seke to hele in dyvers wyse, 87.
Peertrees that thai blossum not to longe, 88.
Peres stony to remedy, 88.
Peres may be graffed in dyuers trees, 88.
Peres to graffe by good crafte, 88.
Peres to be sauery to ete, 88, 89.
Peres to kepe dyvers crafte, 89.
Peres to be ouertaken in Juyn.
Perre, or Wyne of peres in Feuerer, 90.
Peres made aysel of in Feuerer, 90.
Peres ymaade liquamen castimonial, 90.
Pomgarnette settyng in Marche, 115.
Pomgarnettes to be swete, 115.
Pomgarnettes from chappinge, from wormes, and from corruptinge to kepe, 116.
Pomgarnettes to be fecounde and white grayned, 116.
Pomgarnettes to be meruaylously grete, 117.
Pomgarnettes to multiplie, 117.
Pomgarnettes graffyng in Marche, 117.
Pomgarnettes kepinge, 118.
Pomgarnettes made wyne of, 118.
Pistace to plaunte and graffe in Fuerer, 98.
Pistace tillinge in Octob'r, 193.
Pynappultree in Feuerer tilled, 98.
Pynappultree sowynge and plauntynge in Novemb'r, 213.
Pynappultree kyttyng and kepinge thaire fruyt, with more of plantyng, 214.
Palme deluynge aboute in Juyn.
Palmes to tille in Novemb'r.
Poudurynge of Vynes in Marche, 106.
Pastynynge landes in May, 151.
Puls and potage-ware hervest in Juyn, 160.
Plumtree to sowe, plaunte, remedye, and to graffe in Novemb'r, 214, 215.
Pasture for sheepe, 167.
Pastynynge the gardyn in Septemb'r, 184.

Parsneps, pelettour, } in S. atte sowyng.
Panyke, peses, }
Pauyng selers (?) in May, 155.
Paving selers in Juyn, 158.
Pavyng in Septemb'r, 185.
Passe-counfit in Novemb'r, 220.

Quynces to graffe in ffeuerer, 93.
Quynces graffyng and keping of hem, 94.

Rosaries to make and repare in ffeuerer, 80.
Roses sone ripe to have, 80.
Rosate counfit in May, 156.
Roses to kepe fressh, 157.
Rosate counfit withouten roses in Novemb'r.
Rosaries of few braunches to make in Novemb'r.
Rodomelle counfit in May, 156.
Rapes to chaunge into Neepes, and econtu, 165. N.B.—A small *n* above the t.
Radisshe to make swete, and howe moche is to be sowe in oon aker lande, 165.
Rapes counfit in Decemb'r.
Reysons, Greek, to make in Novemb'r, 206.
Raues wilde, Rue, in S. atte sowyng.
Reping in Juyn, 159.
Reping of all the Heruest with oon oxe good crafte, 159.
Reping in Juyll, 164.

Soil or grounde, in L. atte lande is to be fonde.
Seed is to consider, 11.
Sowe in the countre maner, 9.
Sowe in Januarie fitches, and feyngreek, 45.
Cresses, 52.
Sowe in Feuerer puls in dry lande, 61.
Hempe and tares, 62.
Letuce, cresses, tasels, coriander, popy, saury, senvey, oynet, oynons, dile, and coolseede, 81, 82, 83.

Malues, myntes, fenel, pastnepe, cunula,[1] cerfoile, beetes, and leeksede, 84.

Sowe and sette chibols, and colcase, commyn, and anys, 85.

Sowe in March' mylde, 106.

Chiches and cicera, 106.

Senuey and dile, 110.

Rock armorace, wilde raue, leekes, betes, letuce, cappare, saury, colcase, cresses, gooldes, and raue, 110.

Cucumber, 110. Sperage, 112. Rue and what lande is best for hem, 113. Gourdes, 114. Panyk, 106. Blite and pelettour, 114.

Sowe in Aprill Medike, 140; brasik, 142; and Ache, 142.

Thre kyndes of Ache, 142; Arage, 143; Basilicon, and se wonder tillinge therof: howe his floures chaungeth colours, and howe it chaungeth into oth'r herbes; also sowe cucumber, melons, pelletur, cappare, leeke, colcase, coriander, betes, letuce, oynons, myntes, gourdes, and gooldes, 143.

Sowe in May mylde and panyk, 149.

Ache, melons, coriander, gourdes, tasul, radisshe and sette rue and leeke, 151.

Sowe in Juyn brasike, ache, betes, radysshe, and letuce, 160.

Experience of seede, 10.

Sowe in Juyl oynons, radysshe, arage, nepes, and rapes, 164, 165.

Sowe in Aust rape, nepe, and radysshe, 172.

Sowe in Septemb'r whete and ador, 180; barly cantyne (sic); lupyne, peeses, and sisane (sic), ffitches, ffeyngreek, and forage (sic), 181; ffasele, 183; popy, brasyk, and origon, 184.

Cappare, gith, cresses, dile, radysshe, pasnepe, cerfoile, letuce, betes, coriander, rapes, and nepes, 185.

Sowe in Octob'r whete and ador, sisane, ffasele, lynseed, 187.

Gooldes, senvey, 191; dyle, myntes, oynons, pasnepe, origon, 192.

Wilde nepe, tyme, leekseede, betes, basilicon, 192.

Sowe in Novemb'r whete, ffar, benes, barly, lentis, lyne, garlik, ulpike, oynons, tasul, cunel, and armarace, 207, 208, 209.

Almandes and iuglandes, 53, 98.

Sowe in Decemb'r wheete, barly, benes, and lynseede.

[1] chyves.

Sette saffron in Feuerer, 80; cannetes, 80, 81.
Sette and graffe peres, 86, 87.
Sette in Marche garlyk, cunel, oynons, and ulpyke, 110.
Origon and melons, 110; pomgarnette, 115.
Sette in Aprill ziziphus, 144.
Sette in May zizif and figtree, 161.
Sette in Septembor, and graff tubres, 185.
Sette in Novemb'r wilde piri, citrus, quynce, pomgarnette, 218
Serue, meddeler, silique, molbury, chiritree, and figtree, 218.
Sette greet treen. Serues sette in Januarie, 52.
Seruys bareyn to make bere and to kepe hem, 53.
Scions of vynes to sette in ffeuerer, 65.
Scions thaire lengthe and space betwene hem, 65.
Semynary what it is, 67.
Sperage spounge, and to haue goode sperage, 112.
Sponge of sperage to make in Marche, 112.
Siliqua to plaunte and sowe in ffeuerer, 96.
Semynary deluynge in May, 151; sisame in sowyng, 181.
Sape counfit in Novemb'r, 220.
Sowes to chese long syded, 99.
Soues howe long goeth with pigge, 99.
Swyne, what soil is best fore, 99.
Stalons in H. atte hors, stalons asses.
Shepe-shering in May, with good enoyntynge, 153.
Shepe-shering in Juyn, 162.
Sheep feble to putte awaie in Juyll, 167.
Sheep tuppes to chese and ewes for hem, and for to make hem bere males or females in Juyll, 167. Shepe rering or lambes rering. Sheep in pasture in Novemb'r.

Tares to sowe in Januarie, 46; in ffeuerer, 62.
Tasul tillinge in Marche, 108, 109.
Tasul plauntyng in Octob'r, 191.
Tubres sowe and graffe in ffeuerer, 58.
Tubres settyng in Septemb'r, graffyng and kepinge, 185.

Water to preue, 2, 3.
Water to fynde for to make wynches or welles, 173.
Water is dyvers in dyuers places, 174.
Water to knowe by dyvers signes, 175.
Wynches, makyng with goode crafte, 176.
Water pru'yng in dyvers wyse, 176.
Water conduyte of dyvers crafte, and the mesure of hem, 177.

Vynes where forto sette, and discrecion in kittinge, 6.
Dyvers vynes, dyvers wynes, 7.
Vyne braunches kitte to enoynte, 8.
Vynes, howe high thai shall be, 8.
Vynes pastyning and tables for vynes in Januarie, 47, 48.
Vynes soil and aier, 48, 49.
When, where, and what vynes beth best for to sette, 63, 64, 65.
Vyne Amynee gretly commended; Vyne Apiane, 64.
Vynes scions to sette in ffeuerer, 65.
Vynes scions howe many may stande in an akre lande, 65.
Vynes to make a grove of in ffeuerer, 67.
Subtil crafte for vynes in ffeuerer, 68.
Vynes prouincial, 69.
Kyttinge of commune vyne in coolde contree, 69.
Kitte bosshe vynes in ffeuerer with moche crafte, 71.
Provincial vynes kittynge in ffeuerer, 72.
Vynes plechinge, prouynynge, or propagacion, 73.
Vynes, deluyng, stakyng and bynding, 74.
Vyne lacrimose to helpe in ffeuerer, 102.
Vyne to bere grapes ungreyned, 101.
Vyne to bere grapes white and blake. N.B.—The two last chapters of February are omitted in the MS.
Vynes graffyng in Marche, 104.
Vynes to be poudered in Marche, 106.
Vynes stakyng and bynding in Marche, 104, 105.
Vynes olde to repare in Marche, 107.
Vynes hurt or seeke to be leched in Marche, 107.
Vynes tender to tille in May, 149.

Vynes pampinacion in May, 150.
Vynes ablaqueate to couer in May, 151.
Vynes couering in Juyn, 160.
Vynes couering and vindage apparail in Juyl, 171.
Vyne yerdes lene to helpe in August, 171.
Vynes pampynyng in August, 171.
Vyndage solempe in Septemb'r, 183.
Vynes whoos grapes roteth to remedy in (August) Septemb'r, 186.
Vynes that beth fertile marke hem in (Septemb'r) October, for scions to sette in settyng season, 188.
Vynes to traile in (Septemb'r) October in hoote lande, 188.
Vynes ablaqueacion in (Septemb'r) October, 188.
Vynes graffyng in Septemb'r, 189.
Vynes ouerlonge to repare in Novemb'r, 208.
Vynes putacion in Novemb'r, 209.
Vynes pampinose and not fructuose to remedy in Novemb'r, 219.
Vryne aboute vyne rootes, 219.

Wyne mirtite in Januarie, 59.
Wyne mirtite counfit in Feuerer, 102.
Wyne Tiriake right helefull, to make in ffeuerer, 100.
Wyne mirtite in other wyse made in ffeuerer, 100.
Wyne absinthiate, rosate, and violate in ffeuerer, 103.
Wyne of pomgarnette in Marche counfit, 118.
Wyne rosate counfit in May, 156.
Wyne of grapes birained to remedie in Octob'r, 198.
Wynes dyuersitee, and makyng of hem in Octob'r, 197.
Wynes of dyvers colours beth of dyvers qualitee & sauours, 197.
Wyne makyng of must by decoccion in the first maner, and in the second maner by see-water tried and fyned in Octob'r, 197.
Wyne to make long enduringe, 198.
Wyne or muste that is birayned to helpe, 198.
Wynes soure to make swete, 198.
Wynes weel smelling to make, 198.
Wynes swete drynking to make, 199.
Wynes newe to make seme olde, 199.

Wynes remedy for enfection, 199.
Wynes of oon yere to seme passyng olde, 199.
Wynes browne to make white, and eg^{n} (sic) 200.
Wynes smale to make greet, 200.
Wyne aust(r)ere to make clere and gentil to drynke, 201.
Wyne trouble or feculent to clere anoon, 201.
Wyne in fyn confection, 202.
Wyne pestilente, 203.
Wyne ynomelle, 203.
Wyne of peres, 90.
Violette settyng in Feuerer, 80.
Wortes hoore, as frost, and tender, with tyme of settyng wortes in Feuerer, 83.

Ypomelides settyng in Decemb'r, and keping of his fruyte.

Zizifus settyng and tillinge in Aprill, 144.
Zizifus to gladde yf it be sorrowfull, & kepyng of thaire fruytes in Aprill, 144.
Ziziphus to sette or graffe in May, 152; in Juyn, 161.

1147 e. 2.
1-2

Early English Text Society.

Palladius

"On Husbondrie."

EDITED

FROM THE UNIQUE MS. OF ABOUT 1420 A.D.
IN COLCHESTER CASTLE.

BY THE

REV. BARTON LODGE, M.A.,

RECTOR OF ST. MARY MAGDALEN, COLCHESTER.

PART I.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY, BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 8 & 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCCLXXII.

Price Ten Shillings.

Early English Text Society.

COMMITTEE OF MANAGEMENT:

DIRECTOR: FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, ESQ.

TREASURER: HENRY B. WHEATLEY, ESQ.

HON. SEC.: G. JOACHIM, ESQ., ST. ANDREW HOUSE, CHANGE ALLEY, E.C.

J. MEADOWS COWPER, ESQ.
ALEXANDER J. ELLIS, ESQ.
DANBY P. FRY, ESQ.
H. HUCKS GIBBS, ESQ.
REV. J. RAWSON LUMBY.
REV. DR. RICHARD MORRIS.
J. A. H. MURRAY, ESQ.
EDWARD B. PEACOCK. ESQ.
REV. WALTER W. SKEAT.
HENRY SWEET, ESQ.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

BANKERS:

THE UNION BANK OF LONDON, REGENT STREET BRANCH, 14, ARGYLL PLACE, W.

The Publications for 1865 and 1866 are out of print, but a separate subscription has been opened for their immediate reprint. The Texts for 1864, and all but four for 1865, have been reprinted. Subscribers who desire the Texts of all or any of these years should send their names at once to the Hon. Secretary, as several hundred additional names are required before the Texts for 1866 can be sent to press.

The Publications for 1864 *(one guinea) are :—*

1. EARLY ENGLISH ALLITERATIVE POEMS, ab. 1360 A.D. ed. R. Morris. 16s.
2. ARTHUR, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 4s.
3. LAUDER ON THE DEWTIE OF KYNGIS, &c., 1556, ed. F. Hall. 4s.
4. SIR GAWAYNE AND THE GREEN KNIGHT, ab. 1360, ed. R. Morris. 10s.

The Publications for 1865 *(one guinea) are :—*

5. HUME'S ORTHOGRAPHIE AND CONGRUITIE OF THE BRITAN TONGUE, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s.
6. LANCELOT OF THE LAIK, ab. 1500, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 8s.
7. GENESIS AND EXODUS, ab. 1250, ed. R. Morris.
8. MORTE ARTHURE, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock. 7s.
9. THYNNE ON CHAUCER'S WORKS, ab. 1598, ed. Dr. Kingsley.
10. MERLIN, ab. 1440, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley.
11. LYNDESAY'S MONARCHE, &c., 1552, Part I., ed. F. Hall.
12. WRIGHT'S CHASTE WIFE, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s.

The Publications for 1866 *are :—*

13. SEINTE MARHERETE, 1200-1330, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
14. KYNG HORN, FLORIS AND BLANCHEFLOUR, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby.
15. POLITICAL, RELIGIOUS, AND LOVE POEMS, ed. F. J. Furnivall.
16. THE BOOK OF QUINTE ESSENCE, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall.
17. PARALLEL EXTRACTS FROM 29 MSS. OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.
18. HALI MEIDENHAD, ab. 1200, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
19. LYNDESAY'S MONARCHE, &c., Part II., ed. F. Hall.
20. HAMPOLE'S ENGLISH PROSE TREATISES, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry.
21. MERLIN, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley.
22. PARTENAY OR LUSIGNEN, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.
23. DAN MICHEL'S AYENBITE OF INWYT, 1340, ed. R. Morris.

The Publications for 1867 *(one guinea, less* Nos. 24, 25, 26, *out of print) are :—*

24. HYMNS TO THE VIRGIN AND CHRIST; THE PARLIAMENT OF DEVILS, &c., ab. 1430, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 3s.
25. THE STACIONS OF ROME, THE PILGRIMS' SEA-VOYAGE, WITH CLENE MAYDENHOD, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s.
26. RELIGIOUS PIECES IN PROSE AND VERSE, from R. Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440), ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 2s.
27. LEVINS'S MANIPULUS VOCABULORUM, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 12s.
28. WILLIAM'S VISION OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN, 1362 A.D. Part I. The Earliest or Vernon Text; Text A, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 8s.
29. EARLY ENGLISH HOMILIES (ab. 1220-30 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part I. Edited by R. Morris. 7s.
30. PIERCE THE PLOUGHMANS CREDE, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 2s.

The Publications for 1868 *(one guinea) are :—*

31. MYRC'S DUTIES OF A PARISH PRIEST, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. E. Peacock. 4s.
32. THE BABEES BOOK, URBANITATIS, THE BOKES OF NORTURE OF JOHN RUSSELL AND HUGH RHODES, THE BOKES OF KERUYNG, CURTASYE, AND DEMEANOUR, &c. with some French and Latin Poems on like subjects, ed. from Harleian and other MSS. by F. J. Furnivall. 15s.
33. THE KNIGHT DE LA TOUR LANDRY (from French of A.D. 1372), ab. 1440 A.D. A Father's Book for his Daughters, ed. from Harl. MS. 1764 and Caxton's version, by Thomas Wright. 8s.
34. EARLY ENGLISH HOMILIES (before 1300 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part II., ed. R. Morris, LL.D.. 8s.
35. LYNDESAY'S WORKS, Part III. : The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum, ed. F. Hall. 2s.

The Publications for 1869 *(one guinea) are :—*

36. MERLIN, Part III. Edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq.; with an Essay on Arthurian Localities, by J. S. Stuart Glennie, Esq. 12s.
37. SIR DAVID LYNDESAY'S WORKS, Part IV., containing Ane Satyre of the Three Estaits. Edited by F. Hall, Esq. 4s.
38. WILLIAM'S VISION OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN, Part II. Text B. Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. 6d.
39. THE ALLITERATIVE ROMANCE OF THE DESTRUCTION OF TROY, translated from Guido de Colonna. Edited from the unique MS. in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the Rev. G. A. Panton. Part I. 10s. 6d.

Palladius on Husbondrie.

TRANSLATION

OF

PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE.

BOOK THE FIRST.

[Most of the final letters *n*, *t*, *h*, and some *e*'s, have a curl or flourish over them; these are judged not to be marks of contraction, and are disregarded.]

De preceptis rei rustice.

1.

Consideraunce is taken atte prudence
What mon me moost enforme: and husbondrie
No rethorick doo teche or eloquence;
As sum have doon hemself to magnifie.
What com therof? That wyse men folie
Her wordes helde. Yit other thus to blame
We stynte, in cas men doo by us the same.

No rhetoric is necessary for husbandry, though some have thought differently, to magnify themselves.

2.

Us is to write tillinge of everie londe,
With Goddes grace, eke pasture and housyng;
For husbondry how water shal be fonde;
What is to rere[1] or doon in everything,
Plesaunce and fruyte the tilier to bring
As season wol; his appultreen[2] what houre
Is best to set is part of our laboure.

We shall treat of tillage, pasturage, buildings, finding water, etc.

[1] nutrire. [2] pomos.

De iiii^{or} rebus quibus agricultura consistit.

3.

The four points of husbandry: water, air, land, and management.

In thinges iiii alle husbondrie mot stande:
In water, aier, in lande, and gouvernance.
And iii the first, as water, aier, and lande
Beth natural, the iiiith is of plesaunce
And crafte of men; but this consideraunce
Is first to seen, how thyng is of nature
In places there thou wilt have the culture.

4.

The air must be clear and wholesome; the water too.

And first beholde aboute and se thin aire,
Yf it be clere and hole stand out of fere;
The Water eke beholde yf it be faire,
Hoolsum, and light, and eyther springing there
Or elles thider brought from elles where,

The land fertile and well situate.

Or that it come of rayne; eke se thi lande
Be bering,[1] and commodiously stande.

De aieris probacione.

5.

Good air is known by countrymen's cheeks, clear wits, and unimpeded sight.

Good ayer is there as dales deep are noon,
And mystes derk noo dayes maketh nyght;
The contreemen coloured well ichone,
Thaire wittes clere and unoffended sight,
Her voices faire, her herynge pure and light.
All this is preef of holsum aire and clene,
And there as is contraier is aire unclene.

De acquâ probandâ.

6.

The water must not be brought from puddles or marshes.

The water out of gayseyn or of myer[2]
Be it not brought, nor out of metal synke,
That it be freshe coloured first desire,

[1] *Vel* fertile. [2] *Vel* palude.

Not poury,[1] but plesaunt and good to drinke,
And smell also therto in cas it stynke;
If it be coole in heete and luke[2] in colde,
The better may thowe with that water holde.

7.

Yit although thees in water faire appere,
An hidde defaicte is sumtyme in nature
Under covert, and therof thus thowe lere:
Yf contreymen in likyng hele endure,
Her hedes good, her chekes also pure,
And lite or no compleynt inwith the brest,
The longes hole and wynded with the best.

Learn if the countrymen are well-liking, their heads good, cheeks clean, lungs long-winded.

8.

The longe-woo cometh ofte of yvel eire,
The stomake eke of eire is overtake,
Take heede eke yf the dwellers in that leire
Her wombes, sydes, reynes swell or ake,
Yf langoure in thaire bledders ough' awake.
And if thoue see the people sounde and faire,
No doubt is in thy water nor thin aire.

The lung-woe comes of bad air; the stomach also is overtaken by it. See if the dwellers in that place have aches in their stomachs, sides, reins, or bladders.

De electione terre.

9.

Ffecunditee thowe see thus in thi lande:
See not the swerd[3] all naked, white, unclene,
All chalk[4] or gravel groissyng in thi hande
Withouten moolde[5] admixt, nor sandy[6] lene,
Nor hongrie clay,[7] nor stones ful iche rene,
To ronke and weete, yolgh, bitter, salt ragstone,[8]
Valeyes herde and depe eke be ther noon.

Let not the sward be bare or white, nor chalk, nor gravel unmixed with mould, and let there no salt ragstone, or hard deep vales.

10.

A roten swerd and welny blaake, it selve
Suffysing wel with graas[9] to ouerwrie,
And tough to glue ayein though thowe it delve,

A rotten sward, almost black, self-covered with grass, and toughly adhering again

[1] moddy. [2] tepida. [3] glebam. [4] creta. [5] terreno. [6] *Vel* sabulo. [7] glarea. [8] tophus. [9] gramine.

when dug, its fruit not scabby nor dry, bearing walwort, rushes, reeds, grass, clover, wild plums and briars, is good.

The fruit of it not scabby, rosted drie,
With walwort that goode lande wol signifie.
With ryshes, reede, graas, trefoil, plummes wilde,
And briers fatte also goo it with childe.

11.

Thy land need not be coloured, but fat and sweet. Take a clod, and wet it with good water, and see if it be tough and gluey; or dig a hole, and if the earth will not all go in again, it is fruitful.

Coloured stonde not on to besily
To see thi lande; but rather fatte and swete;
To preve it fatte, a clodde avisely
To take, and with gode water weel it wete,
And loke if it be glewy, tough to trete;
Or make a dyche, and yf the moolde abounde
And wol not in agayn, it is fecounde.

12.

Yf it be lene, it goeth all in and more,
Yf it be meene,[1] it wol be with the brinke.

To choose sweet land, take an earthern pot, give it drink in sweet water, and so judge.
For vines you must take care the land be loose

But for to take it swete, ataste alore
The bitterest erthe and werst that thou canst thinke;
An earthen potte thou take and yeve it drinke
In water swete, and theruppon thou deme.
Ffor vynes land to chees eke must thou yeme,[2]

13.

in body and colour, the trees thereon light, fair, and long.

In coors[3] and in colour solute and rare,
The treen[4] thereon light, fertile, fair, and lange,
As peres wilde, as plummes boshes are,
Not croked, lene, or seke, but hole and strange;

Let there be no pools, but let it lengthen out into a goodly plain.

Ne pulle[5] it not, but goodly plaine clonge,[6]
Ne pitche it not to sore into the vale,
Nor breke it not all doun aboute a dale.

14.

If it be hilly, storms will assail it. Choose a plain in the mean.

Tempest, yf it be hilly, must assaille;
An even feelde thou chese, and in the mene,
Thater by the cleef awaie travaille;

[1] mediocris. [2] attendere. [3] corpore. [4] arbores.
[5] stagnet (verbum est). [6] elonget (verbum est).

Or hille or dale in mesure thou demene.
But se thin eyre be faire and land unlene,[1] — A high hill must keep off offensive winds, unless woods protect you from it.
An higher hille the wynd that wolde offende
Must holde of, but yf woddes the defende.

15.

The landes fatte or lene, or thicke or rare, — Soils not without defects are good for divers seeds. I advise to choose the fat and moist; they require least labour and bear the best fruit. The next best is the thick and rank; but let the thick and dry land alone.
Or drie, or moiste, and not withouten vice,
Ffor divers seede yit thay right needful are;
But chese the fatte and moyste is myne avyse.
Her werk is leest, and fruyt is moost of price.
And after it the thicke and ronke is best:
But thicke and drie espy, and grannt it rest.

16.

Ayer, water, lande considered in nature, — Now for good management. The master's presence benefits his fields. Regard not the hue of land.
Nowe se the crafte;—the crafte is gouvernance;
Nowe every worde and sentence hath greet cure;
The lord present his feelde may best avaunce.
The lande is goode, the colour nought perchaunce;
Therefore in hewe doo thou noo diligence,
ffor god by his plesaunce alle will dispence.

17.

The graffe and grayne is goode, but after preef — Sow and graft after trial. Avoid new seeds. Seeds will change their nature.
Thou sowe or graffe, and seedes newe eschewe
To sowe or sette, and trust in thair bonchief.
Oute of thaire kynde eke seedes wol renewe
And change hemself, as writeth clercs trewe,
In places weete all rather then in drie.
ffor vynes nowe, apointe of husbondrie.

18.

Northwarde in places hote, in places colde — Plant vines towards the north in hot places.
Southward, and temporannt in Est and West;
Yet of tylling is dyvers reson holde;
But chuse of thi province I holde it best. — Follow the ways of the place.
To fructifie also this is honest,

[1] pinguis.

Let the younger obey their elders.

That yonger men obeye unto thaire eldron
In gouvernynge, as goode and buxom childron.

19.

Vines cut early will produce many branches; if late, many grapes.

To kytte a vyne is thinges iij to attende:
The vyne, and fruyt, and place in whom thai growe.
Of erly kytting braunches fele ascende,
Of late kyttyng cometh grapes right enowe.

Change them from poor land to good, if you can.

From feble lande eke chaunge hem yf thou mowe:
For man and tree from feble lande to goode
Who can and wol not chaunge I holde him woode.

20.

After a good vintage cut them close. Do not spare the knife.

And kytte[1] hem streyt after thi goode vindage,[2]
And grapes fewe and badde, thou kytte hem large.
Thyn yrons kepe in harde and sharpe usage
For graffyng and for kytting I the charge,
And doo thi dede, or flour or germ enlarge,

If the plough fail, use the spade.

And yf the plough mys doo, the spade amende,
In landes drie and hoote noo vyne extende.

21.

It is of no use to set a vine in hot, dry places. But if wind overthrow or burn your vine, you may cover it with straw.

In places hoote, in places over drie
It is noo boote his vyne a man to sette,
There as for heete he must hem over wrie;[3]
Yet if that he Vulturnus oversette
A vyne in heete or other blastes lette,
Or brenne a vyne, in stre or other thynge
To covert here is holsom husbondynge.

22.

Cut off the barren branch. Avoid barren and dunged land for young vines.

The bareyne braunche, if ronke and greene it be,
Right by lette kytte him of as mortal foo
Of alle thi tree; but barenne lande thou flee
As pestilence; in donged londe also
To sowe in vynes younge as do not so;

[1] puta. [2] vindimiam. [3] operire.

Yit Grekes seyen that after yeres thre
Save Wortes, sowe in hem what ever it be.

Plant anything but colewort among vines.

23.

Iche herbe also thai sayen it is to sowe,
In landes drie, outtake of hem the bene;
The bene in landes weete is best to throwe;
And sette not oute thi landes fate or lene
To him whoos lande adjoyneth on thi rene;
For harme and stryffe of that upon thi self
May ryse, ye and perchaunce the overwhelve.

Plant all herbs, except beans, in a dry soil. Let not your land to the owner of the adjoining property.

24.

Tylle all thi felde, or all thy felde is lorne;
Thi whete, a wonder, chaunging, thries sowe,
In lande to fatte, wol tourne into other corne,
And rie of whete ysowen wol up growe,
As thay that are expert in tilling knowe.
Iliche fre fro thinges thre thowe twynne,
Sterilitee, infirmitee, and synne.

Till the whole field. Wheat, sown thrice in rich land, will turn to other corn.

25.

In bareine lande to sette or foster vynes
Dispiseth alle the labour and expence.
In feldes more,[1] in hilles nobler, wyne is;
Abundaunt wyne the north wynde wol dispence
To vynes sette agayne his influence;
The sotheren wynde enspireth better wyne.
Nowe moche or noble chees; the choys is thyne.

It is lost labour to set vines in barren land. In fields you get more wine, but in hills better. The north also dispenses abundance, the south better quality.

26.

Necessitee nath never haliday:
Take hede on that, and feldes temporate
All though it be goode sowyng, yit alway,
Or long yf it be drie in oon astate,
Let sowe it forth, and god it fortunate;

Necessity has no holiday, and though it is good to sow fields when in good condition, yet if it continue dry overlong, delay not to sow. Keep the paths clean.

[1] vini.

And yf thi wey be foule, it is dampnable,
And neither plesaunt, neither profitable.

27.

A field must be well tilled to requite the expense. Take in hand no more than you can sustain. Take away black vines. Do not cut the green and tender. Long stakes desirable.

To tille a felde man must have diligence,
And balk it not; but eree it upbe bydene.
A litel tilled weel wol quyte expence,
So take on hande as thou may wele sustene.
The vynes blake awaie thowe take, eke greene
And tender vynes kytte are therby shent,
And stakes longe are vynes increment.

28.

Turn away the cutting, so that it does not drop on the grape, and anoint the branches out. Great olives, with poor watery fruit not worth the cost of the labor, grow out of deep land.

Twine every kirf aweywarde from the grape;
Lest dropping doo it harme, ennointeth eke
The braunches kitte, and up thay faste escape
Alle fatte and sadde: deep land also thai seke,
Olyves greet oute of that land wol reke
With drafty, wattry fruyte and late and lite
Unsuffisaunt the costes for to quyte.

29.

Olives love luke-warm air and temperate winds; and vines by process may be brought to a height, but not more than four feet in poor land and seven feet in rich land.

Luke ayer and tempre wynde olyves love,
And vynes, that upon the hilles stande,
By processe may be brought to thair above,
Yit not but fotes IIII in feble land;
And seven foote in fatte up may they stande.
Eke as the grape is grene and wol not shake,
Up bind it softe, and it is undertake.

30.

Do not tie your vine always in the same place. If not dug close it will hurt the vintage. Two feet deep enough for corn, double for trees. A new vine is improved by diligence as much as it goes back by negligence.

Thy vyne is oon stede ever thou ne bynde,
And delve her cloos for hurtyng thi vindage,
Eke deep and fertile land it is to fynde,
And two foote depe is good for corne tillage,
And double deep for treen in depnesse gage.
A novel vine up goeth by diligence
As fast as it goeth down by negligence.

31.

And take on hande in husbonding thi lande
As thowe may bere in maner and mesure;
War arrogaunce in takyng thing in hande;
For after pride in scorne thou maist assure.
And elder then oon yere noo grayne in ure
Thowe putte, in drede it die; yit hilles yelde is
Wel gretter grayne and fewer than in feldys.

Beware of arrogance, and do not take in hand more than you can manage. Use no grain more than a year old.

32.

In springing of the moone is best to sowe
In daies warm; and, treen unprofitable—
Yf that thi land with hem be overgrowe,
Devide it thus;—that fatte and bering able[1]
Let eree it up, and leve the lene unable[2]
Covert in wode; yit wol this, with travaille
And brennyng it, thi fatte lande countervaille.

At new moon on warm days is best to sow. Plow up the rich fat land, but leave the poor land covered with trees. Yet this well worked and burnt will countervail your good land.

33.

But when it is so brent by yeres fyve,
As nygh it not,[3] and after shalt thou se
That is as fatter lande wol crece[4] and thrive.
Tholyve, as Grekes sayen, shall planted be
Of children clennes in virginitee,
Perchance in remembraunce that tholyve tree
Ys p'mynent to virgyne chastitee.

After burning let the land lie idle five years. Greek notions with respect to the olive.

34.

The greynes names is noo nede to telle,
Nor after tyme and places how thai chaunge;
Suffice it the there as thow casteth dwelle,
To see the countrey seed, and seed estraunge,
Preve eke the unpreved grene afore eschaunge;
Lupyne and fetches sleyn, and on thaire roote
Up dried, are as dounging landes boote.

There is no need to give the names of grains, nor their varieties. Wherever you choose to dwell see the seed of the country, and make no change without trial. Lupines and vetches cut down and dried are good manure.

[1] sc terra. [2] sc terra. [3] dimitte jacere. [4] crescere.

35.

Uncut they drink the moisture of the land. In hot and dry places work early on your vines; in cold, moist, and shady places, do not hasten.

And lette hem drie unsleyne, and up thai drinke
The landes juce:[1] in place eke hoote and drie,
In champeyne eke, and nygh the sees brynke
Betyme upon thi werk in vynes hie;
In places colde and moist, or shade and hie
Have thou noo haste, and this to kepe in houres
Aswell as moneth or dayes, thyne honoure is.

36.

When it is time to till, it is not too early or too late fifteen days before or after. Open land inclining to the sun is best for corn, and for wheat if it be marly, thick, and somewhat wet.

And tilling, when the tyme is it to doo,
Is not to rathe yf daies thries fyve[2]
It do prevent, and not to late also
As for as long;[3] eke cornes best wol thryve
In open lande solute acclyned blyve
Uppon the sonne, and lande is best for whete
If it be marly,[4] thicke, and sumdele wete.

37.

Barley likes loose, dry earth. Three month sowing is to be confined to cold places where the land is wet in summer.

And barly lande is goode solute and drie,
That manner molde hath barly in delite,
In cley lande yf men sowe it, it wol die.
Trymenstre[5] sedness[6] eke is to respite
To places colde of winter snowes white,
There as the lande is weete in somer season;—
Aud other wey to wirche is counter reason.

38.

Three-month seed to be sown in autumn in cold lands. If you want trees or grain to grow in salt land, you must plant or sow immediately upon autumn, that winter may drive off the vice of that land.

Trymestre seede in hervest for to sowe
In lande colde is best, and yf the need[7]
In landes salt that treen or greynes growe,
Thou must anoon on hervest plante or sede,
The malice of that lande and cause of drede
That wynter with his shoures may of dryve,
Yit must it have an other thing to thryve.

[1] succum. [2] xv. [3] xv dies. [4] cretosa. [5] trimenstris. [6] satio. [7] sc serere.

39.

Sum gravel or sum water lande caste under
If thou it plannte, and yf thou wolt it sede
A comune molde among it part asonder,
And alle the better wol thi werkes spede.
The stones on thi lande is for to drede;
For thai be somer hoote and winter colde,
That vyne, and greyne, and tree distempre wolde.

Put some gravel or river-soil under it, or common mould. Stones will be hot in summer, and cold in winter, and will injure vines or grain.

40.

The land aboute a roote is to be moved
All upsodoune, and fleykes[1] shal we take
Of dounge and moolde, and first be moolde admoved
And after dounge. Ap'mynent to make
Upon thi felde, hym nil[2] I undertake
That is thi dere entere: and whi? For, he
Wol wene his werke be wele, hou soever it be.

The ground about trees is to be thoroughly changed, and new mould and dung is to be applied. A favourite ought not to be made foreman.

41.

To chese or bey a felde consider this,—
That his nature and his fecunditie
Be not fordoon. In housbonding is mysse,
Unhusbondyng undooth fertilitee.
Yet pose[3] I that it myght amended be.
The surer is to trust in thinges sure;
The hoole is save, the hurt is for to cure.

Things to be considered in choosing or buying a field. It is safer to take ground that does not require improvement.

42.

Yit as for seede, it may wel been amended;
But vynes may have vices worthy blame,
To longe, or broode, uptrailed, or extended,
As dyvers men have doone to fresh her fame,
And fewe or feble grapes in the same
Have growe. A grete laboure is to correcte
A molde in this maner that is enfecte.

It is very difficult to undo the mischief arising from bad seed, though credit may be gained by the size of the vines thus reared.

[1] crates. [2] nolo. [3] pono.

43.

Let the land face the south and east where it is cold, and let not the sun be kept off by hills. In hot regions choose the north.

Thy landes is thus to cheese in costes colde;
On south and este se that it faire enclyne,
And that noone hille the sonne out from it holde,
But from the colde Septemptrion declyne,
And from northwest there chylling sonnes shyne.
In coostes hoote Septemtrion thou take,
Ther fruyte and high plesaunce and helthes wake.

44.

See that the water be good where you dwell. It is not safe to live near a marsh, especially if (the south) and west winds dry and harden it.

And se the floode be goode ther thou will duelle;
For ofte of it exaleth myst impure:
And fle ther from, in caas it myght the quelle.
By myre also to dwelle it is not sure,
And namely and West that drie[1] and dure
In season hoote, for causes pestilent
Engendring there, and wormes violent.

45.

Let your house be in proportion to your income, and let it stand rather high, so as to be cheerful, firm, and dry.

Thyne house as wol thi fortune and thi felde
Lete make it up in crafte and in mesure,
It to repaire as may thi lande foryelde,
Demened so that yf mysseaventure
Fordo thin house, a year or two recure[2]
It at the mest, and sette it sumdele hie,
For gladsum and for sadder ground and drie.

46.

Let the foundation extend half a foot beyond the wall; but see whether it be on rag-stone or rock or on clay.

The fundament enlarge it half a foote
Outwith[3] the wough, but first the grounde assay
If it be ragge or roche; on it thou foote[4]
In depth a foote or two; but uppon clay
If thou wilt bilde an other is the array;—
Let delve and cast it up until thou fynde
It herde and hoole, and tough itself to bynde.

[1] arent et indurant verbum.
[2] recuret verbum est.
[3] extra parietem.
[4] fundare.

47.

With orchard, and with gardeyne, or with mede,
Se that thyne hous with hem be umviroune,
The side in longe upon the south thou sprede,
The cornel ryse upon the wynter sonne,
And gire it from the cold West yf thou conne,
Thus shall thyne hous be wynter warm and light,
And somer colde, and lo this crafte is light.

Let an orchard, garden, or meadow environ your house. Let the front in its whole length look to the south, its corner to the east.

48.

Eke fourme it so that faire it stande yfere;
The wynter wones[1] on the sonny side
There Phebus with his bemes may it chere,
And tymber stronge enlace it for to abyde,
Eke pave or floore it wele in somer tyde,
But tymber not thyne hous with dyvers kynde
Of treen, as ashe and birche, and ooke, and lynde.

The form of the house, and the arrangement of the rooms (wones) for summer and winter. The floor must not be made of various woods.

49.

The mapul,[2] ooke, and assche[3] endureth longe
In floryng yf thou ferne it weele,[4] er chave,[5]
That in the tree the morter doo noo wronge.[6]
Oon parte of lyme and tweyne of robell have,
Sex fyngre thicke a floore therof thou pave
With lyme and asshes mixt with cole and sande,
A flake above in thiknesse of thyne hande.

Fern or chaff will prevent the morter from injuring the floor. How to make a pavement.

50.

This flooring wol be blak and wynter warme,
And lycoure shedde, anoon it wol up drie,
But, lest the sonne in somer doo the harme,
Thy somer hous northest and west thou wrie,[7]
With marble or with tyle thi flooryng wrie,[8]
Or thus thou maist thi wynter flooryng take,
Or lyme or gravel mynge and therof make.

A summer-house should look to the north-east and west, and be floored with marble or tile. Mix lime or gravel for a winter flooring.

[1] domus. [2] acer. [3] fraxinus. [4] filice sternas.
[5] paleis sternas. [6] ne putrefaciendo. [7] inclines. [8] operias.

51.

There are three kinds of dug gravel: red, white, and black. The finest is gritty.

The bylder eke to knowe is necessarie
What gravel and what lyme is profitable.
Savelles dolve in III natures[1] varie,
In reed, and hoore, and blake unvariable.[2]
Of hem the reed is best, the hoor is able,
The blake is werst, yit gripe hem in thyne honde,
For grossyng[3] gravel fynest wol be fonde.

52.

Good gravel will not soil a cloth if cast into it. Where there is no gravel to be dug, collect it from rivers or from near the sea. Sea-gravel retains the moisture long.

Eke preve it thus, in clothes white it kest,
And shaken oute yf that the clooth be clene,
Withouten spotte, that gravel is the best,
And yf thou may noon delve, in flood, or lene
Clay lande, or nygh the see, gravel thou glene.
The see gravel is lattest for to drie,
And lattest may thou therwith edifie.

53.

Use land-gravel quickly, ere sun, or wind, or showers dissolve it. Drench sea-gravel in sweet water to bring the salt out of it.

The salt in it thi werkes wol resolve;
And lande[4] gravel anoon set[5] in worching,
Er soone or wynde or shoures[6] it dissolve.
And floode gravel is goode for coveryng.
Oute of the see gravel the salt to bringe
Let drenche it for a tyme in water swete.
Thy lyme of stones harde is thus to gete—

54.

Burn stone or marble to make lime. Mix two parts of lime and one of gravel, and a third part of marl in river gravel will make it very firm.

Stone tiburtyne, or floody columbyne,
Or spongy rede, lete brenne, or marble stone,
For bylding better is the harder myne,[7]
The fistulose and softer lete it goone
To cover with, and tweyne[8] of lyme in oon[9]
Of gravel mynge,[10] and marl[11] in floode gravel
A thriddendele wol sadde it wonder wel.

[1] colours. [2] This is notable. [3] stridens. [4] quæ fossilis est. [5] pone. [6] imbres. [7] minera. [8] partes. [9] pars. [10] misce. [11] crete.

55.

Thi walles bricke with brik thou must corone
A foote aboute, and sumdel promynent,
That thay by storme or rayne be not fordone,
And lete hem drie ér thou thi bemes bent,
Or rovyng sette uppon, lest all be shent
For lacke of crafte, eke this is husbondrie
To covert hem with sumwhat whille thay drie.

Brick walls should be surmounted with a brick coping. Let them be dry before you place beams or roofing upon them.

56.

Make light ynough aboute on everie syde,
And loke, as the is taught, that este and west
And north and southe thyne houses thou devyde,
In wynter south, in veer and hervest est;
Septemtrion in summer houseth best;
And half as high thy chambre and triclyne
Thou make as it is mesure long in lyne.

Let the house be light, and stand duly to the four quarters, the rooms half as high as long.

57.

Of suche a stuffe as easy is to fynde
Is best to bilde, and bordes of cipresse
Plaine and directe upsette hem in thaire kynde
A foot atwynne, and hem togedre dresse
With jenyper, boxe, olyve, or cupresse,
So worching up thi wowes by and by,
But se that it be tymbred myghtely.

Build of such wood as is at hand—the uprights of cypress, a foot apart, dressed with juniper, box, olive, or cypress. Let the walls be strongly timbered.

58.

Fatte reed[1] of myre[2] yground[3] and tempered tough,
Let daube it on the wough on iche asyde,
And with a trowel make it plaine yo,
That it upon the tymbre fast abyde,
Lyme and gravel comyxt thereon thou glide,
With marble greet ygrounde and myxt with lyme
Polisshe alle uppe thy werke in goodly tyme.

Daub the wall with marsh-reed mixed with lime and gravel, and polish it with ground marble.

[1] crassa cana. [2] palude. [3] contusa.

59.

To prepare lime for whitewashing.

Eke whityng werk is thyng of grete delite.
Lime is for that in tymes long made lene;
That it be profitable preve astite;[1]
As tymber hewe it with an axe and sene[2]
Yf it be not in the egge,[3] and sum sustene
In the axe[4] all gliry[5] tough and softe relente;
For whytyng that lyme is convenient.

60.

The plaster to be made strong and bright with a trowel; one coat to be dry before another is added.

The parget of thi wough be stronge and bright,
The truel firste ful ofte it must distreyne,
And as it drieth efte and efte it dight;
The kirtils doo theron of marble greyne,
But first lete oon be drie, and thenne engreyne
A smaller coote above on that, and thenne
A thridde on alle as small as it may renne.

61.

Beware of building on low ground, and if there be no spring or well, have a cistern.

And ware a thyng that many men have used,
To drenche her dwellyngplace in dales deep,
Lest water sholde hem lacke, and foule excused,
For helth is rather thenne thi lust to kepe;
The languor of thi lande is to bywepe.
In stede of Welle or wynche have a cisterne
And rayne of ever hous in it gouverne.

62.

Make it as high as you like, put tile-paving over it, and rub it well with boiled lard.

Let crafte it up pleasaunt as it may suffice
Unto thi self, as best is broode and longe.[6]
The guttures[7] left in sadde ground, assise
And yole[8] on it tilpavyng[9] playne and stronge.
This pavyng must thou cure and labovre longe[10]
And clere it up, but frote it wol with larde
Fatte and decocte; thi werk wol the rewarde.

[1] mox. [2] expectet. [3] acie. [4] ascia. [5] glutinosa. [6] longum.
[7] fusoriis relictis. [8] fundas. [9] testaceum pavimentum. [10] diu.

63.

Whenne that is drie, upwalle it every side
In like maner, eke larde it, herdde it weel,
Tyl water wol endwelle it and abyde,
And fede in it thi waterfish and eel,
To move and make it faire and fresh as well,
As though it were a ryver or a welle.
Now chenes[1] to repaire I am to telle.

Do the same with the walls, till it is hard enough to hold water, and you may keep fish in it as if it were a river.

64.

The chenes, holes, pottes, poles mende,
And thorough the stoone yf that the water synke,
Take pitche[2] and talgh, as nede is the to spende,
And seeth hem tyl thai boile up to the brynke,
And let it coole; eke give it lyme to drynke
A lite and lite and smal, but mynge it yorne,[3]
Tyl every parte until oon body tourne.

To stop holes, etc., in the cistern make a cement of pitch and tallow, and keep mixing lime with it.

65.

Whenne this cyment is made, it must in synke
Uche hole, and chene, and every lekyng stoone,
And presse it thicke aboute on every brynke;
And holsum is that pipes from it goone,
To bringe aboute in water oon by oon,
To drynke of this of waters first and best,
Licoure of grace above, a thyng celest.

Let pipes go from the cistern to carry the water to drink.

66.

Thi wyne celar in colde Septemtrion
Wel derk and ferre from bathes, oste, and stable,
Myddyng, cisterne, and thynges everichoon
That evel smelle; eke se that it be able
As for thi fruyt, an other thyng notable,
Above it well the calcatory make,
A wyne pitte the oon half either to take.

The wine cellar to be to the north, away from bad smells, and large enough for the fruit, with a wine-press above,

[1] rimas. [2] picem. [3] sæpe.

67.

ascended by steps. Let pipes lead to the vat, and let there be a pit for the waste.

Thre grece or IIII is up therto to goo;
Canels or pipes wynes forth to lede
Into the vat, and tonnes make also,
And pave it yf the lyst in length and brede.
A pitte in it, for wynes white and rede
That over renne of ignoraunt kepynge,
To make is oon goode poynte of husbondyng.

68.

The barns to be sweet and high, with a hard floor two foot thick. A place for every kind of corn.

Thi barnes fer fro stynk and sumdele hie,
Thi stable ferre away therfro thou sette,
Eke se that thay be wyndy, colde, and drie,
Thi berne also be playne, and harde the flette,
And footes two to thicke it thou ne lette,
For every corne a place is to devyse,
As large as for thi tyllyng wol suffice.

69.

The granary to be high, and its walls plastered with oil-dregs, clay, and olive-leaves.

Thi garner and thi vessel for thi grayne
Make sumdele high, and walle it thus to thryve:
Oyldregges mixt with clay thou must implayne
Thi wowes with, and leves of olyve,
In stede of chaf upon thi wowes dryve,
And drie it wel, and then oyldregge it efte,
And saufly may thi whete in it be lefte.

70.

So you get rid of weevils and other noisome beasts. Coriander-leaves prevent the wheat from sweating.

This maner crafte wol holde oute of thi whete
Gurgolions and other noyus bestes,
The coriander leves, lest it swete,
Is putte therin, an other crafte unleest is;
From floor to floor to chaunge it ofte his feest is.
Coniza is an herbe, as Greekes sayne,
That drie is goode to kest under thi grayne.

71.

Thyne oilcellar sette on the somer syde,
Holde out the cold and lette come in the sonne
At hooles, so that in the wynter tyde
Thyne oil with esy pressure out be wonne.
Oilmylles, wheeles, wrynges, not begonne
Of newe I nyl not speke of nowe, but clene
Thyne oyle's receptacles thou demene.

The oil-cellar to be on the south. The receptacles of the oil to be kept clean.

72.

Men may also doon other diligence
Aboute an oylcellar, it for to warme,
The pament under thorled and suspense
Bete under fyre, so smoke it may not harme,
A dell, and hete eke wol thi hous enarme,
As from the swerde of wynter kene and colde.
Now husbondrie for stables write I wolde.

An oil-cellar may be warmed by flues underneath.

73.

Towards the southe thi stable and thi stall
For hors and neet thou sette, and gette in light
Oute of the north, and wynterclose it all
To holde outte colde. In summer yeve it sight
Thi hous to cole, and nygh thi bestes dight
A fire in colde; it wol thyne oxen mende,
And make hem faire, yf thai the fyre attende.

Stables and stalls for oxen to be towards the south. Make a fire for them in the winter.

74.

For harming of thaire hoof eke sette hem drie,
And for iche yoke of exon in thi plough
VIII foote in brede, and goodly length outtrie,
The length as from the horne unto the sough,
The brede is crosse, and plank it stronge ynough
Under thyne hors, that it be lygging softe
Ynough, and harde enough to stande alofte.

Not to harm the hoofs, set them in a dry place. Allow eight feet in breadth for each yoke of oxen. Horses require strong planks.

75.

A shed for cattle on the south to be covered with shingles, tiles, broom, or sedge.

Eke on the south thou make an hous for bestes,
But over hoote attemporate to holde
A pointe of husbondrie not this the leest is,
Of forkes, and of borde, and bowes colde
A standyng must be made, and overfolde
And heled weel with shyngul, tile, or broom,[1]
Or segges are as good as to my doom.

76.

Mews for birds, whose dung is necessary for the land except that of the goose.

This hous aboute also make up thi mewes,
For dounge of foules is ful necessarie
To londtillynge; yit gooses donnge eschew is,
It is right nought, it is an adversarie
To every seed, now everie birdde hem warie!
Fy on you, gees; fy on your tail for shame!
Your dounge is nought, turn out your taille of game.

77.

The dove-cote to be in a tower away from the dwelling-house. It is good to scatter old broom with which shoes are made for oxen, amongst doves.

And in a toure with plaine and whited walles
And fenestelles IIII, a columbaire,
As is the gyse, away from there thyne halle is
Lete sette, as doves may therto repaire,
And inwith make hem nestes many a paire.
Olde spartea, that bestes with beth shode,
To sprynge amonge the doves is ful goode.

78.

It will be a charm against weasels; so will the rope with which a man has been hanged.

The wesel shal for this doon hem noon harme,
So it be doon secré that noo man see.
Yit for the wesel use another charme,
Sum of the roope wherwith hath strangled be
Sum men, pray God lette it be never the,
Hang part of that in every fenestell,
And this wol from the wesel wite hem well.

[1] genesta.

79.

Gyf hem comyne ynough, and barme her pennes,
And doves moo ynough in wol thay brynge;
And yf thou wolt have many briddes thennes,
Let barly bake, or bene, or fitches flynge
Afore hem ofte, also for her helping
Let honge aboute in dyvers places rewe,
And bestes adversannt hem wol eschewe.

Give them cummin, and rub their wings with balsam. Let them have baked barley, beans, or vetches, and hang rue about.

80.

Under thi colver hous in alle the brede
Make mewes tweyne, oon litel and obscure,
With whete and mylde in that thi turtours fede,
In somer faat ynough with litel cure:
But boile it in sweetness, and oon mesure
A strike is for vi^{xx} oon daies mete,
But water ofte refreshhed do hem gete.

Under the whole breadth of the dove-cot make two mews: in one feed doves with wheat and millet. A strike is enough for six score.

81.

And thrushes fede upon that other syde;
To faat hem is avayling and plesaunte;
But make this house wherin thay shal abyde
Light, clene, and playne with perches transversannte
To sitte upon, and bowes in to chaunte
Ychannged ofte; eke yeve hem figges grounde
Comyxt with flour to make hem faat and rounde.

In the other feed thrushes. Let them have transverse perches and fresh boughs to sing in. Patten them with ground figs and flour.

82.

The seed of mirt, if that thou maist it gete,
Of birch, of yvy, crabbe, and wild olyve
Lete yeve hem nowe and nowe for channge of mete;
With channged water ofte. Eke fressh as blyve
As thai be take unhurt, with IIII or V
Of thrusshes tamed, putte hem in this mewe,
To doo disport among thees gestes newe.

Seed of myrtle, birch, ivy, crab, and wild olive is good for a change. Put in with those newly caught four or five tame thrushes.

83.

Women know how to set hens. The black are best, the white are worst, yellow are good. Lees of wine make them barren.

What woman cannot sette an hen on broode
And bryng her briddes forth? the crafte is lite.
But ashes smoke and dust is for hem goode.
Eke best are hennes blake, and werst are white,
And good are yolgh: but yf thaire appetite
With draff of wyne be fedde anoon bareyne
Thei beth: for thi therfrom thou hem refreyne.

84.

Two cruses of half-boiled barley is one day's food for a hen at large. Place an odd number of eggs under a hen when the moon is between ten and fifteen days.

Wol thou thai often hatche and eyron grete
Thai legge? Half boiled barly thou hem bringe,
Twey cruses[1] in oon day oon hennes mete
That gothe atte large, and odde[2] eyron in springe
Of echates[3] under thynne hen sittynge
To putte, as whenne the moone is daies dene[4]
Of age is good, and til she be fiftene.

85.

To cure the pip, slip off a pellet from the tongue with your nail, and cast ashes on the wound, and put garlic, alum, and oil in the mouth.

And other while an hen wol have the pippe,
A white pellet that wol the tonge enrounde,
And softely of wol with thi nailes slippe
Anoon, and askes after on the wounde
Thou kest, and clense it, ley on garlic grounde,
Ground alom eke with oile put in her mouthes.

. . . . . .

86.

Staphis agria, or stavesacre, will heal the tongue. Remove a horny substance from the eye with a needle or pin.

As staphisagre medled in thaire mete
Wol hele her tonnge, another maladie
Wol ryse of soure lupyne, if thai it ete,
As cornes that wol under growe her eye,
That but thou lete hem oute, the sight wol die.
All esely thou maist undo the skynne
With prikyng of a nelde or a pynne.

[1] ciati. [2] imparia. [3] lune. [4] x.

87.

Take woman's mylke and juce of portulake,
And therwith thou maist hele her eghen sore,
Or hony, myxt with salt armonyake
And comyn evenly, is goode therfore.
And yf thyne hen be lousy, there is more,
Eke luys with staphisagre and comyn
Igrounde in wyne and juce of soure lupyn.

Other remedies for sore eyes. Destroy lice with staveacre and cummin ground in wine and juice of lupin.

88.

The pokok men may rere up esily
Yf bestes wilde or theves hem ne greve.
Her briddes wol thai fede up besily
In feldes forth, and up thai wol atte eve
Into a tree lest thai by nyght myscheve.
But warre the fox, as while thai sitte on brode
To sette in an Ilande were ful goode.

The peacock easily reared. Beware of the fox at the time of brooding.

89.

And for a cok beth hennes v ynowe;
The Cok his eyron and his briddes hateth,
Until the crest upon thaire hedes growe,
And first in Feverer of love he prateth.
And benes bake alite his love abateth
Right nere adell, yf that he ete hem warme,
For thei wol rather his courage enarme.

The peacock hates his eggs and chicks until their crest be grown.

90.

The cok confesseth emynent cupide
When he his gemmy tail begynneth splay
About himself so faire on every side,
That never foul was in so fresh array.
A shuddering, a flusshing, and affray
He maketh thenne, and turneth him aboute
All golde begoon his tail and wynges stoute.

He confesses love when he displays his tail and wings.

91.

If her eggs are placed under another hen, the peahen will lay three times a year. Set a hen on nine eggs, four of her own and five of the peahen.

The pohen eke excused, yf men sette
Another henne her eyron forth to brynge,
Wol legge in oon yere thries dewe as dette,
V atte the frist and IIII at efte legginge,
And after III or II; but for bredynge
To set an hen on eyron IX is goode,
IV of her kynde, and V of other bloode.

92.

Do this on the first of the month. On the tenth take away the four and substitute four others, and be careful to turn them.

The first day of the moone is this to doo,
The x^th^ day the IIII away betake,
And other IIII enscore her place into.
To tourne hem ofte also good hede thou take,
For she may not the turnyng undertake.
Yet take for that a stronge hen and a grete:
A litel hen on fewer must be sette.

93.

They hatch on the thirtieth day. Columella says a hen may feed twenty-five chicks.

The XXX day goth al[1] out of the shelle,
And oon norice[2] may XXV lede.
So say not I, but so saith Columelle;—
XV I sey suffice oon henne to fede.
And first for hem spring wynes white or rede,
On barly seede, or puls decoct and colde
To yeve hem frist is good and holsum holde.

94.

In addition to other food give them locusts without the feet for six months.

And after hacked leek or tender cheses
Lete fede hem with, but whey thou holde hem fro;
Ek pluck awey the feet and yeve hem breses;[3]
And monethes VI it is to fede hem so;
And after geve him barly to and to
Right as the list, but XXX dayes olde
Thai with thaire norce into the felde betolde.[4]

[1] pulli. [2] gallina. [3] locustas. [4] mandentur.

95.

She[1] nowe behinde, and nowe she goth before,
And clocketh hem, but when she fynt a corne,
She chicheth hem and loith it hem before,
Hem ledyng home atte nyght lest thai be lorne.
Eke hele hem of the pippe as is beforne
Of hennes taught; but when thaire crestes springe
As seke are thay as children in tothinge.

The care of the hen for her chicks, which, when their crests spring, are as sick as children at teething.

96.

Fesanntes up to bringe is thus to doo:
Take noon but of oon yere; for, infecunde
Are olde; and frist in marche uppon thai goo
Her vyves; but the males not abounde
In coitu, though thai be faat and rounde;
A cok for hennes tweyne, and every hen
Wol ones sitte on eyron twies ten.

To bring up pheasants. Have two hens to each cock. The hen will sit on twenty eggs.

97.

A commune henne may weel uppon xv
Of hem be sette, and of her owen a fewe.
And channge hem as before atte daies dene.
At xxx daies ende oute wol thai shewe.
Frist fede them daies thries v arewe
With barly coct and colde, and wyne besprong,
And after bresed whete and breses longe.

A common hen will sit upon fifteen pheasant's eggs. They hatch in thirty days. Feed them fifteen days on boiled barley sprinkled with wine; afterwards with bruised wheat and locusts.

98.

Annt eyron yeve hem eke, and kepe hem fro
The water for the pippe, and if it have hem,
With garlic stamped weel and tar therto
Her bekes froted ofte and sadde wol save hem,
Her tonnges eke right as an hen to shave hem,
And right as hennes heel her maladie
Is goode; to fatte hem eke is husbondrie.

Give them also ants' eggs. To rub their beaks with garlic and tar will cure the pip.

[1] gallina.

99.

A strike of wheat or half a strike of barley mixed with oil and made into cakes will fatten them in thirty days.

With wheet a strike, or other half a strike
Of barly mele enoyled,[1] offed lite,[2]
In dayes thries ten thowe make hem alyke
And fatte ynough, so that her appetite
Be served weel, and that noon offes white
Englayme uppon the rootes of her tonnge;
For that and hunger sleth thees briddes young.

100.

The goose is fed on grass and water. Take one male for three females. You may deplume them twice a year.

The goos with grasse and water up is brought,
To plant and tree an opon foo[3] is she,
Her bityng harmeth corne, her donnge[4] is nought;
Take for oon male of hem females thre,
And twies a yere deplumed may thai be;
In sprynging tyme and harvest tyme; eke make
For hem, yf other water wonte,[5] a lake.[6]

101.

Other food for geese. The skew-bald and brown are not so productive as the white, coming of the wild kind. Set them from the first of March till the longest day.

For wonte[7] of grasse on trefoil[8] lette hem bite,
On gouldes[9] wilde,[10] or letuce,[11] grekysh hay.[12]
The skewed[13] goos, the brune goose as the white
Is not fecounde. And why? For as thai say
Oute of the kynde of wilde gees cam thay.
Fro Marche kalendes gees to sette on broode
Until the day be lengest is ful goode.

102.

The goose's eggs may be placed under a hen, but that they may not be injured, put nettles with them.

An hen upon thaire eyron maist thou sette,
As of the pocok saide is all before,
But lest this hennes eyron sholde ought lette,
Ley netteles under with, and evermore
The laughter last: unto the modres lore
Is to be lefte that thai may with her children
Laugh and be gladde, as with hem were here eldron.

[1] oleo sparsi. [2] in offulas redacti. [3] inimica. [4] stercus.
[5] lack. [6] lacunam. [7] defectu. [8] trifolium. [9] intubis.
[10] agrestibus. [11] lactuca. [12] græco fœno. [13] varii coloris.

103.

Ten daies first lete hem be fedde withynne;
And thenne, is Wedir faire, doo forth hem lede;
But netles war, from hem thi briddes twynne,
And fatte hem xxx daies olde for nede;
Atte moneths foure alle fatte thou maist hem fede,
Flour thries a day; and lette hem not goo large;
In warme and derk to close hem I the charge.

Feed them indoors for ten days; then take them out in fine weather, and fatten them at thirty days. Enclose them in a warm and dark place.

104.

Eke mylde is goode also in every mete,
All manner puls is goode, the fitche outetake.
Swyne heres brustels kepe hem lest thay ete.
Two parties branne with flour thees Grekes take
With water hoote comyxt; also thai make
Her water thries freshed every day;
And ones in the nyght. This is no nay.

Millet is good for them, and all kind of pulse except vetches.

105.

Yf thou desirest that thi gees be tender;
When thai in age be passed xxx daies,
Of figges grounde and water tempered slender
Gobbettes[1] yeve thi gees. [2]But these arayes
To speke of here for nought but myrth and play is;
Yit as myne auctor spak, so wolde I speke,
Seth I translate, and loth am fro him breke.

Ground figs and water make geese fat. So says the Author, and the Translator is loth to break from him.

106.

This doon, is other thinges for to doo:
Two stewes must thou make in erthe or stoone,
Not fer from home, and bryng water therto
Of sprynge, or rayne for water foul[3] that oon
To swymme, also thi bestes to togoon;
That other wete in hides,[4] yerdes drie,
Lupyne, and other thing for husbondrie.

Make two stews; one for water-fowl, the other to wet hides in, and dry twigs, lupins, etc.

[1] offulas. [2] Autor loqr. [3] avibus aquaticis. [4] madefacias coria.

107.

In housing hay, chaff, timber, and reeds be careful against fire.

For hay, for chaf, for tymber, and for redes
Make housyng as the list; it is noo charge;[1]
In drie and wyndię places there noo drede is
Of brennyng hem, and for that alle atte large
Away from home ordeyn hem I the charge.
A fyre is foul affray in thinges drie.
And now for dounge an other husbondrie:

108.

The dunghill to be out of sight and smell. Asses' dung is best for gardens, next sheep's, then goat's and neat's.

The myddyng, sette it wete as it may rote,
And saver nought, eke sette it oute of sight;
The seed of thorn in it wol dede and dote.
Thyne asses dounge is rathest for to dight
A garden with; sheep dounge is next of myght;
And after goot and neet; eke hors and mares;
But dounge of swyne the werst of all thees ware is.

109.

Ashes are good, and no dung of fowls is so hot as doves except the quest. Dung for corn not to be more than a year old. Sea-slime good to mix with other manure.

Askes beth goode, and so hoot is noo dounge
Of foule as of the douve, a quysht outake,
And oon yere old is nought for herbes yonge
And goode for corne; but elder thou forsake,
Fresh dounge is best thi medes with to make;
Seeslyme al fresshe ywesh, and slyme of floode
With other dounge ymedled is right goode.

110.

Place your garden so that it may have the benefit of the dunghill, and the water may run off from it. If you have not a well, dig a tank or a stew.

Thi garden and thyne orchard, sette hem nygh.
The garden from thi mydding softe enclyne,
That juce of that amonge thyne herbes sigh;
And water in sum stede away declyne.
Eke yf the lacke a welle, a winche enmyne;
And if thou may not soo, lette make a stewe
With rayne water thyne herbes to renewe.

[1] non refert.

111.

And yf that help it not, lete delve it depe
Three foote or foure, in wyse of pastynynge,
That it may in itself his moister kepe.
And every lande, although a man may brynge
With help of dongyng hit into tylling,
Yit is the chalk or claylonde for to eschew,
And from the rede also thi garth remewe.

Or dig the ground three or four feet deep. Every soil may be brought by manure into tillage; yet chalk and clay and red land is to be avoided.

112.

Eke yf thi garth be drie in his nature,
Depart it, and in wynter southward delve
Hit uppe, and in the somer doo this cure,
Upon Septemtrion to overwhelve
Hit upsodowne; thus wol hit save it selve.
The garth eke closed is in dyvers wyse;
Dyversed wittes dyversely devyse.

If your garden be dry, divide it, and in winter dig the south side; in summer the north.

113.

Hym liketh best a daubed wough, and he
Wol have a wall of clay and stoon, and stones
Withouten clay an other wol it be;
A nother with a diche aboute ygone is;
War that, for that the werst of everichon is.
That diche wol drie up thi humours of thi londe,
Yit yf thi garth be myree, a diche may stonde.

Different tastes with respect to garden walls. The worst is to let a ditch surround your garden, unless it be miry ground.

114.

Oon planteth thorns, an other soueth seedes;
But bremble seede[1] and seed of houndes thorn[2]
Doo weel, and geder that as ripe as nede is;
With fitches flour, ywatered well beforn,
Lete medled all this seede, lest it be lorn.
In ropes kepe this confect meddissyng
Until the time of veer or of spryngyng.

Sow bramble seed and hounds-thorn for a good fence. Keep the seed mixed with flour of vetches within ropes until spring.

[1] rubi, v mori, v bati. [2] rubum caninum.

115.

Then plough a double furrow a foot deep, and inclose these ropes under light mould.

Thenne eree a double forowe III foote a sonder,
As ferre as thou wolt close, and deep a foote;
This ropes with thi seedes cloos hem under
Light moolde aboute, and on anoon lete wrote.
This doon, at twenty daies end a roote[1]
In erthe, a branch in aier wol reche aboute.
Now rayle hem, and of closure is noo doute.

116.

Let spring dig if autumn is to sow, and *vice versâ*, so that each side may have the benefit of heat and cold.

Lete veer goo delve, yf hervest shall go sowe;
If veer shall sowe it, hervest must go delve;
So shall her eitheres werke been overblowe
With colde or hoote under the signes twelve.
Mark oute thi tables,[2] ichon by hem selve,
Sixe foote in brede and XII in length is best
To clense and make on evry side honest.

117.

In wet places make the margins two feet high, in dry places only one.

In places wete or moist make evry brynke
Two foote in heght, a foote in places drie,
And yf thyne humour from thyne herbes synke,
Dispose it soo that it from places hie
Descende, and doo[3] thi lande to fructifie;
And thens to an other part procede,
And so to every parte, as it is nede.

118.

Sow and graft as they do in your neighbourhood.

To sowe and graffe although I sette a tyme,
Yit graffe and sowe as men doo the beside;
In places cold thyne hervest sede betyme[4]
Is best to haast; in springyng seede to abyde.
In places hoote eke chaunge her either tyde.
To graffe and sowe in growing of the moone,
And kytte and mowe in wanyng is to doon.

[1] radix. [2] beddes. [3] faciat. [4] celeriter.

119.

For blichenyng[1] and myst[2] take chaf[3] and raf,[4]
And ley it on thi lande in dyverse stedes,
And when thou seest the myst, lete brenne up chaf
And raf, eke as for hail[5] a russet wede is
To kest upon the querne,[6] also it nede is
All bloody axes[7] bere and heven[8] threte
In hardy wyse as hym to slayne or bete.

Against mildew and mist burn chaff and rubbish. Against hail, throw a russet garment upon the windmill, and threaten heaven with bloody axes.

120.

Girde eke thi garth aboute in vynes white;
Or, sprad the wynges oute, sette up an oule.
Whi laugh ye so? this crafte is not so lite.
Or take thi spades, rake, knyf, and shovelle
And evry tole in beres grees defoule,
Eke sum have stamped oile with grees of beres
To greece her vyne-knyf for dyveres deres.

Other remedies are white vines round the garden, or an owl with outstretched wings, or to smear the tools with bear's grease.

121.

But that a man must doo full prively,
That never a warkman wite, and this is goode
For frost, and myst, and wormes sekirly.
But as I trust in Crist that shedde his bloode
For us, whos tristeth this Y holde him wode.
Myne auctor eke, (whoo list in him travaille!)
Seith this prophaned thyng may nought availe.

But no one must see it done. For the Author says most ridiculously if it be published it is of no avail.

122.

Oil dregges fresshe for gnattes and for snayles
Or chambre soote is goode to kest aboute;
For auntes eke an oules herte availe is
To putte upon her bedde, and alle the route
A trayne of chalk or askes holdeth oute.
Thi seed with juce of rucul[9] or syngrene[10]
To wete[11] up sleth the rucul, as men wene.

Oil dregs or soot good against gnats or snails; an owl's heart on their beds against ants, or chalk and ashes; juice of rocket or horse-leek against canker-worms.

[1] rubigine. [2] nebula. [3] paleas. [4] purgamenta. [5] grandini. [6] molam.
[7] cruentas secures. [8] cœlum. [9] erucæ. [10] sempervivæ. [11] madefacere.

123.

Divers other remedies against the rucul, or canker-worm.

Eke figtree askes oon on rucul throweth,
An other hangeth uppe or soweth squylle,[1]
The thridde among his wortes chitches soweth,
For wondres fele and, he saith, as to kille
The rucul and fele other thinges ille,
A menstruous ungerd wommon, unshod
Untressed eke, about to goone is goode.

124.

River-crabs crucified are also a remedy; also to anoint the pruning-knife with oil in which cantharides have been left to rot.

Floode crabbes here and ther to crucifie,
He seth, is goode; but bestes forto sle
That dooth thi vynes harm let sle the flie,
The cantharide in roses that we se;
Put hem in oile, and roton when thai be,
The vyne if thou shalt kytte enointe aforn
The knyf with this; for this craft is noo scorn.

125.

For gnats oil-dregs and ox-galls are good, or oil and ground ivy, or water-leeches burnt. That worms devour not thy colewort dry the seeds in the skin of tortoise, or grow mint with it.

Oile dregges and oxe galle is goode for gnattes,
So that the beddes therwith thou enoynte,
Eke oile and yvy grounde is goode as that is,
Or waterleehes brende an other point is.
Thi wortes that the wermes not disyoint,[2]
The seedes in a tortous[3] skynne[4] thou drie,
Or mynte among thi cool thou multiplie.

126.

Bruised vetches, rape, or henbane, mixed with vinegar, will kill the cabbage-worm. The stink of the scales of headless garlic burnt destroys caterpillars.

Eke fitches brese, of hem thair radissh[5] springeth,
Or rape,[6] or thus take juce of henbane
With soure aysell, and hem togeder mengeth,
And kest hem on your cool in every pane;
Ereither wol be worterwormes[7] bane.
Brenne her and ther the heedles garlic sceles,
The stynke of it for hookes[8] help and hele is.

[1] squillam. [2] se destruant. [3] testudinis. [4] corio. [5] radix. [6] rapa. [7] publicû olerum (*sic*: but quære "pulices.") [8] contra campas.

127.

Thi vyne knyf with garlic forto frote
884 Is goode, eke cley[1] and brymstone[2] yf me brenne
About a vyne, anoon this hockes rote,
Or hocke in water yf men seethe, and thenne
About in all thi garden do it renne,
888 It sleth the hocke, but bring it from withoute
Myne auctor saith, fro sum garth nygh aboute.

Other remedies against the hock or caterpillar.

128.

Upon the whetstoon sle the cantaride,
The cantaride a vyne yf she enfeste;[3]
892 And Democrite[4] he saith that mys betyde
Shal neither seede nor tree by worme, or beest,
Of flood, or see, x crabbes[5] yf thou kest
With water in an erthen potte ywrie[6]
896 Ten daies throut[7] until the vapur die.

Slay the cantharide on the whetstone, and Democritus recommends to cast ten crabs with water in an earthern pot ten days out of doors.

129.

And herbe or tree to moiste in the licour
Iche VIIIth day is suffisaunt, saith he,
To heel and helpe hem forth in fruite and flour,
900 But holde aye on it holpon til thou see.
Pysmires yit yf thou wol make hem flee
Kest origane ystamped with brymstoone
Uppon thaire hoole, and oute thay flee anoone.

Or moisten a herb or tree with it every eight days. To kill pismires cast origane and brimstone upon their holes,

130.

904 The same is doon with cokille shelles brente;
Eke brymstoon and galbane oute chaseth gnattes,[8]
Also the fleen[9] wol sleyn on thi pavyment
Oildregges ofte yspronge, eke myse and rattes
908 This dregges mo may sle than dooth thi cattes,
So it be thicke and poured in a ponne,[10]
The mous by nyghtertale on it wol fonne.

or burnt cockle-shells; brimstone and galbanum destroys gnats; oildregs poured into a pan will slay more rats and mice than a cat.

[1] bitumen. [2] sulphur. [3] noceat. [4] ille auctor. [5] cancros.
[6] cooperta. [7] subdivo. [8] culices. [9] pulices. [10] patina.

131.

Black hellebore, mixed with bread, cheese, or flour, will kill them, as will wild cucumber and colocynth bruised; other remedies against fleas.

Elebur blak with fatte, or brede, or chese,
Or floure comyxt and offred hem wol slen;
Cocumber[1] wilde and coloquynt[2] doo brese;
The juce will sle the myse as dyvers men
Have saide; A yit an other crafte sleth fleen:
Watered cucumber seede, or comyn grounde,[3]
Lupyne, or psilotre[4] kest on the grounde.[5]

132.

Apuleius recommends to steep all grains in ox-gall before sowing them, against field-mice, or to stop their holes with affadill.

And for the feld mous, Apuleius[6]
Saith goode is alle his greyne in oxes galle
A man to stepe, and sowe hem thenne: eke thus
With affadille upclose her hooles alle;
Thai gnawe it oute, but dede downe shal thai falle,
Right forth withall thai shall it not eschewe,
The moldewarp the Grekes thus pursue:

133.

The Greeks perforate a nut and stuff it with brimstone, chaff, and cedria, and light it, to destroy moles.

Thai thurle a nutte, and stuffe it so withinne
With brymstoon, chaf, and cedria, thees three.
Then alle her hooles ther the molde is ynne
Save oon, the moste, uppe stopped must thai be.
The fyred nuttes smolder shall thorowe fle
This grettest hoole, as wol the wynde him serve,
And either shall thees talpes voide or sterve.

134.

Oak-ashes will give mice the scab. Burnt hartshorn, or goats-claws, or lilies, or galbanum, will drive away adders and evil spirits (noxious vapours) by the smoke.

Yit for the mous, kest oken askes soo
Aboute her hooles in it that thai may trede;
The scabbe anoon will ryse and hem fordoo.
For eddres, spirites, monstres, thyng of drede,
To make a smoke and stynke is goode in dede.
Brent hertshorne, or gootes cleen, or rootes
Of lilie brente, or galbane all this bote is.

[1] cucumer. [2] coloquintida. [3] tritum. [4] psilotrum. [5] terram. [6] ille auctor.

135.

The Greek saith eke that yf a cloude arise
Of breses[1] smert, men muste in hous hem hide,
And thai wol voide. A crafte eke thai devyse
That, breses seyn, men fle to hous and byde
In hous, and as thai come, awaie thai glide.
Cocumber wilde, or sour lupyne in drestes
Of oil comyxt wol dryve away thees beestes.[2]

Greeks say that locusts will leave if men hide themselves from them. Wild cucumber, or lupines mixed with oil-dregs, will drive them away.

136.

And other sayne that scorpions and thees,[3]
Yf sume of hem be brent, wol voide ichone;
And other als seyne, hockes for to lese,[4]
Kest figtree aske on hem, and, but thai goone,
Oil dregges and oxe uren iliche anoon
Let mynge and boile, and when it coled is,
Byrayne aboute uppon thi wortes this.

Or burn some of them. To kill caterpillars, cast on them the ashes of a fig-tree, or pour on the cabbages oil-dregs and ox-urine.

137.

The greek saith that a best prasocoride
The garth anoieth muche, and remedie
Is this for that, a rammes panch athide[5]
Alle lightly soo there as thai multiplie,
When Phebus chare hath goon aboute it twye,[6]
There shalt thou fynde hem heped, sle hem there
A twie or thrie, and thai ne shall the dere.

A ram's paunch covered up where they multiply will kill prasocorides (moths) in two days.

138.

Yit efte for hail a crocodilles hide,
A see calf skynne, or of a lyonesse
Bere uppe aboute thi lande on evry side,
And whenne thou dredest hail or hevynesse
Lete honge it in thi yates or ingress[7]
Of hous or towne, or thus in thi right hande
A myres tortous bere aboute thi lande.

The hide of a crocodile, or sea-calf, or lioness, hung on the entrance of a house or town, will prevent hail, or a marsh-tortoise carried about the fields in the right hand.

[1] locustas. [2] locustas. [3] locustas. [4] perdere.
[5] operire. [6] post duos dies. [7] ingressus.

139.

But it must be borne upright, and you must go back as you came, and leave it on its back. This keeps off mischief of clouds.

But bere it bolt upright, and tourne agayne
Right as thou went, and ley her downe upright,
And undersette her crooked bakke, that mayne[1]
Her lacke agayne to tourne herself downeright.
This (is) a crafte of witte, a thynge of myght,
For all the lande that thou haste goon aboute
For cloudes wick is save, this is noo doute.

140.

Others take the shape of a dark cloud in a mirror, and thus either remove the harm, or double another's terror.

When other seen derk cloudes over hove,
The shappe of it thai take in a myrroure,
And outher thus from hem his harme thai shove,
Or to sum other doubleth his terroure;
Amydde a vyne another thyng socoure,
For every mychief is a see calf hide
Aboute a quyk calf gridde on evry side.

141.

Steep seeds in ground cucumber roots. The skull of an ass or mare will cause fertility.

Thi seedes with cocumber rootes grounde
Lete stepe, and save of evry mysse thai are;
An other thinge that lightly may be founde,
The calvair of an horsed[2] asse or mare,
Sette that uppe: that wol make all fecundare
On every side as ferre as it may se.
Thus saithe the booke, and thus I trowe it be.

De area.

142.

Let the threshing-floor be near, for convenience of carriage, and against theft. Let the floor be of flint, or hewn stone, or water mixed with earth and trodden flat.

Thi thresshing floor be not ferre of awaie,
For beryng and for stelinge, as the gise is
Of servauntes; of flynt eke, if thou may,
This floor thou make, or hewen stoones besides,
Or water myxt with grounde, the thridde avis is,
Upshette aboute, and trampled with catell
Maade playne and dried after, wol do well.

[1] vigour. [2] non virginis.

143.

And nygh it make a place high, plain, and pure,
When nede is therto cave upon thi corne,
This wol availle, and make it longe endure.
Then after to thi berne it may be borne.
Eke, lest thi greyne in shoures sholde be lorne,
Right hoolsum is to have an hous besyde,
That for a shoure in that it myght abide.

Make also a place to cave (?) the corn upon before it is taken to the barn. It is also good to have a house for the grain in case of showers.

144.

But make it high, on everie half perflable,
Ferre fro thi garth, thyne orchard, and thi vynes;
For, right as chaf and dounge is profitable
On rootes, and upbryngeth brede and wynes;
Right so the same upon the top a pynne is,
The floures and the buddes wol thai drie,
And bore hem through, and make hem so to die.

This house to be open on every side, and far from the garden and vineyard: for straw and chaff, which would benefit the roots, would damage the flowers and buds.

De apium castris.

145.

The Bee-yerd be not ferre, but faire asyde
Gladsum, secrete, and hoote, alle from the wynde,
Square, and so bigge into hit that no thef stride.
Thaire floures in coloures or her kynde
In bussches, treen, and herbes thai may finde;
Herbe origane, and tyme, and violette,
Eke affadille and savery therby sette.

Place for the bee-yard. Plants proper for bees.

146.

And curiage, and gladiol the longe,
Eke amarac, and other fresshed floures,
Rosmary, yvy, rose, and lily spronge
In bussches, eke the blossom greet socond is.
Of evry tree thaire swetnesse in the floure is,
Ook fold and birche, eke terebynite, and lynde
But Utree,[1] that is nought, leve it behynde.

Other plants, shrubs, and trees which may be allowed to grow near the hive. The yew to be avoided.

[1] *Vel* taxus.

147.

Tyme, tymbra, peleton are best; next is origane; then rosemary and savory. Plant trees on the north side, and bushes all about;

Of tyme is wex and hony maade swetest,
Of tymbra, peleton; and origon
Is next to that; and after hem is best
Of rosmary, and savery, thenne is noone
So goode as thai, but rustik swete echoon.
Septemtrion sette treen upon his syde,
And bushes aboute under the walle devyde.

148.

and herbs. Let there be a brook, or a well, and place boughs so that the bees may drink, but remove all bad smells, and adders and fowls.

And after bushes herbes in the playne,
A sobre brook amyde, or elles a welle
With pulles[1] faire, and bowes or it trayne
So langh and rare on hem that bees may dwelle
And drynke ynough, but ferre awaie propelle
Horrend odoure of kychen, bath, gutters;
Eddres to sleyn and foules oute to fere is.

149.

The bee-keeper must be clean. Dung and burnt crabs be kept away. Places which make an echo are bad, and so is spurge.

The keper pure and chaste and with hem ofte,
His hyves havyng redy forto take
His swarmes yonge, and sette hem faire on lofte.
The smell of dounge and crabbes brende aslake
Away from hem; and places that wol make
A voice ayein as ofte as men wol calle
Is nought for hem, eke nought is titunalle.[2]

150.

Lampwort and other bitter herbs injurious. Make the hives of thin rind, canes, or willow twigs. Have no potter's hives.

This thapsia,[3] this wermoote, and elebre,
Cucumber wild, and every bitter kynde
Of herbe is nought for hem, as hem is lever
Lete make her hyves all of thynner rynde,
It is not angry hoot, nor colde unkynde.
Take ferules eke, or saly twygges take
Ye may, but potters hyves thou forsake.

[1] lacunas. [2] spurge. [3] lampwort.

151.

Or make an hyve of bordes like a stonde,[1]
For that is goode, or hewe an holowe tree,
And therof make hem hyves into stonde,
But III foote high on stulpes must ther be
A floor for hem, wel whited thou it se,
So made that lysardes may not ascende,
Ne wicked worme this catell forto offende.

Boards in the shape of a cup, or a hollow tree, good for hives. Place them on a stand three feet high. Let the floor be whitened to keep off lizards and worms.

152.

Thyne hyves heer thou sette a lite asonder,
Her entre tourne it faire upon the southe;
No larger than a bee may trede in under.
Wickettes two or three thou make hem couthe,
That yf a wicked worme oon holes mouthe
Besiege or stoppe, an other open be,
And from the wicked worme thus save thi bee.

Turn the entrance to the south, no larger than a bee. Let there be two or three openings.

153.

To bey thi been beholde hem riche and fulle,
Or preve hem by thaire murmure magnitude,
Or se the swarme and carie hem yf thou wolle
By myght upon thi bak, hem softe enclude,
And towarde nyght hir yates thou reclude.
But bey hem not too ferre oute from thyne eire,
For chaunge of ayer may putte hem in dispaire.

Directions for buying bees.

154.

Thre daies thenne it is to taken hede
Yf alle the swarme oute atte the yates goo,
And if thai doo, then it is forto drede
Lest thai purpoos in haast to ben agoo.
Yit wene men that they wol not do soo
Aboute her hoole an heifer[2] calves[3] thoste[4]
So that thou cleme,[5] and this litel coste.

If all the swarm go out in three days, there is reason to fear they mean to be off. Prevent this by daubing the dung of a heifer.

[1] cupe. [2] vitali. [3] progeniti. [4] stercus. [5] allinas.

De balneis.

155.

The husbandman will think of his bath for health and pleasure. Let it look toward the south and south-west.

It is not strange, if water wol suffice,
An husbonde on his baathe to be bethought;
For therof may plesaunce and helthe aryse.
Towarde the sonne on drie it must be wrought,
Southwest and southe the sonnes[1] ynne be brought,
That alle the day it may be warme and light;
The celles suspensures thus thou dight:

156.

Floor to be two feet thick, inclining gently towards the furnace, on pillars made of tiles two feet and a half high.

First floore it II foote thicke, enclyninge softe
The forneis warde, so that the flamme upbende
The celles forto chere and chaufe olofte;
And piles[2] maade of tiles must ascende
Two foote and half, and two foote wide attende
Hem forto sette, and upon hem thou sprede
A marble floor, or tyle it yit for nede.

157.

An apparatus to supply the bath with hot and cold water, called *Miliarium*, made of lead, with a brass bottom. The cells to be fifteen feet long and ten broad.

A myliair of lede, the bothom brasse
Anende the feetes sette it so withoute
The fourneis, and the fire ther undre passe.
A conduite cold into it bringe aboute,
Make pipes water warme inwarde to spoute,
The celles square oblonge as x in brede,
As for xv in length is oute to sprede.

158.

Greater heat in a narrow place. Seats to be formed *ad libitum*. Light from the north in summer, from the south in winter. Let the wash from the bath go through the garden.

For hete in streite is gretter then in large;
But seetes make yfourmed as the list.
The somer celles lightes thou enlarge
Upon the north, but winter celles wist[3]
From north; the southern light is best, as wist[4]
Is well; and all the wesshe oute of thi bathes
The garden thorowe to go therto no scathe is.

[1] lightes. [2] pilæ. [3] quatis. [4] *Vel* satum (sic.)

159.

The chambres in the bathes may be wrought
As cisterne is, but wol be well the stronger,
And other waies fele, yf thai besought,
As clene as it, but thai be yit unstronger.
Thi winter hous to sette eke studie lenger
Uppon thi bathe; for lo the groundes made,
And hete of it thi winter house wol glade.

Chambers in the bath to be stronger than the cisterns. There are other ways, but weaker. Place a winter room over the bath for the comfort of the heat.

De malthis calidariis vel frigidariis.

160.

Convenient it is to knowe, of bathes
While speche is made, what malthes hoote and colde
Are able, ther as chynyng clifte or scathe is
To make it hoole, and water well to holde.
For bathes hoote ammonyake is tolde
Right goode with brymstone resolute ypitte[1]
Aboute in evry chynyng, clifte, or slitte.

Remedies against chinks in baths. A cement, or malthe, of ammoniac with dissolved brimstone good for hot baths.

161.

Or thus: hardde pitche, and wex, take even weight,
And herdde[2] with pix liquide herto eche[3]
An halvendele, and grounden shelles dight
With flour of lyme: al thees comixt wol deche[4]
Every defaute, and all the woundes leche.
While wex, hardde, pitch, remysse ammonyake,
Thees three comixt therfore is goode to take.

Or equal quantities of hard pitch and wax, with tow and liquid pitch one-half, and ground shells mixed with flour of lime. Or wax, tow, and powdered ammoniac.

162.

Or thus: ammonyak remysse, and figges
With pix liquide and herdde[5] sore ygrounde
To cleme upon right sufflsianntly bigg is;
Or floure of lyme in oil, yf thou confounde
And helde it in, upheleth it by grounde,[6]
But kepe it drie awhile, eke boles[7] bloode
With oil and floure of lyme admyxt is goode.

Or daub the chink with powdered ammoniac, figs, liquid pitch, and tow ground up together. Or bullock's blood, oil, and flour of lime.

[1] positum. [2] stuppam. [3] appone. [4] claudere.
[5] stupa. [6] fundum. [7] tauri.

163.

Or oyster shells ground with hard pitch and figs. For a cold cement, ox-blood with pitch and cinders, or sifted ashes and melted tallow.

Eke oister shelles drie and alle to grounde[1]
With harde pitche and with fygges doth the same;
But malthes colde in other crafte thou founde,
Ox bloode with pitche and synder alle to frame,
And make it like a salve, and overflame[2]
Iche hoole and chene, or siften askes clene
And sevum molton helde in evry chene.

De pistrino.

164.

If you have abundance of water, make it turn your mill and spare your horse and ox for the plough.

And yf thi water come in abundance,
As moche as may thi bathes overflowe,
Thi bakhous therwith all thou maist avance,
A water mylle herwith thou maist avowe
To make, in sparing beestes that shal plowe,
As hors and ox, and so with litel care
Shal water cornes grynde and beestes spare.

165.

Tools to be got ready: great and little plough, the mattock, axe, pickaxe, saw long and short, knives, scythes, and sickles.

Make redie nowe iche nedeful instrument,
Lete se the litel plough, the large also,
The rigges forto enhance, and uppe to hent
Ther as the lande is moist, yit toles moo
The mattok, twyble, picoys, forth to goo,
The sawes longe and shortte, eke knyves crooked
For vyne and bough with sithes, sicles hocked,

166.

Sharp-backed scythes, little crooked knives, hooks, bills, rakes, crooks, adzes, pitchforks, and double-bitted axes.

And croked sithes kene upon the bake,
Showe forth also the cannibe[3] knyves lite
In plantes yonge a branch awaie to take,
The hokes that the fern awaie shall bite,
And billes all thees brerers up to smyte,
Set rakes, crookes, adses, and bycornes,
And double bited axes for thees thornes.

[1] tuse. [2] alline. [3] curvos.

167.

Here must be markyng yrons for oure beestes,
And toles forto geldde, and clype, and shere;
Eke lether cotes us to were honest is,
So thair cuculle aboute oure brolles[1] were,[2]
And bootes, oocurs, myttens, mot we were:[3]
For husbondes and hunters all this goode is;
For thai mot walk in breres and in woodes.

Irons to mark, geld, clip, and shear animals; also leathern coats with hoods to wear over the head, boots, leggings, and mittens. These last are good for husbandmen, who must walk in briars and woods.

Palladii primus liber explicit: assit ut unus
Alpha vocatus et ω det mihi Christus homo!

[1] capita. [2] *Vel* est. [3] uti.

JANYVEER.

BOOK THE SECOND.

Ablaqueacion of vines.

1.

Ablaqueacion, or excodication, *i.e.* removing the earth from the root of vines, to be done in January.

Atte Jannerie ablaqueacion
The vynes axe in places temporate;
Italiens excodicacion
Hit calle: and it is hem to desolate
Of erthe, and all from every roote abate.
Thus, delves made, on hem shall weete and heete,
Thai two dooth all engendre grapes greete.

2.

Now is time to clean the meadows, and call off the beasts from them. Fat and dry land to be ploughed up. Slacken the yoke at the end of the furrow to cool the oxen's neck. Do not let them draw by the horn.

In places glade and lene, in places drie,
The medes clensed tyme is now to make,
And beestes from nowe forth from hem to crie;
The feeldes faste and drie, on hem to wake
And breke[1] hem up, but at the wendyng[2] slake
The yoke, thyne oxen neckes forto cole:
But drawing by the horne is noo goode scole.

3.

Let there be no *balk*, *i.e.*, land left unploughed. Break the clods, and thrust a rod frequently through the furrows transversely, to see if the ploughman has done his work.

The balke, that thai calle, unered lande[3]
And overheled, beholde that there be noon;
The cloddes malled be with mannes hande.
To wite if alle be well, thyself allone
Transversall thourgh the forowes everichone
Lette[4] rush a rodde,[5] and make hem ofte this went,
And thi ploughmen wol not be negligent.

[1] proscindere. [2] versuram. [3] inaratam terram. [4] ponas. [5] perticam.

4.

The fenny feeld it is not forto plowe,
Lest all the yere it after be to tough
To plowe, eke, as men saith, noo thing wol growe
Thre yere on landes drier then ynough
And rayne betwet, so turne upp with the plough.
Demene it in the meene of moist and drie,
Eke sowe it so, and it wol multiplie.

Fenny land not to be ploughed up. Nothing will grow for three years on land over dry ploughed up after rain. It should be neither too moist nor too dry.

5.

Atte Janus mones Idus temporate
Grounde is to sowe in barly galatike,
VIII busshels seede an acre lande is atte;
But first se that the winter have be like.[1]
Now chiches, sowe in fatte and moist londe, like[2]
Thre strike an acre seede, yit ofte it faileth;
So weete or heete in flouring it availeth.

At the Ides (*middle*) of January, sow Galatian barley in a temperate soil, eight bushels to an acre, after a mild winter. Chichlings in rich moist land require three strikes to an acre.

6.

And when this Janus XXV daies
Is olde, is best thi fitches forto sowe
Ffor seede but not for fodder, for noo nay is
That[3] snailes rather lette hem forto growe.
VII bushels on an acre londe bestowe
When all the dewe is off, in houres warme,
And hele[4] hem lest the nyghtes weete hem harme.

About the 25th of January sow vetches for seed, but not for fodder, seven bushels to an acre, in warm weather, when the dew is off the ground. Cover them at night.

7.

Ffeyngrek to have of seede is to be sowe
In Ytalie ene in this Janes ende;
VII strike upon an acre is to throwe,
But plowed thynne and smale is to commende.
Ffor fyngers foure if lower thou descende
Upp may it not: for thi with plowes light
Sum eree and sowe and rake it with forth right.

Fenegreek to be sown at the end of January, seven strikes to an acre, ploughed in thin and shallow, for if you descend more than four fingers it will not grow.

[1] placida, clemens. [2] lætantur. [3] quin. [4] opi.

8.

Sow also tares at the end of January, five strikes to an acre.

Also the tares in this Janes ende
Is goode to sowe in places drie and leene,
v strike upon an acre is to spende.

Weed corn on sunny days without frost. But some say this will uncover and hurt the root.

This mone, in sunny daies and serene
Withouten frost, thi cornes, weede hem clene.
Yit wol this werk the roote, as sum men telle,
Unhele,[1] or kirve, and colde it after quelle.

9.

When the wheat has four leaves, and barley five, and when pulse and beans are four fingers high, weed them. The lupin requires no weeding.

When wheet is quaterfoile and barly v,
And puls and beenes fingers foure ascende
Aboven erthe, it is to weede hem blyve;
The lupinge is noo wedyng on to spende,
Withouten helpe himself it will defende
From wedes alle; it rootes hath but oon,
And yf me wede it slayne it is anoon.

10.

Beans to be weeded twice. One will yield a strike. Corn not to be weeded when dry, for fear of mildew, but barley may.

Thi bene yweeded twyes wol availle,
To wol it fructifie in grettest wyse;
Of oon to have a strike is goode travaille;
Myne auctor saithe therto the wol arise.
To wede eke cornes drie is noo goode gyse,
Ffor blichenyng after that werk is drede,
Yit barly drie it harmeth not to wede.

11.

Three methods of *pastining*, or preparing land for vines: digging, ploughing, and ditching.

This moone is goode to make in pastynyng,
That may be maade dyvers in wyses thre,
In delvyng alle, or plowing, or dichinge.
Thi lande unclene alle dolven uppe mot be,
Of rootes, fern, and weed, to make it free;
But yf thi lande be leys clene of weedes,
With diche or forowe to pastyne it noo drede is.

[1] detegere.

12.

The forowe is best ille humour oute to wyse
Elonge eke as the liketh best thi lande,
Two foote and half the brede is to devyse.
Then yf the vyne is dight with mannes hond,
Two foote and half ther must unereed stond;
But otherwyse if vynes shall be plowed,
Ffeet v or vi of leye is hem alowed.

Two feet and a half to be left between the furrows, if the land is dug by the hand; but if it be ploughed, five or six feet is to be left fallow.

13.

Two foote and half in brede and three in lenght,
Yf diches plese, hem make, and three feet deep;
With mannes hande to till, or oxen strenght;
Thyne enterspace in oon maner thou kepe,
But lest the scions[1] crokedly up creep
And harmed be whenne yrons depe synke,
Pare all the diches even plaine the brinke.

Ditches to be two feet and a half broad, and three feet long, and three feet deep. The space between to be uniform, and the edges of the ditches to be cut even.

14.

The first is goode, two foote and half, or three
Feet depe to turne up all; but diligent
Thou be lest balkes underclosed be.
The wardeyne with his rodde experient
May be therof thourgh putting every went.
Eke heep uppe everie roote of ferne and brieres,
And everie weed, as used everi where is.

Dig to the depth of two feet and a half or three feet, and leave no balks. The foreman should ascertain this by thrusting his rod through every *went*, *i.e.*, space dug.

15.

The tables for thi vynes maist thou make
Herafter as the list, or as thi lande
Wol axe. An acre all hool may thou take,
Or half an acre well therin may stande,
Eke of the thridde part it may be fonde,
The fourthe part an acre wol be square:
In londes mesuring yit craftes are.

The beds for the vines according to pleasure or the nature of the ground, to be an acre, or half, or third, or fourth part. Artifices in land-measuring.

[1] sarmenta.

16.

For a bed of an acre square, measure 180ft. long, as many wide.

Of pastyniug thus mesure every side
A table square an acre lande to holde,
Ffeet scores nyne[1] in lenght as feele in wyde,
Let square it so, theroute of may be tolde
Of squares x feet wyde, who so beholde,
CCC square[2] of x and twyes twelve.[3]
The nomber wol thyne acre[4] overwhelve.

17.

Whatever the space to be prepared for vines, measure out ten squares of eighteen for an acre.

This nomber what the liketh to pastyne
Dissensseth alle decempedes[5] xviii.
Renomber hem, but tymes twyos nyde[6] (nyne)
Decempedes, therof ther shall be seen
CCC iiii & iii and xvii^ne^ (*v. occxxiv*).
As was before; iche acre oute thou trace
In this maner of large or litel space.

18.

The proper soil for vineyards is the mean between soft and hard, rich and poor, high and low, wet and dry; neither bitter nor salt.

Thi vynes soile be not to molsh nor hardde,
But sumdel molsh, neither to fatte ne leene,[7]
But so wel fatte; nor pitche it not downwarde,
Nor splatte it not to flatte, but sumwhat lene;[8]
Of drie and weete also kepe it the meene.
In bitter soil or salt sette I noo vynes;
In soiles so corrupt full sory wyne is.

19.

The climate also should be rather warm than cold, and rather dry than wet. Vines fear winds. New soil and woodland is best for vines, the worst place is an old vineyard.

The meane is best thyne aier to qualifie,
Yit sumdel warme is better thenne to cold.
Thenne ayer all weete is better sumdel drie,
But vynes fer[9] of wynde and stormes cold,
And erthe and namely woode lande best is hold
For pastyning, and werst is holden there
As sumtyme olde vyneyerdes were.

[1] centum octoginta. [2] decempede. [3] xxiv. [4] jugerum. [5] squares of x foote. [6] xviii. [7] exile. [8] inclined. [9] formidant.

20.

If necessity require an old vineyard to be taken into use again, the things that must be attended to.

Yit if thou tille it of necessitee,
Lette exercise and eree it ofte aforne,
That rootes olde and drosse out clensed be
And every filthe[1] oute of this feeld be torne,
So vynes yonge in it ther shall be borne.
Ragstoon and thinges hardde in colde and hete
Relaxed bereth vyneyerdes grete.

21.

Loose clay, stony land, and loose stones mixed with mould, underground flint, and places into which hills descend, and valleys filled with water, are all good for vines.

Molsh cley and stany lande, and stering stones
Commyxt with moold and-flynt that erthe is under,
Of cold and moist conservatour flyntstone is,
The rootes and the sonne it hath asonder,[2]
Eke places unto whome from hilles sonder[3]
The landes sweete, and valeys that the flood
Upfilleth,—all that is for vynes good.

22.

Clayey land, not clay itself, is advantageous; but never dig where there are wretched groves, or sour, wet, or salt land. Thirsty, dry land is also in disrepute; undunged sleek is known to make vines lean; in red earth they do not thrive at first.

Lande argillose, and not cley by it selve,
Ys commodiouse; and there as wrecthed greves
Soure[4] lande to weete or salt is, never delve,
And alwey thristy[5] drie land in repreve is.
Undounged sleek wol make hem lene, as preve is;
In reed erthe eke a vyne is harde to take,
Though afterwarde sumdele therin is wake.

23.

Red earth very troublesome to work, being too hard in heat and too soft in wet. Good land is somewhat loose, but in the mean. In cold places let it look to the south, in warm places let it incline towards the north.

But this lande is full wicked to be wrought,
To hardde in heete, and over softe in weete.
Now spek of goode lande, levyng that is nought,
As welny rare attemporanntly mete,[6]
The mydday sonne eke stande it with to mete
In places cold, and to septemtrioun
In places hoote enclyne it sumwhat doune.

[1] squalor. [2] ab invicem. [3] separantur. [4] amara. [5] siticulosus. [6] mediocris.

24.

In cool (tepid) places let it incline towards the east; but if the east or south wind annoy, turn them (the vineyards) south-west or west. Remove all obstructions of roots, and tread it down to get rid of weeds. Vineland in the plain to be two-and-a-half feet deep, on a declivity three feet, on a hill four.

In places cole[1] enclyne it on the est,
Yf Est or southeryn wyndes nought enaye,
And yf thai doo, turne hem southwest or west
Impedimentes rootes oute thou trie,
And tradde it so that wicked herbes die.
Two foote and half the feeld, and three the cleves,
And iiii an hille pastyned deepe to cheve is.

25.

Rank land is best two-and-a-half feet deep, a valley two feet. Vines prove best if set immediately after the spade or plough, ere they become firm or tough. So says the Author from his own experience.

Rong[2] lande a foote and half, a valey twey
Ffeet deep is atte the best, experte ynough
Am I that vynes preveth best if thai
Be sette anoon after the spade or plough,
Ar then the lande be wexen sadde or tough.
That this is goode whether me plowe or delve
Myne auctour saithe he sawe the preef himselve.

26.

Plant lettuces in January or December, to be transplanted in February; or sow in February and transplant in April. They may be planted all through the year in fertile land, rank, and dunged, but they must be cut even, and manured with liquid.

Letuce is to be sette in Janyveer,
Or December, the plantes to revieve
In ffeverer; either in ffeveryere
Let sowe and in Aprill her plantes meve.
Eke sowe hem alle the yere weel wol thai preve
In ronke and dounged fertil lande, but sette
Hem not but even kytte and dounge ywette

27.

When set, uncover them and manure. They prefer moist, nd longh (?) land. Weeds must be wrung up by the hand, and those that stand thinnest are largest. Or slit the leaves when grown, and press them down with a shell or a clod.

Sette if thai be, lette bare hem, yeve hem dounge;
Moist dounged londe and longh hem liketh best.
The weedes with an hande must uppe be wronge,
And thai that thynneest standeth beth gladdest.
Or slitte her leves growen so wel prest,
And with a shelle or a hutte[3] adoune hem presse,[4]
And thai wol glade and fate under this presse.[5]

[1] tepidis. [2] uliginosa. [3] gleba. [4] preme. [5] prelo.

28.

Thai wol be white, as men suppose, yf ye
Amonge hem gravel springe, and in the foiles
Gravel be bounde, eke suche her seede may be
Thai wexeth hardde, and sumtyme on the soile is
It longe, or on the tyme; eke every foile is
Maade tender twyes if it be transplaunted.
Now commeth a crafte is worthi to been haunted.

It is thought that sprinkling gravel amongst them makes them white. They are sometimes hard through the fault of the soil or the season, but every leaf is made tender if transplanted.

29.

In letuce herbes umbigoon wol growe
But ye must take a bay[1] of gootes dounge,[2]
And with a nal as craftely as ye mowe
So make it holowe, and putte in seedes yonge
Basilicon, radish, and rucul stronge,
Letuce and cresse. and dounged weel this bay[3]
Do sette it in as fyne lande as ye may.

Herbs will grow amongst lettuces, if you hollow a bay of goat's dung with a nail, and put in it young seed: basilicon, radish, rocket, lettuce, and cress, and set this bay well dunged in fine land.

30.

The raphe is roote, alle other in letuce
Upgoothe and all on high thai wol devyde
Yche herbe in his coloure, odour, and juce.
Here is an heelful thing, a wonder wride;
Yit odir men in other crafte abyde,
As for the same a letuce uppe thai plucke
And from his roote ich foile awaie thai cracke.

Rape is a root, the rest grow with the lettuce, and when out of the ground they will each preserve its own colour, odour, and juice. This is useful and wide-spread, yet others devise differently: they pluck a lettuce and tear away every leaf from the root,

31.

And pricke her place, and sette in hem thees sedes,
The raphe outake, and lappe it faire in dounge
And sette it uppe, thai goo iche as her seede is,
And letuce in thair leves umbiyonge.[4]
O blessed God! that nature is so stronge.
Letuce of lac derivyed is perchaunce;
Ffor mylk it hath or yeveth abundaunce.

and prick their place and set these seeds in it, except rape, and lap it in dung, and plant it; each grows according to its seed, and surrounds the lettuce. Wonderful is the power of nature. Lettuce is derived from *lac*, milk.

[1] bacham. [2] caprini stercoris. [3] bacham. [4] ambint.

32.

Cresses may be sown anywhere, at any time, in any air; they require no dunging, they like moisture, but can do without it. Treat rocket, colewort, garlic, and ulpic in the same way.

Now cresses sowe, and sette hem when the list;
Of places, aier, or houer have thai noo doubte.
Dounging thai noon desire, and though hem list
Humor, thai axe it not, eke greet and stoute
With letuce up thai goo, and all the route
Of rucul, serve it like this, cool also,
Garlic, ulpike, eke sowe hem nowe both two.

33.

Service trees to be sown in January, February, or March, in cold soil; in October or November in a warm, so that their apples may soon ripen in the nursery.

In Jane, in ffeveryere, and Marche in cold
Erthe, October and November in hoote
Erthe, is settyng of serves noble holde,
So that thair apples riped with foothoote[1]
The semynaire be sette in, eke I wote
Myself expert of apples trees have growe
Right faire, and brought uppe fruytes right ynowe.

34.

It is found good to plant them in November in hot land, at the end of March in cold, in February in temperate soil. Hilly, moist land, almost cold, is their choice. Where they grow thick the land must be rich.

Atte November to plannte hem in hoote londe
In thende of March in colde in Janyver is
And ffeveryer in temper lande fonde
Right goode, and hilly moist lande colde welner is
Thaire love, and fattest lande her grettest chere is.
Eke ther as serves feirest and thickest
Uppe springe is certayne preef of lande fattest.

35.

The large plants require a deeper trench. They grow more for being shaken by winds. If red hairy worms feed within the pith, take some of them and burn them without hurting the tree, and they will either die or not stay.

The planntes bigge[2] a depper delf desireth,
And larger space, as wynde may hem to shake,
That greteth hem eke as the caas requireth;
Yf hery wormes reede her festes make
Inwith the pith, unhurt the tree thou take
Oute sum of hem, and brenne hem nygh beside,
And either wol thai die or nought abyde.

[1] e vestgio. [2] robusti.

36.

Yf thai nyl bere, a wegge[1] oute of a bronde
Ywrought dryve in the roote, or sumdel froo
Let diche and fild with asshen let it stonde,
Eke graffe hem in Aprill is goode to doo
In white thorne, in hemself, in quynce also,
In trunke or rynde[2]: her fruyte eke yf thou wolle
Have kepte, a party hardde thou must hem pulle.

If it will not bear, drive a wedge wrought out of a fire-brand into the root, or ditch it, or heap up ashes round it. Graft them in April on white-thorn, or on themselves, or quince, on the trunk or rind. If you wish them to keep gather them partly hard.

37.

And whan thai softe hem, putte in puttes lite
Of erthe, and cley her mouthes, sette hem depe
Two foote and under sonne as thai delite,
And tradde hem fast above, and lete hem slepe;
Eke slitte and sonne-dried thou maist hem kepe,
And when the list in water hoote revire[3]
Thai wol, and taste even as the list desire.

When soft put them in small earthen pots, clay them over, and tread them down in a hole two foot deep. You may keep them slit and sun-dried, and their flavour will revive in hot water.

38.

Sum have hem greene ypuld, and stoon and alle
Thai honge hem uppe in place opake[4] and drie
And wyne mellite, as saide is, save hem shall;
Aysell and wyne eke oute of hem men trie,
As oute of peres but if bookes lie.
Thyne almannd tree thou sette in Jannyver;
And yet as goode for that is Feveryere.

Some pull them green and hang them, stones and all, in a dark, dry place. They are said to make a sweet wine, also they produce vinegar and wine, unless books lie. Almonds may be set in January or February, but

39.

In October and November thai sette
Hem there as lande is drie as well the seedes
As scions from the grettest roote ysette;
But for this tree the semynair in dede is
To delve a foote and half depe wherin need is
An handfull depe, two feet to sette asonder;
Eke south and sonne is goode to sette hem under.

in dry places in October or November set the seed or scion from the largest root. Dig the seed-bed a-foot-and-a-half deep, set them a handbreadth deep, two feet asunder, towards the south.

[1] cuneum. [2] cortice. [3] revirere. [4] derk.

40.

They love chalky, hard, dry, soil, and a hot climate; as they ripen quickly, transplant a few young plants; leave as many as your land will hold. Set only large new ones, and remove them in February.

The feldes calculose, eke harde and drie
Thai love, and hattest ayer, forthi[1] thai ripe
And floureth with; eke of the yonge oute trie
Oon here, oon there, and elles where hem dripe.
Let stand as feel as may thi lande begripe.
Sette eke noon almondes but greet and newe,
And hem is best in Feveryere remewe.

41.

Steep them in mead a day before setting, but water it well. Some keep them three nights in liquid manure; the fourth night they are steeped in mead and set in the seed-bed.

A day afore her setting, hem to stepe
In meeth is goode, but watter it wel for this.
Muche hony might hem harme, and sum hem kepe
Three nyght in molton[2] dounge, and doo not mys;
The IIII[th] nyght in meeth is steped is;
Thenne is it in the semynair ysowe
Or sette in goode tyme up shall it growe.

42.

Water them every month three times in drought; dig, and weed, and dung them. Plant them twenty, or at least fifteen feet apart. In November cut off the dry, superfluous boughs.

And watter hem every moon in droughtes thrie,
Eke delve hem alle aboute and weede hem clene,
Dounge eke thi semynair to multiplie
Hem in, but plante hem twenty foote atween,
Or at the leest asonder hem xv[ne].
In November kytte of the bowes drie,
Superfluent, and thicke, eke utter trie.

43.

If beasts bite them they will be bitter. Dig not round them when they flower. They are fair when fertile, and when they are barren drive a pin of a firebrand through the root, or insert a flint-stone so that the bark may grow over it.

Yf beestes bite hem, bitter wol thai be,
But mylge[3] hem not in tymes when thai floure,
For therof wol anoone the blossom fle,
Her fertile age is faire, and for the honoure
The bareyne with a firebronde pyn socoure,
Dryve in the bored roote, or a flynte stoon
So doo that him the bark may overgoone.

[1] quia. [2] liquide. [3] circumfode.

44.

In places colde if frottes be to doute,
As Marcial saith, this is remedie.
Or flouring tyme her rootes bare aboute
To make, and stoones white accompanye
With gravell to this roote forto plie;
And whenne that burgyne oute wel like to preve,
Thees stones and gravel me may remeve.

If there be fear of frosts, Martial says, make their roots bare before flowering, and apply white stones and gravel to the root, and when they blossom remove the stones or gravel.

45.

He saith also thaire tender fruite to make
Or then thai floure, alle bare hem atte the roote,
Warme wates certayne daies on hem slake,
And bitter yf thai be, this be thaire boote:—
Three fringers from the stocke the lande remote
Lete make a cave, evel humor oute to sweete,
And this wol oute of bitter make hem swete.

He also says, to make them tender, some days before they flower, let them all have warm water poured on their roots; and if they are bitter, make a cave three fingers from the stock, for the evil humours to sweat into.

46.

Or bored through the stocke, an honyed pynne
Dryve in, or daube her roote in swyne dounge.
But whenne thair fruyte is ripe, as take it ynne,
And that is when thaire huske is drie and clonge;
Withouten care a man may kepe hem longe;
And yf thaire huske of easily nyl goone,
Ley hem in chaf, and it wol of anoone.

Or drive a wedge smeared with honey through the stock, or daub the root with swine's dung. Take in the fruit when ripe, *i.e.*, when the husk is dry and sere. If the husk will not come off easily, lay them in chaff.

47.

Weshe hem in see licoure whenne thai be clene,
Or water salt, and white thai longe endure.
In December, or Janyveer demeane,
Or Feveryere in cold londe, a mesure
To graffe an almont tree whoos graffes pure
Oute of the toppe, eke graffe in stocke or rynde
In peches, and eke in thaire propere kynde.

Washing them in sea-water or brine makes them white. Graft almonds in December or January, but in cold lands in February, whose grafts take from the top. Graft them in the stock or rind on peaches or other almonds.

48.

Greeks say we may make almonds grow inscribed with letters by taking out the kernel and writing on it, and then closing it in clay and swine's dung, and replacing it. The walnut is planted in January.

This Greekes sayne: almonndes me may make
With lettres growe, her shelles to disclose
And write upon the cornel hool outetake
Or this or that, and faire aboute it close
In cley and swynes dounge and so repose,
And in thaire fruyte thi lettres wol be clere.
The nutte is to be sette in Janyveer.

49.

They love hills, and cold stony land with moisture; they live also in temperate places. Sow them in the same manner as almonds. In November dry them in the sun. In January and February it saves time to steep them one day before they are put in the ground.

Moist, hilly, cold, and stony lande thai love,
With humoure eke thai lyve in tempre stedes.
Eke sette hem so and thenne, as saide above
Of the almonndes is, in November eke nede is
To sunne and drie hem sumdel, also spede is
In Janyver and fferyer to steepe
Hem oon day into lande or then thei crepe.

50.

Sow them transversely, one side in the ground to look towards the north. Put a stone on a tile under the root, that it may not go down a mere stalk, but may spread. They are more luxuriant transplanted. Transplant in hot lands at three, in cold at two, years old,

Sette hem transverse oon syde intort the grounde,
But sette thaire tree, to looke on the Aquylone;
A stoon or tyle under the roote enrounde,
That it goo nought douneright a stalke alloone
But sprede aboute; eke gladder be ther noone
Then thai transplanted ofte, at three yere old
In hoote lande hem transplaunte, at tweyne in cold.

51.

Leaving the root uncut, though in other trees we cut it; we must set one plant in ox-dung and ashes therewith to separate the heat of the dung, lest it burn. The ashes will fret the tender plant, or Immensity will bring forth abundance from small conceit.

Thaire roote uncutte, yf other treen me cutte,
Oon plante in oon oxe dounge is doune to sette,
And askes with, the heete a part to putte
Of dounge indoon, lest it adure[1] and lette.
This aske in tender rynde a tree wol frette,
As men beleve, or fruytes densitee
Fforth brynge on smal conceyve[2] immensitee.[3]

[1] brenne. [2] creature. [3] supple Dei.

52.

In delves[1] deepe is sette thair appetite
Thaire magnitude a larger lande requireth.
Eke to noo tree thaire dropping is delite,
Her brere thorne and her owne kynde it ireth[2]
And in thaire age a mylging[3] thay desireth,
Lest thai therein all hoore yberded goo;
And chanel eke thaire tunicke unto the too.

They like deep holes on account of their size, and their dropping is favourable to no tree, even of their own kind. They require milging (digging) in their old age, lest they become gray-bearded. Make a groove in them from top to bottom.

53.

The bonfice of sonne and wynde wol harde[4]
Hem sure ynough that were in way to dede.
And yf thi nutte is knotty or to harde,
To slitte his rynde evel humours oute to lede,
The rootes forto croppe eke sum men rede.[5]
A stake of boxe do thorough this bored roote
An yren nayle or topton: here is boote.

Sun and wind will harden those that were near dying. If the nut be too hard, slit its rind. Some advise to cut the root, and drive a stake of box through it, or an iron or copper nail.

54.

And yf thou wilt have nuttes tarentyne,
Ffor antes[6] lappe a kyrnel save in wolle,
And in thi semynary it recline;
Eke chaunge a beryng nuttree if thou wolle
Into that kynde, as wete it atte the fulle
Thrie every moone a yere in lie[7] allone,
And tarentyne his nuttes wex ichone.

For Tarentine nuts wrap a kernel in wool against ants, and lay it into the seed-bed. To change a bearing tree into that kind, wet it thrice every month for a whole year in lye.

55.

And when thaire huske agooth hem thai beth ripe,
Eke so thai must be sette, and hem to kepe
Lete close hem in a barel or a pipe
Made of thaire owen tree, or lette hem slepe
In greet, or chaf, or oynyons yf thai wepe,
Ffor thai thaire bittre soure wol mortifie,
Or kepe hem in her owen leves drie.

When the husks drop, they are ripe: then set them. Keep them in a barrel made of their own wood, or in sand, or chaff, or onions, if they be sour; or in their own leaves.

[1] scrobibus. [2] irritat. [3] gremii fossuram. [4] durescere.
[5] consulunt. [6] formicas. [7] lixivo.

56.

Martial says that nuts placed green without shells in honey remain green, and a drink made of this liquor will cure the veins and gums. Graft them on plums, or on themselves, or on crabs in January.

And Marcial saithe nuttes shelled greene,
As greene, in hony putte, aier endure,
And drinke of this licoure wol cure up clene
The pipes and the gomes, as is sure
This Marcial expert upon this cure.
In plomtree, in thayme self, in crabbe tree
At Janyveer ygraffed may thai be.

57.

Now graft tubers on quinces, and sow peach-stones; now almonds and plums will take a peach-graft. It may be grafted also on damsons, and on the vine called *præcoqua*. Now graft cherries, wild peaches, and plums before they produce gum.

Nowe tuberes in quynces may me graffe,
Nowe sette in peches boon,[1] now almounde tree
And plomtrees wol conceyve a peches graffe,[2]
In damacene eke graffed may it be,
In præcoqua the vyne eke men it se.
Nowe chiritree to graffe, and peches wilde
And plumtree eree in gumme it goo with childe.

58.

Columella says this is the time to mark lambs and other beasts, to make sauces of rape, and to keep the *echinus*, or urchin-fish, and lard and bacon in just confection.

And nowe is tyme, as telleth Columelle,
The lambes, and the beestes more and lesse
To marke, and rapes make wele to smelle
In condyment is nowe the tyme expresse.
Echinus, erchon fisshe is, as I gesse;
This fisshe, and lardde, and flitches salt to kepe
In just confection now taketh kepe.

59.

In January oil of myrtle-berries is made in this manner: take an ounce of leaves, a pound of oil, and shake an ounce of berries in half a pint of old wine, and make it all boil at once. The wine prevents the leaves from burning away before boiling.

In Janus oil confecte of myrtes bay is
In this maner: an unce of foiles take,
A pounde of oyle, and x unce of this bay is,
In half a sexter aged wyne do shake,
And alle this thing to boile atte ones make.
This wyne is in this werk lest foiles drie
This boyling wolde eschewe, and brenne or frie.

[1] stoon. [2] surculum.

60.

Now myrtite wyne is made of myrtes bayes,
Three sexter baies broke in x of wyne
That aged is so steped xix dayes,
Wrynge oute the myrte and clense it, put therein
A scriple of foil and half a scriple of fyn
Saffron; to this x pounde of hony sweete
And best, this wol be pleasunt drynke and sete.

Myrtle wine is made by breaking three sextarii of berries in ten of old wine. After steeping nineteen days, strain off the myrtle, and put in a scruple of leaves, and half a scruple of fine saffron; add ten pounds of best honey.

61.

Of laures bay an oil is now confecte:
Take of the laures bayes feel and greete
And ripe, in sething water hem dejecte,
So lette hem sething longe tyme swete,
And after that the swymming oil doo gete
Into sum thing with fetheres faire and clene,
And in sum goodly vessel it demene.

To make laurel-oil: take several large, ripe, laurel-berries; throw them into boiling water; after long boiling, collect with a feather the oil swimming on the surface.

62.

Oil lentiscyne is made in this manere:
Lentiskes greynes feele and ripe aslepe
Thou bryng a day and nyght to heet yfere;
The honging in a basket lete hem wepe,
But in some honest thyng thaire teres kepe,
As oil lauryne is lentiscyne of take,
Whoos vigour hoot water must underlake.

Lentisk (mastick) oil is made by letting several ripe lentisks heat a day and a night; then let them hang and drip into a basket; catch the drippings, and mix with hot water.

63.

Now hennes legge upon[1] thaire wynter rest;
Nowe forto hatche are hennes obroode;[2]
Nowe make is to falle in season best
Ffor pale, or hegge, or house, or shippe in floode.
In olde eke of this moone is this most goode.
This moon and December wer oon in space
Of houres in myne auctours tyme and place.

Now hens lay and brood. Now is the best time to fall timber, at the end of the month. In the Author's time and place the hours of this month and December were equal.

[1] after. [2] incubare.

60.

The length of the shadow of the hours of the civil day on the Roman sun-dial in January.

The firste houre XXIX foote is fixe,
XIX[no] an other houre, and thries V
The thridde houre is, the fourthe is twies VI;
The fifte is X, the sixte is IX asblyve,
The VII as V, and VIII as IV[2] upthryve,[3]
As III is nyne, as II is ten,[4] the forme[5]
Thelleveth[6] is with,[7] let Pallady say for me.

[1] xii. [2] sc. xii. [3] crescere. [4] sc. xix. [5] sc. prima hora. [6] sc. xi. [7] xxix.

FFEBERYERE.

BOOK THE THIRD.

De pratis servandis et letamine saturandis.

ON MANURING MEADOWS AND PLOUGHING HILLS.

1.

Atte ffeveryere in places temporate
The medes forto kepe is to begynne,
And fede hem that be lene at poire astate
With dung, as Luna gynneth wex and wynne[1]
Upon the nyght; eke never gretter wynne[2]
Is to the graffe; and ley it on the syde
Above, all thourgh that juce of it may glyde.[3]

In temperate places the meadows are to be kept clear in February; and lean, poor land is to be manured at the rise of the moon.

De proscindendis collibus.

2.

Atte places warme, in daies lithe and drie,
Ys nowe the hilly landes uppe to eree,
Trymenstre seede in erthe is nowe to strie;[4]
Now wold also thi puls be sowen there
As thynne, and resolute, and fatte it were;
And namely drie. And whi? Lest luxurie
And humour excessyve go make it die.

Now is the time to plough up hilly land in warm places, and to sow all three-monthly seed and pulse in thin, loose, rich, dry soil.

3.

Thay may be sowe until the moone be
Atte daies XII; and forto make hem greet
And uppe anoon, comyxt thou must hem se
With drie dounge, and therin lette hem sweet
Till daies foure: as for an acre mete
A strike of hem. It shall be so sufficed.
And chiches sowe afore as I devysed.

Let them sweat in dry dung for four days, and sow a strike of them for an acre. Also sow chichlings as before directed.

[1] *Vel* lucrari. [2] *Vel* commoduum. [3] slyde. [4] *Vel* seminare.

De serendo canabo.

4.

At the end of the month sow hemp, six seeds in a square foot. Now land that is destined for *medica*, or clover (of which I will inform you at sowing time) is to be diligently ploughed, harrowed, and cleared of stones.

Last in this moone eke Hemp is to be sowe
In dounged, fatty, playne, weet, and depe lande;
A foote of square in sixe sedes may growe.
Nowe londe, that medycyne is fore yfond,
(Wherof atte sowyng hem to understande
I wol ye doo) ye must it plowe eftesones,
Eke diligently clodde[1] it, pyke oute stones.

5.

By the first of March, in soil prepared in garden-fashion, let the flowers spread in ten-foot beds to the length of fifty feet for convenience of weeding and watering. Dress it with dung, and keep it so until April.

In Marche kalendes in the soile ydight
In gardyn wyse is floures forth to sprede
X foote, and stretche hem L feet forth right,
Ffrom either syde all easely to weede,
And watter it as ofte as it is nede.
This land thus sette, old dounge is it[2] to serve
And greythed thus till Aprill to reserve.

De hervo, de curandis vitibus et arboribus.

6.

Tares sown in March might make beasts mad. Brine cast upon the roots will not injure vines, as some suppose, but make them fruitful.

Yit in this moone is forto sowe tares
And not in March, lest thay ennoie thi beestes,
Thi oxen might be woode therof as hares.
Now olde bryne atte tree and vyne a feest is,
Uppon thaire root as ofte as eree it kest is.
Sum men suppose bryne hem sholde appeire,
But it wol make her fruytes feel and feir.

7.

Cast olive-dregs amongst the trees, especially olives, in cold days, ere the heat arrives. Sow Galatian barley about the first of March in cold land, and it will grow white and firm.

Oyl dregges fresshe is profitable holde
To kest amonge, and rathest in olyve;
But this a man must doo in dayes colde,
Or thenne the fervour hoote on hem aryve.
Now barly Galatyk is forto thryve,
Abouten Marche kalendes yf me sowe
It in cold londe, white and sadde wol it growe.

[1] *Vel* occa. [2] *Vel* with.

8.

This moone eke alle the soiles pastynate
With vynes wolde be fillde, whoose goode nature
No lande nor ayer forsaketh, so thaire state
Be shaped in convenient measure.
The vyne in playne is sette that may endure
Eke myst and frost, but sette in hilles hie
That wyndes may endure and dayes drie.

Any soil properly prepared may in this month receive vines. Plant the vine in the plain that may endure mist and frost, on hills that which may endure winds and drought.

9.

Sette in the fertil feeld smale and fecounde,
The sadde and beryng vynes in the leme,[1]
The bowy[2] bigge in densed erthe abounde,
And sonnest ripe in cloudy cold demeene,
Or hardde graped stormes to sustene;
The moist in hoote, the tough in wyndy londe,
And vyne it drie, in rayne it may not stonde.

Set in rich soil the small and fruitful; in poor land the firm and bearing; the branching in dense earth; the early-ripening in cold, misty ground, or those which have hard pips. Plant the moist in hot land, the tough in windy, and in dry those which cannot stand the rain.

10.

And shortte to sai,—se the profession
Of every vyne, and wherin thai myscheve
As counter it by goode discrecion.
In lande plesaunt and serenous thai cheve,
In every kynde as easy is to preve.
The vynes' kyndes is not forto telle:
To nomber hem therfore y nyl not dwelle.

In short, note the character of every vine, and encounter its defects by good discretion. It is easy to prove that they prosper in an appropriate and serene soil. I will not attempt to number them.

11.

But knowe is this that grapes faire and greet
Pypyned hardde and drie it is to take
Unto the borde; and tender grapes weete
That savour best and sonnest wolde aslake
And dwyne awey, of hem thi wynes make.
The place chaungeth kynde of sum vynes.
Vyne Amynee hath ever fairest wynes.

Fair, large grapes, with hard, dry pips, are best for the table; but tender, succulent grapes of good flavour, and that soonest fade, are best to make wine. Vines are changed by site. Aminæan make best wine.

[1] sc. lande. [2] frondosus.

They are always good, but endure heat better than cold; and after being in fat land, they will not hold on in lean without dung. There are two kinds—greater and less. The lesser decays sooner, and has clean small knots, and little grains. When alone it requires a moderate soil; when trained to a tree it requires a rich one.

It despises wind and rain; but the greater sort is often killed in blossoming.

Apianian vines are also excellent. It is sufficient to mention these. A knowing man adopts things proved, and will see that the land to which vines are transplanted does not differ too much from the original soil.

So they will preserve their merits. And always change from poor land to rich, not the contrary. Take scions from the middle, not too high nor too low.

Take them at the fifth or sixth knot from the old wood; so they will not degenerate. Take them from a vine of decided fertility.

12.

Thai change not, but better hoote then colde
Thai may abyde; and after fatte, in leene,
But dounging helpe hem well, thai nyl uot holde.
Two kyndes are of hem, a more and meene.[1]
This meene efflloureth sone, and knotteth clene
And smale, eke greyneth lite; in meene londe
Allone, and with a tree fatte must it stonde.

13.

This smaller vyne eke hateth wynde and rayne;
The grettest of this Vynes Amynee
In blossomyng or flowryng ofte is slayne.
Vyne Apianes profitable be.
Suffice it forto name up thees three.
A witty man taketh preved thinge, and channge
He maketh, that lande from lande be not to strange.

14.

Suche erthe as thai come oute of sette hem too,
And in thaire merites thai wol abyde.
And vyne or tree to channge yf thou wolt doo,
From leene land to fatte thou must hem gide.
From fatte to leene is nought; lette that crafte slyde.
Scions to sette oute of the myddel trie,
And neither of to lowe nor of to hie.

15.

Take hem that gemmes[2] v or vi ascende
Ffro the elder brannche; and yf thou take hem soo,
Withouten channge hemself thai wol extende;
A vyne abundant eke thou take hem froo,
And take not hem that bere a grape or two,
But hem that kneeleth down for ubertee.
Oon bough may better thenne an other be.

[1] sc. minor. [2] sc. knottes.

16.

And this a signe is of fertilitee:
In places hardde yf fruytes multiplie,
Iche bough eke from roote uptrailed be
With fruyte; and thoo lete marke and signifie
Atte settyng tyme oute forto trie.
But see that ther be noon olde upon the ende,
Ffor it wol roote, and alle corrupte and shende.

It is a sign of fertility when fruit multiplies out of hard soil, and each bough rises from the root with fruit. Try to signify this by marks at the time of planting. But see that none of the old wood be left upon the cutting, for it would rot and injure all.

17.

The squorges[1] hie and graffes from the folde,
Though thai wol growe, and scions pampinary[2]
With fruyte, for fruytfull lete hem not be told,
Ffor thai from fruyte to barynesse wol vary
Whenne thai be sette, and then hem wol thou wary.
But writhe not the hede of the sarment,
Whenne it is sette, nor doo it noo turment.

Fold from thee (*i.e.* reject) the top shoots and grafts, and let not leafy scions be considered fruitful; for they will degenerate, and you will curse them. Do not bend the head of a cutting.

18.

And vynes wolde be sette in plesaunt dayes
And warme, unbrenned in sonnes or wynde
As cutte and sette; or if thai have delaies,
So save hem moist that thai may kepe her kynde.
While spryngyng tyme endureth have in mynde
In places colde and moist and fatte by wette
With shoures often vynes forto sette.

Plant vines on fine warm days, before they are burned by sun or wind. If there be delay in planting them keep them moist. During spring bear in mind to plant vines in cold, moist, rich places.

19.

The scions shall be sette a cubit longe;
And there as lande is fatte doo sette hem wide.
And thicke and leene lands so that amonge
Hem in thi pastinated lande devyde
Three foote of open lande on everie syde;
So shall thou in acre tabul mette
MMM and LX scions sette.

The scions to be a cubit in length. Where the soil is fat set them wide apart. In lean land leave an open space of three feet on every side. So in a bed which measures an acre you will plant 3060 scions.

[1] flagilla. [2] foliosi.

20.

If they be planted two-feet-and-a-half asunder, 5006—24 cuttings will fill up an acre. And whether you plough or dig your land, extend a line over and along the space reserved, and put a stick where each vine is to be.

Two foote and halfe if thai be sette atwynne,
V^{M} 6 save twyes twelve
Sarmentes wol fille up the lande withinne
An acre table tilled by it selve:
And wethir thou thi landes eree or delve,
Overward and afterlonge extende a lyne,
And putte a sticke in place of every vyne.

21.

Then lay down the scions and insert one in the place of every stick. If all the vines were of one sort, a bad year might destroy all. So take care to have four or five good vines, each sort by itself.

Then kest adoune the scions here and there,
And ympe in oon in every stickes place.
Oon maner vyne yf alle thi landes bere,
A wicked yere myght come and alle diffaee;
So dyvers vynes sette in divers space,
And vynes goode of IV or V have mynde,
And severed by hemself sette everie kynde.

22.

Graft old vines bed by bed. Thus the early ripe grapes may yield us their fruit easily in the bed, and thus there will be better wine and business, as experienced tillers know.

Thi vynes olde eke graffe hem table mele;[1]
It wol be faire, it wol be profitable,
Thus easely thaire fruytes may me dele
The rathest riping grapes in thaire table,
That other may come after as thai able;
Thus better wyne and besinesse
Shall be as knoweth tilliers expresse.

23.

This is the rule where land is dug or ploughed, and not where it is trenched. There let cuttings stand in the four corners, and if the land be lean, Columella says, gladden it with rich earth from elsewhere.

But this in pastynyng and ereed londe
Is rewle, and not there as be delves made.
Sarmentes there in angles IIII stonde,
And, as saith Columelle, it is to glade
Hem, if the londe be leene in every slade,
With fatte erthe, yf me fetche it elleswhere
Ffro places ferre or nygh, and brynge it there.

[1] tabillatim.

24.

Wyndraf[1] is goode also comixt with dounge,
But yf thou sette a plant or a slevyng,
Put in a litel moisty molde amonge,
But doo noo cley therto for anything.
Two gemmes[2] upon erthe eke forto springe
To leve(s) is goode; the sonner wol thai take.
Nowe cometh a crafte arbustes[3] forto make.

Grape-skins may be mixed with the dung. Put a little damp mould with a set or cutting, but no clay. It is good to leave two buds to sprout. Now we speak of groves.

De arbustis, vitibus et plantis arborum vitiferarum.

25.

That yf the list to have a grove of vynes,
Lete plantes in the seminarie sette,
But trie hem oute of it that gentil vine is.
And whenne thai roote and wexe a litel grete,
To stande aboute her tree lete hem be sette.
The semynair is even dolven londe
Two foote and half deepe planntes in to stande.

If you wish to have a grove of vines, set plants in a seed-bed, but choose them from a generous vine, and when they have grown a little, let them be planted out so as to stand near the tree which is to support them. The seed-bed is land dug evenly to the depth of 2½ feet.

26.

In that thi scions or thi planntes may
Be sette a little asonder, gemmes[4] three
Of scions under moolde is sette alway.
And yeres two whenne that thai rooted be,
Translate hem be thai scions, be thai tree.
The scabby braunches and the wexed rootes
To cut away for dyvers harmes boote is.

In it place your scions or plants with a small space between. The scions should have three buds under ground. Transplant scions and trees two years after striking root. It is beneficial against divers harms to cut away scabby branches and enlarged roots.

27.

Two scions in oon diche[5] it is to sette
That neither oth'r touch a sounder soo
Thaire growing forto encumb'r or to lette,
But faire up by the sydes lette hem goo.
The first yere fille it not, as saith Mago,[6]
But fille it full uppe at the yer(d)es end;
The depper wol the roote of hem descende.

In one trench place two scions so that they do not touch each other, but let them be close to the sides of the trench. Mago advises not to fill it up the first year, but fill it up at the year's end.

[1] vinacea. [2] knottes. [3] arbusta. [4] yointes. [5] *Sc.* delve. [6] ille auctor.

28.

But this is convenient in hot land, not in cold. There moisture will rot the plants: and there I advise to cover the roots. Choose for planting the ash, poplar and elm.

But this is in hoote lande convenient
And not in colde, thair moist wol purifie; (putrify)
The rootes hele hem there is myn entente.
And planntes forto sette also thou trie.
Asshe, popler, elm, thoo three wol multiplie,
As semeth me, in every maid lande.
Yit Columelle is so not understande.

29.

Their plants should be set in this month near your vine, and in corn-land an elm should be 40 feet away from another. But in poor land plant them 20 feet apart.

Her plantes in this moone it is to sette
Not ferre thy vyne, and in thi felde for corne
If thai be sette, a xl foote of mette
Iche elme away from oth'r must be borne.
So may thou sowe, and not thi seede be lorne,
In landes fatte; and yf thi lande be leene,
Thenne sette hem not but xx^{ti} foote atwene.

30.

A scion should be six feet from its tree, lest the tree grow and oppress it. It should be kept from beasts by a ditch. The vine must be fastened to a tree. A better plan is to make a skep (or basket) a foot wide, or somewhat less.

A scion sette it vi feet from the tree,
Lest that the tree encrece, and it oppresse,
From beestes kept with dichyng must it be;
The vyne eke to the tree with bondes dresse.
A bettir crafte is for this besinesse
Lette make a skeppe of twygge a foote in brede,
And sumdel lesse alle though it be, noo drede.

31.

Bring this near the tree to which vines are tied; make a hole in the bottom, that a scion may be trained through it; fasten this skep to the tree, and fill it with quick mould, and wrap the scion in it.

This bring unto the tree with vynes spredde,
And thorowe the bothom therof make a gappe,
That thorowe that gappe a scion may be ledde.
This (s)keppe unto the tree thou bynde and happe,
And fille it with quyk moolde, and therin wrappe
This scion in the skeppe a lite ywounde[1]
Or writhed in this litel skeppe grounde.

[1] *Vel* intortum.

32.

Within a yer weel rooted wol it be
In with this skeppe, under whoos bothom sholde
Hit be so kytte and borne unto the tree
Ther it shal growe, and set it faire in moolde,
The skeppe and all,—so wol it take and holde,
Withouten doute, as fele as er the list.
Doo serve hem thus, and in thaire growyng triste.

Within a year it will be rooted within the skep, from under which it should be cut and taken to the tree where it is to grow. Set skep and all in the ground, and doubtless it will take, and bear as many vines as you like.

De vineis provincialibus.

33.

Provyncial of is dyvers kynde of vynys:
The best is like a boshe ythied breefe.
Till it be stronge, susteigned first this vyne is,
And stronge allone it stonte in his bonechief.
Next it beth borne up vynes best of preef,
Upbounde, orbicular, and turnede rounde.
And last is it that streght lithe on the grounde.

Provincial vines are of divers kinds. The best is where the vine is like a bush with a short thigh. This vine is supported till it be strong, and when strong it stands alone. Next are vines tied up on canes and circular. Last are those that lie on the ground.

De putandis vineis communibus et humilibus.

34.

In landes temporate and sumdel cold
Good tyme is nowe the vynes kitte to be.
And there thai multiplie manyfold,
Thoo vynes that Septentrion dothe se
To kutte in springing tyme ains the;
That oth(e)r part that loketh on the sonne
To cutte in hervest newe is not begonne.

In temperate and cold lands it is now time to prune vines. But where there are several, cut in spring those that look towards the north; in autumn those that look southward.

35.

And strength allway the theigh in the kytting.
Two hardness in oon vyne is not to make.
The crooked, febul, fatte, and mys growing,
And eke the greyne branche away thou take.
The lower branche in goodly place awake.
Let suffre that a gemme or two extende,
The vynes to repaire or forto amende.

Always strengthen the thigh. Keep not two arms (*duramenta*) in one vine. Take out crooked, feeble, fat, misshapen, green branches. Allow the lower branch, growing in a good soil, to extend a bud or two to repair the vine.

36.

In mild places they may be high; on lean lands, or hot, steep, stormy places, low. In rich soils there is no need of more than two branches to each arm. It is profitable to judge a vine's strength, —what will make t stand or fall.

In easy places hier may thai traile,
In lene, or hoote, declyne, or stormy stedys
Lete hem be lowe; also this wol advaile.
In place fatte of iche an arm no nede is
Of branche moo than two. Also it spede is
To deme upon the bygnesse of the vyne,
As what wol make it stande, and what declyne.

37.

It is enough for the high and fruitful vine to spread into eight branches. Let nothing grow about its thigh, unless the vineyard require to be restored. If the stock be hollow, cut off the dead wood. Oil-dregs will heal the wound effectually.

The vyne hie and of fecunditee
In brannches VIII ynough is to dilate,
Aboute his thegh[1] lette noo thing growing be,
But yf it axe to be revocate,
And yf the stok be holgh or concavate,
Purge of the dede, oildregges on the wounde
With erthe ydoon wol hele it uppe by grounde.

38.

Take away the torn and hanging bark, and there will be fewer dregs in the wine. Take away the moss also, and if you have to cut the hard wood, let the wound lean downward obliquely and be round. Cut off dry, scabby, and old claws (roots).

And take awaie the torne and honging rynde,
The dregges wol the fewer be by grounde,
The mosse awaie doo that where ye fynde,
And in the harde if that thou make a wounde,
Adounewarde sumdel lenyng must it rounde,
The clawes drie and scabbed olde busely
Kytte all away, and kepe up that is wely.

39.

Vines four feet high may have four arms: a lean one may have one branch on each arm, a fat one two. But if you train them all on one side, they will die like a thing struck by lightning. Do away, therefore, with that feeble husbandry.

And if thi vynes footes IV ascende,
Thenne armes IV is goode forth forto streyne,
Yf it be lene in iche an arme extende,
A branche, if it be fatte, extend up tweyne.
But alle oute of oon syde if thou hem treyne,
As thing with leyt[2] forsmitten, wol thai die,
For thi doo way that feble husbondrie.

[1] *Vel* crus. [2] fulgure.

40.

Upon the harde, or on the toppe ne leve[1]
Thi scions. Whi? for that is to feconde.
The toppe with litel fruyt wol all for leve.[2]
Amyddes wol the best scions be founde.
A lite above his gemme eke make the wounde,
And turne it from the gemme in caas it wepe;
The turnyng may the teres under drepe.

Do not leave the scions on the hard wood or on the top; for that will furnish the top with little fruit, or cover all with leaves. Scions are best in the middle. Make the wound a little above the bud, and turn it away from the bud, that the tears may drip under it.

De putacione arbusti.

41.

The vyne ysette into the tree to growe,
His first matier at the thridde or secounde,
Gemme is to cutte, and everie yere alowe
It up to encrece, and wynes forto abounde,
Yf thou wolt have on bowes hem fecounde,
But fewer forto have and gretter wynes
Into thi trees toppe lede uppe thi vynes.

Prune the new wood at the first or second bud. But to have fewer but larger grapes, lead up the vine to the tree's top.

42.

In bigger bowes fele, and fainter fewe
Brannches doo traile, and cutte hem bei this reason:
To that the grapes were uppon by rewe
The forme yere, now cutte hem this season.
The rainal from the fressher bough to leson
Ys goode, and everie yere hem forto unbinde
Is comforte and refresshing to thaire kynde.

The branches that bore the former year ought to be cut the succeeding season. It refreshes the vines to unbind them every year.

43.

And make the tree that euerie bough extende
By oth'r forth as lyne leide be lyne.
An elm in fatte lande VIII feet may ascende,
In lene lande atte VII him declyne.
In dewy, clowdy lande thi tree for vyne
Kytte it that est and west his bowes ronne.
The vynes sides bete uppon the sonne.

Let not one bough be led in the line of another. An elm may be eight feet in rich land, seven in poor. In damp land let the branches of the tree for vines be trained east and west, and the sides of the vine be towards the sun.

[1] *Vel* dimittas. [2] *Vel* pampinare.

44.

Let not the vine grow too thick. If one tree fail rear up another. On hilly ground make them low; in plain and rank land they may be higher. Let there be no hard shreds.

To thicke uppon the tree doo not the vyne,
And yf oon faille, up reree an oth'r tree;
And make hem lough in cleves that declyne,
In plaine or ronke lande hier may thai be,
But bondes harde in vyne is not to se.
Do bondes softe and esy forto were
Theron, lest bondes harde it kerbe or tere.

De putacione provincialium vitium.

45.

To vines dight in provincial fashion, which stand up like a bush, leave four arms, and as many shoots as possible. Cut in the ordinary form those which are borne on canes in a circle. Leave two buds the first year on vines which lie straight (unsupported) on the ground.

A dight vyne in provinciale manere,
That like a bosshe upstonte, IIII armes make,
And brannches leve on hem as thai may bere.
The vyne orbiculer with canne or stake
Upborne, in commune fourme her cuttyng take.
The streght vyne on the grounde gemmes twoo
The frist yere leef, and aftør mo and moo.

De novellæ putacione.

46.

Columella would have a young vine after the first year formed to one wood; and not, according to others, cut down at the end of the second year, so that it either dies or becomes leafy. Better leave a bud or two, especially in large vines.

A novel vyne, as telleth Columelle,
After the formest yere to oon matiere
(The) fourme is goode, and not as othør telle,
The seconnde yer to kytte of alle yfere,
That thai or dede, or pampinary, were:
But better is to lette a gemme or twoo.
In bigger vynes rather this is do.

47.

Support them with canes or stakes, and after three years give them strong wood. At four years, in strong land, they take three woods. The loppings, and briars and roots and all impediments, should be taken immediately out of the way of the digger.

Ffirst helpe hem uppe with canne and litel stakes,
And yeve hem streng yeres aftør three.
At yeres IIII uppe III matiers takes
On hem, alle ronk yf that the landes be.
The brannches eke kitte of fro vyne or tree,
And brere, and roote, and alle impediment
In haast is from the delver to been hent.

De propaginibus.

48.

Nowe husbondrie his olde vynes plecheth.[1]
The long endured, olde, for freeten vyne
Is not to helpe, as Columelle techeth,
To delve it under alle, but to reclyne
It like abowe, and under lande it myne.
Ffor, as he saithe, the cors I delve in grounde,
The rootes wol abounde and alle confounde.

Now vines are to be propagated. Old, hard, worn out vines are not benefitted, says Columella, by digging them all in, but by bending them like a bow, and burying the ends in the ground: for, he says, if the stock be dug in, there will be too many roots.

49.

He saithe also that after yeres tweyne
This bowes into brannches wol abounde.
But tiliers upon this thing compleyne:
That if me cutte hem after the secounde
Wynter, thai wol be seke and in the grounde
Her rootes faile, and sodainly thai die.
Ffor graffyng now cometh crafty husbondrie.

These bows, he says, in two years will grow into branches. But tillers complain that if they be cut down after the second winter they will be sickly and their roots will die.

De insitionibus.

50.

As in this moone in places warm and glade
Thi graffing goode it is to solemnyse,
Three maner graffynges may be made,
An tweyne of hem is now to do the gyse,
In somer doon the thridde hath his devyse,
Oon in the stok, oon graffeth under rynde;
Emplastering an other dothe in kynde.

There are three modes of grafting, two of which are to be done now; the third in summer. Some graft on the stock, some under the bark, others by plastering.

51.

Thus graffe under the rynde a bough or tree,
There cicatrice is noon but plaine and clene.
So sawe it that the bark unbresed be,
And smothe it after with thi knyves kene.
A wegge of boone or yron putte bytwene
The bark and tree welnygh III fingers depe
Avisily, the rynde unhurte to kepe.

Graft under the bark where there is no scar or mark, saw it without bruising the bark, and smooth it with a sharp knife, put a wedge of bone or iron between the bark and the tree three fingers deep, with care, to keep the bark unhurt.

[1] propagat.

52.

Take out the wedge and slip in the graft, one half being cut, and the pith and the bark being whole on the other half, and it is its nature to rise over the head of the tree two hand-breadths.

Oute with this wegge, in with a graffe anoon,
That oon half cutte, the pith hool and the rynde
Upon that other half, and uppe to goon
Ouer the hede two handbrede is his kynde.
With risshes and with stren me must hem bynde,
And III or IIII, as wol thi stok suffice,
Asondered fyngers IIII is to devyse.

53.

Let the graff be a handbreadth above the clay and moss. Others bind it tight and sharpen it.

Do clay uppon, and mose it alle aboute,
And bynde it to so that the graffe stonde
An handbrede up the messe and clay withoute.
And other bynde it straitly with sum bonnde,
And in the cloven hedes forto stonde,
Thai graffes doon on either side & shave
Sharppe as a wegge, her pith so that thai save.

54.

There must be a wedge, which, pulled out, the earth will ching (qy. *cling*) to the graft.

A wegge in it there must be put aforne,
That, it, puld oute, the tree theron may chinge.
This either crafte for springing tyme is borne,
And worcheth while the moone is in springinge,
Whenne graffes gynneth swelle in burgynynge.
Ffertil and frisshe eke knotty sprongen newe
Thi graffes be, so that estwarde thai grewe.

55.

A graft to be as large as the little finger, with several buds, cut from a young tree near the ground.

The graffes be thi litel finger g(r)ette,
And forked as with forkes oon or two
With gemmes fele aboute on hem ysette.
The yonger tree the better wol it doo.
But nygh the grounde it must be cutte, and so
Sette in the graffe atwixe his tree and rinde,
And as is taught afore, is it to bynde.

56.

Ane other take a graffe of that greetnesse
As is the stocke, that thai wol frist devyde.
This graffe unto that wol thai shappe and dresse
That bark with bark acorde on either side.
They cley and bynde it wel, but forto abyde
And growe it helpeth wel to doo goode lande
The stock aboute, until the graffe upstande.

Others make the bark of the graft correspond with the bark of the tree.

57.

A diligent husbonde enformed me,
That doutlesse every graffyng wol comprende.
Untempered lyme yf with the graffes be
Put in the plages there thai shall descende,
He saide her either sappe wol condescende
Unto that mene, and glewe hemself yfere
In mariage ymixt as though thai were.

A skilful husbandman told me every graft would take if untempered lime were put in the wound.

58.

Of emplastrynge is after in his moone.
Eke Columelle hath told an other crafte
To graffe; unto the pith it is to doone,
A tree to bore and se nothing be lefte
Inwith this bore, and thenne a graffes shafte
Of vyne or tree with gemmes oon or two
By even mete unto that bore ydoo.

Of plaistering it will be spoken afterwards in the proper month. Columella has another method.

59.

With clay and mosse it cloos advysely.
Thus in an elm a man may graffe a vyne.
A Spaniald taught me wonder gisily
To graffe, and bade me theron not divyne.
In peches it was preved tymes IX^me^,
As forto take an arme greet withi bough
Two cubette longe or more and sadde ynough.

A Spaniard taught me a strange mode, which, he said, I might be sure of, as he had tried it often. Taking a branch of willow,

60.

He saide amyddes thorowe I must it bore,[1]
And ther it growed croppe a plante of peche,
And there uppon let slippe adowne that bore[2]
That either hede into the lande forth reche.
Bende as a bowe, or vynes that men pleche,
And cleme it, mose it, bynde it softe aboute.
Quod he thus wol it growe it is noo doute.

he said, I must bore it in the middle, and cut a peach plant where it grew, and put the two ends of it into the bore, and clay and moss, and bind it.

61.

A yere agoone, thai two wol joine as oon.
Thenne cutte away the roote under the bowe,
And ley goode erthe on everie side, and on
Withouten bones fruyt theron wol growe.
In places moist and ronke is moost to trowe
Upon this crafte: for withi loveth wete,
And children on an oth'r tree to gete.

After a year the two will unite, and fruit without stones will grow on it. The willow loves moisture and to make other trees fruitful.

62.

This moone in places temporate olyve
In pastyne, or in tables brinkes sette,
Or in thaire groundes, beth to growe and thrive.
And oute of thi pastyne if thai be fette,
The hed and everie bough or smal or grette
Kitte of; a cubit and an handful longe
Thai must be sette if they shal have noo wronge.

Olive yards to be made this month in temperate places.

63.

Shouve a stake afore, and in doo kest
Sum barly seede, and kitte of everie drie,
Her hedes and mose, and bind hem fest.
The same side uppon the south to wrie,
As dede beforne, is holden husbondrie.
Let sette hem feete a sonder thries v,[3]
Or twies x,[4] as best is hem to thrive.

Cut off every dry part and cover the heads with clay or moss, and bind them. Let the same side turn towards the south as did before.

[1] penetrare. [2] foramen. [3] xv. [4] xx.

64.

Plucke uppe iche weede aboute, at everie reyne
Do delve up smal the moolde of every roote,
Let mynge it wel, and putte it on ayeine,
And more a litel herre upon it wrote.
But in his place if thou wolt have him soote,
Lande, mixt with cley, or sondly cley, fatte sonde,
Lande thicke and quicke, is goode in hem to stonde.

Whenever it rains dig up the mould at the roots. Mix it well, and put it on again, and heap it a little higher.

65.

The potter's clay, the wlonk,[1] or sondy lene,
And naked cley nys nought; for, though it take,
It wol not cleve; eke there as ook hath bene
Or crabtree, the olyves it forsake.
The rootes wol thaire oile or slen or slake.
Northwarde of fervent grounde, southward of colde,
And enter both of hilly lande thai wolde.

Potter's clay, and marshy or sandy soil is useless, and where oak or crab trees have been. Olives prefer ground between north and south.

66.

Her baies names:—oon is Pausia,
An other Orchas, then is Radius,
Licinia, Sergy, Comminia,
And many moo calde oth'r way then thus,
Whoos names shal unwriten be for us.
Oil Pausia, while it is greene, is best,
But sone in age it is corrupt and lest.

Pausia, Orchis, Radius, Sergia, Comminia, etc., names of olive berries.

67.

Licinia her oil is best atte alle,
But Sergia hath moost in quanitee.
Suffice of hem to saie in general,
The grettest for the borde preserved be,
The smallest for thine oil ykepte thou se.
There corne is, sette hem xv foote atwene,
And xxv there as lande is lene.

Let the larger berries be kept for table, the smaller for oil.

[1] uliginosa.

68.

Place them W.S.W. in trenches dug 3ft. deep. If there are no beasts, let the plants scarce appear above ground, but let them be higher where beasts are.

And West Southweste hem forto order best is,
In delves drie and footes IIII depe
Idolve; and if the place is saaf for bestes
Unneth oute of the lande thou lete hem crepe.
And elles herree hem selven forto kepe
Ffrom bestes byte, and ther as wanteth stonys.
Cley mixt with donnge in settyn with hem doon is.

69.

In dry places, where there are plants, plant boughs of olive five or six feet long, and transplant in five years.

There raynes faile, and lande is over drie,
And nedeth to be wette and bere olyve,
And plannte is noon hem with to multiplie,
Lette sette into thi semynary blyve
Olyves bowes VI feet longe or V.
And V yere olde transplante hem in this moone
To places colde, as best it is to doone.

70.

Many have taken young olives from woods or deserts, and planted them a cubit long.

I knowe hem that have take olyves yonge,
This wey[1] is light and more utilitee,
In wodes or desertes uppe yspronge,
Kitte and sette a cubit long to be,
And plantes fele have spronge of suche a tree.
But in the semynairie moost thai roote
With dounge and moolde admixt unto thaire roote.

De pomiferis arboribus in generali.

71.

We shall speak by and bye of every kind of apple-tree. Land that is good for vines is good for them. Save top and bottom in setting them.

Now appultreen towarde Septentrion
In pastyne is the season to dispose,
That by and by shal of be saide ichone.
Lande that is goode for vynes may be chose
As goode for hem: but XXX[ti] footes pose
Iche order of from other: croppe and tail
To save in setting hem is thyne advail.

[1] interpositio.

72.

Yeve every kynde an order by him selve,
Lest myghti treen the smal downe oppresse;
And as the plantes growed, so thou delve
Hem uppe, and so to stand ayeine hem dresse;
Ffrom clif to playne, from lene unto fatnesse,
Ffrom dried lande to moiste is hem to bringe.
Transplant hem so, and sone up wol thai springe.

Plant trees of the same kind by themselves. Transplant them in the same direction as they stood.

73.

The stocke, if thou wolt set it, doo to stonde
Three foote in heght, and plantes forto sette
Tweyne in oon delve is not to take on honde
Ffor wormes, and lest either oth'r lette.
In places drie also thai must be wette.
Yit Columelle he saithe of seedes sowe
Or nuttes wol best bering treen up growe.

Let the stock be 3ft. high. Do not set two plants in one hole. Columella says nuts grow best from seed.

De vitibus et plantis circumfodiendis.

74.

Nowe by the see coste and in hoote countree
The vynes delve or cree, as is to doon,
Now staked and upbounden wol thai be.
Olyves nowe and oth'r treen ichone
Do dounge hem in decresinge of the moone,
The gretter tree, the gretter quantitee
Therof, and half so moche a litel tree.

Now dig or plough round vines by the sea-coast, and dung vines at the waning of the moon.

75.

Ffrist from the roote abate of alle the moolde
And mynge it weel with dounge, and kest it on
Ayaine. Eke in the seminary sholde
The plantes now be mylged everichone,
And brannches now superfluent of gone,
And rootes smale of noon utilitee
Cutte of for lettyng of fertilitee.

The plants in the nursery should now be dug about, and superfluous branches and useless roots cut off to avoid hindering fertility.

76.

Rose-beds to be made this month with sets. The seeds are little berries like pears, which are brown when ripe.

This moone is eke the rosaries to make
With setes,[1] or me may here sedes sowe.
The floure me with the roos is not to take
But baies, that as litel peres growe;
By broune coloure and softenesse is to knowe
Yf thai be ripe. Eke now is to repare
Rosaries olde, and drynesse of to pare.

77.

Dig round them, and if they are thin, plant more.

Nowe unbydelve[2] hem, and if thai be rare,
Me may hem thicke, enducyng planntes moo,
With crafte eke roses erly riped are.
Tweyne handbrede of aboute her rootes doo
A delvyng make, and every day thereto
Doo water warme. Now hilly bulbes sowe
Or sette, and wede hem that of rather growe.

78.

Be careful to weed them. Separate small bulbs from the mother-plant.

In wedyng hem thou must be diligent
Ffor hurtyng of her bulbe, or of her eye.
But bulbes smale uppe from her moder hent
Let putte in oth'r lande to multiplie.
The violet to plannte is nowe to trie.
Now saffron bulbes beth to sette or sowe,
Or subtillie to delve, if that thai growe.

79.

Sow linseed in rich land ten bushels to an acre; and place reeds in shallow holes half a foot apart.

Nowe sum in soile ydounged lynseede sowe,
X busshels serveth for an acre lande.
Ffull subtil flaxe and smal therof wol growe,
And also thicke and longe as it may stande.
Cannetes[3] nowe with craftes may be fande.
In delves breef this cannes eyon doo,
And iche half a foote his felawe froo.

[1] plantas. [2] circumfodias. [3] canneta.

80.

In places drie and hoote me must assigne
Hem mooldes moist, and ther as it is colde.
To weet is nought; to drie is nought; benynynge
Is goode, so that the towne water doune folde
Streght hem amonge. Sperages seede eke holde
Is goode hem with, with hem to springe.
Ffor cannes and sperage have oon tillynge.

Give them a moist mould, not too wet nor too dry, but benign. Sprinkle asparagus seed amongst them.

81.

Cannetes olde eke tyme is nowe to wede,
And of to kytte it that thaire roote uneseth,
And hem that rote or crokydly procede.
The barein eyles canne also displeseth.
Now wylous, busshes, bromes, thing that eseth
Let plannte; and nowe of mirte and laures baies
To make or tile a seminary day is.[1]

Weed and cut off obstructions from the root, and remove the eyeless plants. Plant willows, etc., for their service. Make or till beds of myrtle.

De Ortis et diversis herbis.

82.

And atte this moones Idus is goode houre
To make a gardaine hegge, as is beforne
Itaught, when the was saide in fitches floure
The seede to keepe of brere and houndes thorne.
Ffor hegges made of it shall not be torne.
The Greek saithe of scions of fatty brere
As vynes sette, an hegge a man may rere.

Make garden hedges in the middle of March, as you were told to keep the seed of briar and hound'sthorn in flour of vetches. Sow lettuce to plant out in April.

83.

But everie day me must it delve and weete
Until it take. Eke letuce is nowe sowe,
In Aprill it to plannte in other lete.
Nowe trefull, cresse, and coriander growe,
Nowe popy seede in grounde is goode to throwe.
Now savery seede in fatte undounged londe
Dooth weel, and nygh the see best wol it stonde.

Trefoil, cress, coriander, poppy, and savoury to be sown now.

[1] tempus est.

84.

Onions may be sown in spring or autumn. Grown from seed they will have a small body and great head.

Smal onyons be with it, or by hem selve
I sowe; eke hem in veer and in harvest
Thai sowe, whoos seede in moolde if that me delve,
The body smal, the hede wol be grettest.
But onyons as for seede to sette is best.
The hede wol dwyne awaie as it wolde die,
The croppe encrece, and seedes multiplie.

85.

Weeds and roots to be taken carefully out of an onion bed. Sown at the new moon they will be large, at the full moon small and bitter.

Ffate lande ydounged moist and wel ywrought
Onyons desire. In it lete beddes make
Iche herbe and roote oute of it fetely sought.
A plesaunte day and clere to sowe in take,
And grettest wol the growyng moone hem make
And sweet ynough; the wanyng of the moone
Wol make hem smale and bitter everichoone.

86.

Pluck off the leaves from the top to make their heads swell. If you wish for seeds prop them up. When ripe they become black.

Let hem be thynne ynough, and weede hem ofte,
And if the list her hedes forto swelle,
Plucke of the foiles alle aboute on lofte.
So wol the juce inwith her hedes dwelle,
And thai that shall of seedes bere a belle,
Let raile hem uppe, and when thaire seedes blake,
That thai be ripe of that a signe is take.

87.

Dill may now be sown in any climate. Water it in dry weather, but weed it seldom. Some think that no bird will harm it.

Half drie up plucke hem, in the sonne hem drie.
Now dile in places colde is goode to sowe,
Hit may with everie ayer under the skye.
Gladder it is there warmer wyndes blowe,
And water hem yf shoures be to slowe.
But wede hem seld. Eke sum have this bileve,
That bare ylefte there shall noo foul[1] it greve.

[1] avis.

88.

Sowe mustard and colewort in rich land, not sandy. No rain will injure them. A south aspect brings them sooner than a northern.

Senvey lete sowe it nowe, and cool sede bothe,
And when the list, weelwrought fatte lande thai love,
And sondy eley gravelous thai lothe.
But yf it reyned day and nyght above
Ther may noo wether harme hem, nor remove.
But sette hem southwarde sonner wol thai preve,
Septentrion wol make hem latter cheve.

89.

They like hills and rich land, but it must be alwayswell weeded. To make them white, sift ground glass on them when they have three or four leaves.

But there[1] thai wol be greet and savoure well.
The clyf thai love and fatte ydounged londe,
And weded well it mot ben everidell,
Eke sumdel ferre asonder must thai stonde.
To make hem hoor as frost eke crafte is fonde:
Let grounden glasse goo sifte on hem aboute,
When thaire trefoil or quaterfoil is oute.

90.

Columella would wrap their roots in sea-weed to keep them green. Set them far apart, that though it be long ers they take root, they may be stronger.

This wol hem make in vigoure long dwelle,
And forto seethe eke tender wol thai be.
To holde hem grene, eke chargeth Columelle
Thaire rootes in see froth wrapped to se,
And therwithall of dounge a quantitee.
And sette hem greet aparty, for though longe
Or then thai taked be, thai wol be stronge.

91.

They will spread more widely if you cover them. Old cabbage seed turns to rape. In the middle of March sow spungy roots of asparagus, or make new beds of seed.

In winter sette hem in a warme day;
In summer whenne the sonne gothe to rest;
And hele her lande the wyder wol thai splay.
Oold brassic seede to rape eschaungeth fest.
And nygh this moones Idus eke is best
Sponge of Sperage or newe of seedes fourme,
Or olde as newe me may sette and refourme.

[1] in Septentrion.

92.

Asperagus seeds will multiply where everything else dies. Burn them every year in bundles (scopes).

Me semeth this is good and profitable.
Wild asperages rootes many trie
Into erthe ytilde, or stony lande is able
Ynough for hem: for thai wol multiplie
There as all other treen and herbes deye,
And every yere in scopes hem to brenne,
And thicker, gretter, swetter wol up renne.

93.

Mallow, mint, fennel, and parsnips sown or planted this month.

Nowe malowe is sowe, and myntes plannte or roote[1]
In places moist, or water nygh is sowe.
Now dounged fatte lande axeth thai to roote;[2]
So it be gladde; eke fenel wol up growe,
So it be gladde;—in stony lande ythrowe
Persnepes sede; or planntes fatte and rare
Pastyned depe ysette in this moone are.

94.

Marjoram, and chervil, and bete to be sown: the last to be transplanted when it has four or five leaves.

Now cunula is sowe and hath culture
As onyons or garlec, and now cerfoil[3]
After this moones Idus doo thi cure
To sowe in fatte and moist ydounged soil.
Nowe betes sowe, and synk or quaterfoil
Transplannte, and somer thorough hem me sowe,
In fatte lande moist ydounged wol thai growe.

95.

Make the roots feast on dung. To make leeks frough (or tender) cut off the blades as they remain two months in their bed.

The rootes wolde in dounge ydipped be,
And delve hem ofte, and make hem feeste of dounge,
And now thi leek ysowen is to se.
To make hem frough, kytte of the blades longe
Right as thai growyng beth II monethes yonge,
And right ther in her beddes leve hem dwelle.
Yet oth'rwise enfourmeth Columelle.

[1] radicem. [2] radicare. [3] cerefolium.

96.

And when ye plannte it, dounge and water doo
Therto; but heded yf thou list it have,
In veer lete sowe, in October goo too
And transplannte it; fatte londes wol it crave,
Plaine, dolven deep and dounged best it save;
And weede it ofte. Eke thicke ysowe is frough,
And rare ysowe is heded greet and tough.

To make them grow to head, sow in spring, and transplant in October.

97.

A finger greet is rounde ynough to sette,
And in the myddes cut of every blade;
The rootes eke cutte and umbiwette
With dounge is goode her sprynging forto glade.
An hand asonder sette hem with thi spade.
And whenne thai rooteth, raise hem with thi hande,
That thai suspense a partie so may stande.

when they are an inch round. Saturate the roots all round with dung, and loosen the ground with a spade, and set them a span apart.

98.

So wol thou finde a space under thaire roote
And heded full, eke forto make hem greet,
Doo seedes fele yfere, and thai wol roote
Yfere, and in oon body wol thai greet,
And rape seed into thaire hedes geet.
All yronles wol make hem growe faste,
And ofte ydoon, the faster wol thai haste.

Plant many seeds together, and they will grow into one root together. They will grow faster if no iron be used.

99.

The chibol now, ther as cannetes growe,
His eyen[1] sowe of cutte as is the reed,[2]
All softely in the dolven lande hem throwe,
And sowe hem by a lyne other a threed.
Three feet to stande a sonder is her speed.
The bulbes of calcases settyng sone
In landes moiste and fatte is goode this moone.

The chibol (inula) is grown from eyes cut off. The bulbs of the Colocasia (Egyptian bean) to be planted this month.

[1] oculos. [2] calamus.

100.

They grow best near a well. They last almost for ever if defended from cold. Cummin and anise to be sown now.

Thai aette nought by the ayres qualitee,
And gladde be thai to stande aboute awelle
That humour ever may thaire boteler be.
Ffrom hem yf thou defende eke coldes felle
In thaire growyng almoost they ever dwelle.
Nowe comyn and aneyse is fatte ysowe
In dounged lande and weeded wel to growe.

De diversis arboribus in pomario.

101.

The pear-tree to be planted in cold places in February; in a warmer soil in November.

The peretree plannte is aette in places cold
Atte ffeveryere, and there as is a warmer ayer
In Novemb'r; and then eke goode is holde
To graffe hem thir moist erthe is her goode leire;
So shall the fruyte be greet, and floures feire.
Thai in such erthe as vynes love abounde,
Ffatte lande maketh mighty treen and right fecounde.

102.

A stony pear is said to change its flavour if it be grafted into generous land. It is a chance if you obtain a tree from a plant.

A stannry[1] pere is saide to channge is mete
In easy lande ygraffed if he be:
Hit is but happe of plannte a tree to gete.
And if thou wilt take of a gentil tree
Not wilde atte alle withoute asperitee,
When it is two yere olde or III, to thrive,
Goode is to aette it as men aette olyve.

103.

Pears will also grow from seed. We need not despair though nature be slow. To her eternity delay is not tedious.

But aette hem rooted wel in delves wyde
III foote or IIII in heght, and cropped feire,
With cley and mosse her hedes hode and hide.
Eke seedes sowen peres wol repeire.
Nature such it is not to dispiere
Late yf she be: for targyng may not be
Ffastidiose in her eternitee.

[1] lapidosum.

104.

But lenge it is a man theron to dwelle.
Thaire noblesse eke thai wol departe froo.
Therfore is better doo as I wol telle:
In Novemb'r the wilde tree to doo
Be graffed first sette and rooted to,
In delves large ynough and dolven deep,
That rootes easily may under creep.

But rather than wait so long it is better to graft them on wild trees in November.

105.

Do graffe hem in hemself, and thai wol be
Tender and sweete; eke thai may not endure.
And if me graffe hem in an other tree,
The lenger wol thai last in lesse cure.
And xxx^{ti} foote asonder for lesure
Is hem to sette. Eke humour is availle
To hem, and delve hem ofte is goode travaille.

If grafted on their own stocks they will be tender and sweet, but will not keep. Grafted on another tree they will last longer. To dig them often is so good,

106.

It is so goode that in the blossomynge
She wol not lese a floure that forth is brought.
The delver is to help her with delvynge,
And every oth'r yere she wolde be wrought
With spade, and dounge is therto to be sought.
Oxe dounge about her rootes yf that me trete,
The pomes sadde and brawny wol it gete.

that a tree so managed will not lose a flower in blossoming. If cowdung be spread about the roots, the fruits will be firm and strong.

107.

And sum also dooth askes with this dounge.
Thai seyne therof ther wol goode taste arise.
The kynde of hem to telle it is to longe,
While thaire tillinge is not in dyvers gise.
The peretree seek is heled in this wyse.
Let make it bare, and bore it thorowe the roote,
And drive a pynne therin wol doon it boote.

Some mix ashes therewith to improve the flavour. It is too long to tell their varieties. A sick pear-tree should have it roots bared, be bored through, and have a pin driven in.

108.

Another cure is to bore the stock and drive in it a pin made of a brand, or, failing that, of an oak, and there will be no worms if bullock's gall be poured upon the roots.

Or elles thus: let bore it thorowe the stook,
And doo therin a pynne made of a bronde,
And if the wanteth that, take of an ooke,
And wormes wol ther noon in it be fonde,
Yf ofte uppon the rootes as thai stonde
The boles galle enfused be; and more
Ffor blossomynge to longe is herof lore.

To prevent their blossoming too long,

109.

pour wine-dregs three days on the roots of the trees.

Of wynes olde it is to take dregges,
The dregges must be newe, and daies three
Infounde hem on thi trees feet and legges,
So wol the blossom parte from the tree.
And lapidose if that thi peres be
Let voide all erthe and stones from the roote,
And sifte in oth'r erthe: and this is boote.

110.

Graft pears in February and March, as shewn before.

But wete it ofte and longe, or this is nought.
To graffe is goode in Marche and ffeveryere.
Howe forto graffe afore is must be sought
In rinde and stok for graffyng the manere.
Ther is also graffing in trees sere,
As melo, almonde, and thorn, as saith Virgile,
[1] Foolde, ashes, quynce, and ponyk cleef his stile.

Grafting may be done, according to Virgil, on the melo (apple), almond and thorn, fold (mountain ash), ash, etc.

111.

The pear-tree to be grafted before the longest day must be a year old, and first remove the stalks and leaves.

The peretree graffe ygraffed forto be
Er thenne the day be lengest oon yere olde
Must been, and or me sette him in the tree
The tendron and the leves of thou folde.
But when the daies gynneth shortte and colde,
Then graffe hem that the tender croppes bere,
And graffing is for every manner pere.

[1] Orno, fraxino, cydonis, punico finde lignum.

112.

To make a savery pere and weel smellinge
In daies feire and wanyng of the moone,
From XXII dayes olde wanynge
Till dayes VIII with hande it is to doone
That fruyt be puled, and of oon kynde aloone
From VII unto X, from II til V,
Theee houres 6 outetake thi peres blyve.

Pears for preserving are to be gathered by hand from the 22nd to the 8th, all of one sort, and between the hours of 7 and 10, and 2 and 5. Take out your pears these six hours.

113.

So thai be drie, and not caduc and harde,
And hool, and sumdel greene, and then hem doo
In sum vessel pitched wel upwarde.
The bothom doo this vessel closed soo.
And where a place is with a brooke through goo,
Continully there hide hem in the grounde.
For peres yit an other crafte is founde.

Place them dry, hard, sound, and greenish in a pitched vessel, and keep them underground near a running stream.

114.

As forto pulle hem hardde of flessh and skynne
And keep hem uppe: but when thai gynneth softe,
Let take an erthen potte, and putte hem ynne,
And pitche it fast, and cley it wel clofte,
And delve it under moolde, in with thi crofte
There as the sunne all day uppon it shyne.
And sum in wheete or chaff wol hem reclyne.

Another plan is to gather them hard, and keep them till they become soft; then put them in a pan well pitched, and clay it at the top, and bury it within your garden.

115.

And other take hem tough and fast encloos
Hem in a potte ypitched or with cley
Ystopped fast, and in the sonde dispose
It in the sonne, and other men wol ley
Her peres tough in hony so that they
Ne touche not, eke peres men devide
And pike awey the greyne of every syde.

Others lay them in sand in the sun; others put them in honey, slicing the pears and taking out pips.

116.

Others put them into salt water which has been boiled and skimmed, and then lay them in a pitched pot. Or macerate them a day and a night in salt water, and keep in bragot, wine, or mead.

And piked so in sonnes hem they dria.
Oon boileth water salt and skommeth clene,
Therinto colde his peres wol he trie,
Then into a pitched potte he wol hem glene;
Or salt water oon day and nyght hem lene,[1]
Then fresshe water two daies on hem steep,
In bragot then or wyne or meeth hem kepe.

117.

Pear-wine is made by straining them through a fine sack. Summer will make it sour. Winter will harden it and make it keep. Vinegar is made of ripe pears kept in heaps for three days.

Of peres wyne is made, if thai be grounde
And thorough a rare saak with fors ywronge.
Yit somer wol it soure and so confounde,
And winter wol endure and kepe it longe.
Of peres soure and wilde it is noo wronge
Aysell to bringe, all ripe yf that thai be
Ytake and kepte upheped daies three.

118.

Cover them in a vessel with rain or well-water for thirty days.

Then in a vessel se that thai be doo,
And water with of rayne or of the welle,
Then hele it feire, or se that it be soo,
And xxx daies therin lette hem dwelle.
Now aisel take unto thine use, or selle.
But se what quantitee therof thou take
With water up the summe ayenie thou make.

119.

To make castimonial liquor: take ripe pears, whole, with salt, place them in clean jars, or suspend them after three months in earthen pots well pitched.

And make liquamen castimoniall
Of peres thus: take peres right mature
And with hool salt, and hem [and] fleshhe and all,
When thai been resolute, in stondes peres (pure)
Or erthen pottes pitched save and sure,
And after III monethes do hem suspende,
And right goode licoure of hem wol descende.

[1] macerant.

120.

His taste is goode, and whitisshe his colcure.
Ffor that when salt and it is doon yfere,
A blakkisshe wyne commixt it dothe socoure.
And in the moones of Marche and ffeveryere
The moles graffed beth, but there as clere
Is aier, and hoote, and drie. It may be doo
In October and November also.

To improve the colour, when the salt is mixed with it, add black wine. Graft apples in February and March.

121.

Her kyndes forto write I wol not waste.
Fatte lande thai love, and moiste in nature.
In cley, or in gravel men mosten haaste
To water hem ofte: in hilles is to cure
To set hem on the Southe if thai shall ure.
Thai growe also in places colde, if the aier
Be sumdel warme and helping to thair laier.

Men must water them in clay or gravel. In hills it is best if they use to set them on the south.

122.

Also thai growe in places hardde and wete,
And wormy wol thai be in drie and lene;
And hem to graff as peres me may trete.
The plough or spade aboute hem be not sene,
Ffurthi the bette in medes may thai bene.
And dounge, alle though thai noon or litel crave,
Yit gladly wol thai take, and gladly have.

In dry, lean soil, apples become wormy. Not allowing spade or plough, they do better in meadows.

123.

And namely askes medled therwith alle
Thai loveth, eke to dwell in region
There as the heet is neith'r greet ne small,
Eke thai be apte unto putacion
Of bowes drie or foule elacion.
This tree is olde anoon, and in his age
He goothe oute of his kynde into dotage.

They like ashes mixed with dung, also a temperate climate, and the cutting off of boughs which are dry or of foul growth. The tree soon grows old.

124.

To prevent apples falling, cleave the root. To prevent their rotting, touch them with the gall of a newt. Worms in apples are killed by a mixture of swines dung with ox-gall.

Caduce if that the fruyte be, cleef the roote,
And putte in hit a stoone, and it wol dwelle.
For rotyng of the croppe the galle is boote
To touch hem with of neutes grene, eke quelle
Her wormes thus: take swynes dounge, and melle
It with uryne of man or oxes galle,
And meles wormes this wol sleen hem alle.

125.

Or strap them off with a strap of brass, and plaister dung upon the wound.

Yf wormes feel uppon hem be withoute
A strape of braas let strape hem of therwith,
And cleme uppon the wounde oxe dounge aboute;
And ovre thicke yf that the fruytes beth,
Plucke of the feble fruyte, as reason seth,
Hem to discharge, and juce it then wol dresse
It into thayme that are of gentilnesse.

126.

Graft apples on pears, plums, apple-trees, service-trees, willows, etc. Keep them in a dark place out of the wind, and put straw upon the crate under them with a little space between the heaps.

In peretree, thorn, in plumme, and apple tree
In serve, and peche, in plane and popule,
In wylous may this meles graffed be,
But trie hem wel that shal be kept over yere;
Let ley hem derk as wynde may not come nere.
And do feire stree uppon thaire fleyke[1] hem under
On hepes save a litel space asonder.

127.

Different persons keep them in different ways. Stick the stalks in clay, and lay them on a floor strewed with chaff.

These heepes must me nowe and nowe devide.
Yit beth ther dyvers folk sayen dyvers wyse.
And oon in pitched pottes wol hem hyde,
And other hath of cley an oth'r gyse.
Yit hath the thridde of hem a fresshe devyse.
Oonly the litel feet[2] to cleme in cley
And on a floor with chaf bystrowed ley.

[1] crate. [2] pediculos.

128.

And theruppon thai cover hem with stre.
The meles rounde, ycalde orbiculer,
Withouten care a yere may keped be.
And other drenche hem in the water clere
Of cisterne, or of wynche yclosed nere,
In erthen pottes pitched atte the fulle,
And other meles wol with handes pulle,

Apples called orbicular keep well for a year. Others preserve them in water; and others pick the apples by hand.

129.

And dippe her litel feet[1] in pitche alle warme,
And so in order ley hem on a table,
And nuttre leves under wol not harme.
Eke populer or fir is profitable
To make and ley among hem scobes able,
And let her petifeet dounwarde be wende,
And touche hem not until thai shal be spende.

and dip the stalks in warm pitch, and lay them under the leaves of the nut-tree, or shavings (scobes) of fir or poplar.

130.

Aisel and wyne of meles me may make
As is above enfourmed of the pere.
To graffe a quynce is dyvers tyme ytake.
Thaire planntes I have sayen in Ytail here
The Citee nygh ysette in ffeveryere,
Or of the fronnte of Marche in dounged moolde,
So that thai rooted were, and right wel holde.

I have seen plants of the quince in Italy, near the city, set in February.

131.

Holde have thai so that in the yere secounde
Ffruyt have thai hadde yf that me sette hem greet,
In thende of Octob'r thai wol abounde,
Or sone in Novemb'r yf that me trete
Hem into place of drynesse and of hete.
But ther as drie it is thay must be wette.
Thai love in colde and moist eke to be sette.

They have borne fruit in the second year. Where it is dry they must have moisture.

[1] pediculos.

132.

They bear quickly in temperate places on hills and plains. Men graft from their tops and their stock, but that work seldom avails.

Thai bere anoon in places temporate,
And forth thai come in cleves and in planys.
Thai love lande devexe and inclinate.
Men graffeth of thaire toppes and thair tranys;
That werk or seelde availle, or sone yslayne is.
And wide hem so that though the wynd hem shake,
Noo droop of oon until an other take.

133.

Add ashes and chalk to large plants. Constant moisture will enlarge them.

Yf thai be smale sette, helpe hem with dounge,
Yf thai be greet, askes and shalkes do to.[1]
Atte ones serve hem thus in all yere longe.
Eterne[2] humour wol greet hem, and also
Hit wol hem ripe sone, and yf thaire no
Reyne be, me muste hem wete and umbydelve,
That doon, let God therwith alone him selve.

134.

Unless they are dug at the right time, otherwise we shall get no fruit. I promise you I have proved that if they are cut they will be free from vice.

Atte Marche or Feveryere in landes colde,
Atte Octob'r or Novemb'r in hete,
But thai be delven aboute as thai wolde,
Other me shal of hem noo fruytes gete,
Or oute of kynde; also that I you hete[3]
Y preved have, ykette if that thai be,
Thai wol been oute of vice in libertee.

135.

If the tree be sick, pour on the roots oil-dregs mixed with water in equal quantities. Or resin mixed with tar doth boot (good).

The tree is seek, oildregges watermynge
Yliche of either, helde it to the roote.
Or let quyk lyme with chalk resolvyng synge,
Or resyne[4] mixt with taar[5] that is so soote.
Ennointe aboute of this, for this doothe boothe.
Or make the rootes bare, and ley aroute
Of quynces to, to go the roote aboute.

[1] misce. [2] continuus. [3] promitto. [4] resina. [5] pice liquida.

186.

Do this from yere to yere, and thai be saf
Ffor vice; eke ther ayeine thai nyl not dure.
948 In ffeveryere this quynces is to graffe,
The rynde as in the stok is not so sure
Hem into graffe, and graffyng to assure
In hem of everie fruyte, punyk[1] and serve[2]
952 And appletreen eke best for hem thai serve.

It will, on the other hand, prevent their enduring long.

187.

Thaire yonge treen, ther juce is, in the rynde
Is goode to graffe, and old if that thai be,
To graffe atte the roote it is her kynde
956 Ther as the soil as well the bark as tree
Hath benefited with humyditee.
Hem ripe ypulde men kepe in dyvers wise.
And first of tiles tweyne is oon devyse:

Graft young trees in the bark, old ones at the root. There are divers ways of keeping them: first between two tiles

188.

960 Do hem betwene, and cley it every side,
Or in defrute or passe. Sethe hem feire
The grettest wol an other out devyde,
And in figtrees leves many a peire[3]
964 He wolde do folde of hem, so nyl thai peire.[4]
An other wol in places drie enclude
Hem, and the wynde and aiers bothe exclude.

covered with clay and laid in *defrutum* or *passum*. Others wrap many pairs of them in fig-leaves.

189.

He wol with iver[5] or with reed[6] devyde
968 Hem uppon IIII, and take away the core,
And into a potful hony let hem slide:
He dothe hem hool in hony lesse and more.
But ripe ynough beth best this keping fore.
972 And sum in mylde,[7] and sum ychaved deep,
And sum in swete wynes wol hem kepe.

Another will divide them into four parts with ivory or cane, and put them into a pot full of honey. Some keep them in millet or chaff.

[1] punici. [2] sorbi. [3] paria. [4] perire. [5] ebore. [6] canna. [7] milio.

140.

Another encloses them in a tun with must. Now and in November transplant carob-trees.

Oon with his muste hem closeth in the tonne;
An oth'r saithe that in a panne all newe
Doo hem with dried cley and thai be wonne.
Nowe and in Novemb'r is to renewe
The Siliqua[1] in planntes and seedes trewe.
Hit loveth places nygh the See syde,
And places hardde and drie, eke feeldes wyde.

141.

Plant their stems in large trenches.

Experte am I that thai in places warme
Wol best abounde ywattered if thai be,
Thaire palmes forto sette it dooth (a)noon harme,
But delves large ynough for hem thou se.
Now graffe hem in the plumme[2] and almond tree.

The fruit keeps long if spread in large layers.

This fruyt is longe ykepte withouten drede,
In fleykes feire yf that men list hem sprede.

142.

Mulberries grown from seed, but more quickly from truncheons.

Molberytree wol growe uppe of his seede,
But bough and fruyte wol turne oute of his kynde.
The croppe or talions to graffe is speed,
But talions[3] the better me shall finde
On eith'r half made smothe, unhurt the rynde
As in a graffe, and umbigoone with dounge.
And se that thai been ichone oo[4] foote longe.

143.

Here, *i.e.* in Italy, graft mulberries in March. In warmer places in October or November.

To sette hem first make redy place, and when
Me setteth hem mynge askes with the moolde,
And handbrede in the lande be hidde, and then
Saye God save all! In Marche and nowe thai wolde
Be graffed here, and ferther froo the colde
In thende of Octob'r, or in the toppe[5]
Of Novemb'r in the lande is hem to stoppe.

[1] a maner tree. [2] pruno. [3] talias. [4] Orig. *sesquipedalibus*. [5] initio.

144.

Hit loveth places hoote and ful of sande
And nygh the see, not stony lande, ne cley.
Unneth in it thai take a foote to stande,
Much humour dooth hem woo, but glad be they
With delvyng ofte and dounging, soothe to sey.
And after yeres three the drosse and drie
Doo kitte it of, and thai wol multiplie.

Mulberries scarcely take root in clay. After three years cut off the dross and dry wood.

145.

In Octob'r or Novemb'r lette sette
The planntes bigge; and, tender yf thai be,
This Feveryere and Marche is for hem bette.
Thaire delves deep and rowme asonder the,
That shades[1] stretche not froo tree to tree.
Eke as me saithe thai wol be faire, and bringe
Up fruite ynough by connyng of boring.

February and March are better for weak plants. Make the holes deep and a space between that the shade of one stretch not to another, bore them through

146.

Let bore hem thorough the bodie here and there,
And putte in everie hole a wegge or pynne,
A birchen here, a terebynten there.
And whenne kalende of Octob'r cometh inne,
Make bare his rootes right unto the skynne.
Old wynes dregges fresshe on hem infounde,
And thai wol be the fressher and fecounde.

the stocks, and put a wedge or pin in every hole. Pour fresh dregs of old wine on the roots.

147.

In figtree, in hemself under the rynde
Me may hem graffe, and in an elm thai take;
But in this Elm thai greteth[2] oute of kynde.
A walnuttree thaire nuttes nowe wol make,
Two finger deep in erthe is hem to stake.
Experte am I thaire planntes best to growe,
But sette hem nowe, eke now thaire nuttes sowe.

Grafts take on the elm, but grow over large. Nuts will now grow into a walnut-tree, but I know from experience that plants are best.

[1] umbre. [2] grandescunt.

148.

Wet, lean land is best for them. They ripen about the nones of July. Now plant kernels of myx (qy. damsons) in a pot, as many as may sprout.

Weet, colde, and lenyssh, sandy lande is best
Ffor hem, and thai been ripe atte Jules nonys.[1]
Now curnels of myxe it is to kest
In moulde in sum vessell so feel atte onys
As wel may spire, and when thaire spir up goone is,
Warme aier, molsh lande, and humour moderate,
Let plannte hem ther, and uppe gothe thair astate.

149.

Graft them in March on thorn or service-tree. It is beneficial to plant and graft the mastick.

He may ont graffe atte Marche in thorn and serve.[2]
Eke tuberes nowe sowe and graffe, and nowe
The benes hardde of mastic tree wol serve[3]
Ysowe. Eke hem to plannte and graffe is prowe.[4]
The meddeler to graffe eke tolde is howe.
Now plummes bones and figges are
In tempre land ysette a party rare.

150.

Almonds are sown early in temperate soil; later in cold. They are to be grafted before the buds germinate.

Nowe serve[5] is sette, almonnde in lande is sowe,
Eke rathe in tempre lande, late in chillyng.[6]
Men graffe hem nowe thaire graffes buddes[7] ungrowe;
And now pistace[8] hath planntyng or graffinge,
Chastene also; juglande in lande now sprynge.
Eke graffe hem nowe, now for pynappultree
The colde or weetisshe[9] lande most sowen be.

De educatione porcorum.

151.

The best boars for breeming are great-bodied, *ample*, wide, round, with large hips and white bellies, etc.

Nowe bores[10] gladly brymmeth. Chese a bore
Greet bodied, side, and wyde, eke rather rounde
Then long, eke hipped greet, and wombed hoor,
And huge-snouted, shorte, his necke abounde
With fattes[11] feel, his stones greet and sounde.
And from oon yere until he come atte fyve
He wol do well ynough, and often wyve.

[1] nonas. [2] sorbo. [3] servrie. [4] utile. [5] sorbus. [6] frigido. [7] germinibus. [8] pistacia. [9] humecto. [10] verres. [11] glandulis.

152.

The sowes is to chese of longest syde,[1]
In other thinges take her like a boore
So thai be wombed wel, dependannt, syde,[2]
That likely is for greet and mighty stoore.
The hered blake in cold countree, the hoore
And every hewe[3] to have in places warme
Is indistinctly good, and may not harme.

The sows should be large-bellied, pendent, vast; the black-haired in cold countries; white and all colours thrive in warm places.

153.

The femal shal til VII yere suffice
To bere, and oon yere olde she wol conceyve,
And, monethes IIII ydone, it is thaire gise
To pigge, and in this point thay nyl deceyve.
Thees if me spende, or mynt[4] for them receyve,
The sonner wol they brymme ayeine and brynge
Forth pigges moo. Now herbes for hem springe.

The sow breeds from two to seven years of age. They litter after four months. If you eat or sell the pigs, the sooner will they breem again.

154.

A man may have hem in every lande,
But bette in myri feeldes then in dri,
And moost thaire fructifying wodes stande,
Wherof sum fruyte wol targe[5] and sum wol hie.[6]
Eke lande is goode ther herbes multiplie.
The rootes eke of rede[7] and risshe thay ete.
When winter sleeth thaire fedyng, yeve hem meete.

They do better in miry land, especially where woods are, some of whose fruit remains, some hastens to fall.

155.

Mast, chastene, yeve hem pugges of thi corne;
Hem that beth melch in veer novelles grene
Beth nought to feede; her cotes[8] make beforne
Under sum porche, and parte hem so betwene
That every stye[9] a moder wol sustene,
That with her wombe her pigges doth from cold;
But make it that me may on hem behold.

Give them mast, chesnuts, and refuse of corn. Young plants that are milky in spring are injurious. Make their sties beforehand.

[1] latus. [2] profunde. [3] color. [4] monetam. [5] tardare. [6] festinare. [7] cannarum. [8] aras. [9] ara.

156.

Let the swineherd see to the number. Columella says eight. I say six. I have seen too many weaken or kill the sow.

Thy swon[1] may se thaire nomb'r and up save
The oppressed pigge; and VIII wol Columelle
A soowe up bryng. I saie VI is to have
Ynough, and that is over spende or selle.
Ffele I have seyn[2] thair dammes feynt or quelle.
Thi vyne swyne wol delve after vyndage,[3]
As diligent as delvers for thaire wages.

De vino myrtite.

157.

To make myrtite wine, mix six sectarii of wine with five pounds of myrtle-berries. Add a basket of palms and five pounds of honey.

Sone in this moone eke myrtite is to make
Sex sester old wyne do to mirtes bayes
V pounde, and hem togeder alle to shake,
And shake hem daily XXII daies;
A skeppe of palme thenne after to surtray is.
This wyne V pounde of fyne hony therto
Ystamped wel let mynge, and it is doo.

De vite tiriaca.

158.

Wine, vinegar, or grape from the tiriac vine is a remedy against the bite of any beast. Make a slit three inches deep in the end of the scions, and pick out the pith.

Vyntariake is also nowe to make.
What goode dooth it? His wyne, aysel, or grape,
Or rynde[4] of his scions yf that me take,
The bite of every beest me shall escape.
And such a crafte to make it is noo jape.
Three fingers deep the scions must be slitte
In thende, and pike oute alle the pith of it.

159.

Fill it with fine tiriac, tie it up again, and plant it. Others put them in a bulb of squill.

In stede of that fille it with fyne tiriake;
To bynde it faire ayein be diligent
And sette it. God save alle! yet oth'r take
Her scions fild with this medicament,
And hem to sette as for this same entent,
Iche of hem doo thay in a bulbe of squyle,
And sette in this maner thay doth not ille.

[1] suilous. [2] vidi. [3] vindemiam. [4] cutem.

160.

Tyriake is hald[1] of sum on vynes rootes
And dooth ful wel. A scion of hem take
And sette hath not that myght, therin noo boote is
As in the moder was, until me make
Hit right as she was made. Also Tyriake
Ys goode to take, and when this wynes olde
Helde on thaire rootes ofte, and thai wol holde.

Some pour tirise upon the root of a vine. A scion taken and planted has not the same virtue as the parent stock.

De uva sine granis.

161.

Ungreyned[2] grape in high jocunditee
Me may suppe of as saunez impediment
And all oon wyne: this Greek auctoritee
So maketh to crafte naturè a succedent.
That shall be sette is taken the sarment,[3]
As moche as shalle stande in the lande they cleve,
And clene awey the pithe of it they streve.[4]

Grapes without stones may be eaten *sans* impediment, as if all wine. Thus nature is made to follow art. The cutting that shall be planted is cleft, and the pith is taken out.

162.

And diligent thai shave hem every side,
And joine ayein the legges so departed,
And bynde hem so that thay may not devyde.
With paper best and leest are thai coarted.
Nowe softe in lande wel moist thai must be darted,[5]
Sum eke hem sette inwith a bulbe of squylle
That maketh iche sette, thai sayen, to take atte wille.

The separated parts are united with papyrus, and planted in a moist soil.

163.

And other, in the vynes kitting seson,
Wol trie oute high sarmentes fertilest
And cleve hem not, but use anoth'r reson:
Until a reed for turnyng bounden fest
Thai bore oute the pithe, and in is kest
This opium Quyrynaike: the Greek
So nameth it; so doth myne auctor eke.

Others choose the most fruitful cuttings, and, without cleaving them, bind them unto a reed to prevent turning, and put in what the Greeks call opium Cyrynæcum.

[1] effunditur. [2] uva sine granis. [3] *Or* scion. [4] radunt. [5] ponantur.

164.

Dilute this opium in water till it be like new wine. The pomegranate and cherry may be treated in the same way.

In water first this opium relent
Of sape until it have similitude,
Until the budde oute springe of this sarment
Iche VIII day this thing thai efte include.
The pomgarnad wol not this crafte exclude,
As Grekes seyen, the same in Chiritree,
Yf it wol serve, assayed may it be.

De vite nimis lacrimosa.

165.

A vine that weeps the Greeks rend in the stock, and if it still denies its fruit, they take away the largest root and pour on oil-dregs, and pour vinegar underneath.

As vynes that forwepe and turne away
Ffrom fruyte the Grekes wol the stok to tere[1]
And make a wound, and yit if thai withnay
Her fruyt, the fattest roote away thai tere,[2]
Oildregges salt til half decocte on there
Thourgh colde is doon and alle aboute this wounde,
And aisel kene is underkest in grounde.

De Mirtite confecto.

166.

Take myrtle-berries ripe, dried in the shade, and pounded; cover them all close.

Mirtite a Greek comaundeth thus to make:
The mirtes baies ripe, and shadowe drie,
And stamped, unces VIII it is to take
And honge hem in the wyne vessell and wrie
Alle cloos, and longe in it lette hem defie.
Then take hem oute and spende of it. Also
With baies ripe ypuld thus other do:

167.

Others pluck off the berries in dry places on dry days, and tread or press them, and add eight *cotulas* to an *amphora* of wine. Useful as a medicine where styptics stop emission of blood, and in dysentery.

Thai plucke of driest place in daies drie,
And trede, or presse hem faire. Of that thei doo
VIII cotuls in a steine[3] of wynes trie.
This wyne alle medycyne is take unto
Ther stiptik stont ejectyng bloode, and wo
Of wombe or of stomak this wol declyne.[4]
Dissenterik hath eke this medicyne.

[1] lacerant. [2] trahunt. [3] amphora. [4] sle.

De condito vel absinthio vel rosato vel violatio.

168.

Absinthiate, rosate, or violate,
To make a vyne is crafte doon to nature.
Sarmentes (scions) of some gentil vyne ytake
And pocion forsayne in sum mesure
Half full be doon, quyk erthe among undure[1]
As lie[2] is made, and when thai gynneth sprynge
Sette hem as other vynes and uppe brynge.

To give a vine the flavour of absynth, roses, or violets, take generous scions and add the aforesaid potion, and crumble quick earth amongst it.

[1] resolve. [2] lixivium.

MARTIUS.

BOOK THE FOURTH.

De putandis vineis, inserendis et pangendis.

1.

In cold places prune vines until the bud's appearance is suspected; and now is time to graft them when a thick humour distils from them.

At Marche's moone in countree that is colde
Putacion hath his solempnitee.
At large of it in fferyere is tolde,
Suspecte until thaire gemmes gynne be.
Nowe is it tyme hem graffed forto se;
Ffor nowe this vynes, whoso taketh kepe,
Not wattery but thicke humours wepe.

2.

The stems on which you graft are to be solid, not old, nor rent; the grafts solid, buddy, and round. Cut them to the length of two inches, but do not lay bare the pith.

The trunkes sadde in humour that abounde
Unolde, unrende, ygraffed let hem be
With graffes sadde y-gemmed thicke and rounde.
Three eyen is ynough for oon to see.
Two fynger longe let aloute away the tree;
But save uppon that other half the rynde.
Men saithe the pith to bare[1] is not thaire kynde.

3.

Unite the parts carefully, and let the lowest eye fit close to the stem, and bind it with a willow twig, then cover it with clay mixed with chaff, and protect them from sun and wind.

But flessh to flessh and skyn to skyn is doo,
Right to the trunke is sette his lowest eye;[2]
But sette him that he loke awaie therfroo,
And softe a saly twygge aboute him plie.
Then uppon that with chaved cley it wrie,[3]
Ffor sonne and wynde hem make a tegument,
Lest thai in this[4] be shake, in that[5] tobrent.

[1] nudare. [2] oculus. [3] operias. [4] vento. [5] sole.

4.

Whenne tyme is hoote, putte on hem softe at eve
Goode water ofte, that thai may ete and drynke,
And bolde hem uppon hoote that myght hem greve.
When that thaire een gynneth forto unwynk[1]
And thai to brannche, into the lande let synk
A reede right by, and bynde in mariage
Hem to, lest wynde offende her tender age.

Water them in heat to make them bold. When they begin to germinate, stick a reed close to them and tie them to it.

5.

Yit must it be dissolved ever amonge
Oute of this bonde, lest it adolent
Be letted to encrece and wex stronge.
And he[2] to delve aboute is diligent,
And nygh the roote ingraffeth his sarment,
And moolde anoon on every syde it hepeth,
This roote and moolde as nors and moder keepeth.

But it must be loosened now and then, lest, when grown up, it be prevented from increasing. Some graft their cuttings near the root, and heap mould around them.

6.

An other saithe thaire graffyng nygh the grounde
Is best, ther esily thai comprehende;
And preve eke alle the crafte it wol confounde
To graffe in hem that over hie ascende.
Til equinox thaire settyng is not spende
In forowe,[3] in delf,[4] in pastyne,[5] as before,
Is in this booke of vynes taught the lore.

Others say vines should be grafted near the ground, for so they take readily, but it ruins all to graft them high. Till the equinox they may set in furrows, holes, or beds.

De pratis purgandis.

7.

Nowe is it tyme in places that beth colde
The medes forto clense, and hem to kepe.
In places warme eke nowe is holsom holde
The landes fatte and hilles under crepe
As with the plough; but eree hem not to depe.
Bernetes that beth made in Janyveer
Goode tyme it is forto repete hem heer.

In cold places now clean the meadows, and in warm places plough fat lands and hills. Repeat the dressing of fallows that were made in January.

[1] aperire. [2] aliquis. [3] sulco. [4] scrobe. [5] pastino.

De panico et milio serendo.

8.

Sow panic and millet in dry loose land. They will grow in gravel if the earth and air be moist. Five sextarii of seed enough for an acre.

Panyk and mylde in hoote and drie is sowe
As nowe. Light, resolute lande thai desire.
Sone thai forsake a gravell wol thai growe;
But moist bothe erthe and ayer thai ther require,
Land argillose[1] or drie hem sleth for yre,
And weede hem wel, let noo weede in hem stande:
V sexter shall suffice an acre lande.

De cicere serendo.

9.

Both kinds of vetch to be sown this month. It comes up in two days. Keep a bushel of seed for an acre. That sown in autumn is ripe first.

Her either chiche[2] is sowen in this moone,
Ther aier is moist, and lande is ronke and stepe;
But daies tweyne, and uppe it crepeth sone.
Three busshel for an acre lande let kepe.
The Greek saithe, yf lukewarm hem bywepe,
Thai wol be greet; and nygh the see to growe
Thai love, and first is ripe in hervest sowe.

De canabo; de cicera.

10.

Hemp may be sown till the equinox. In February is taught the manner how. Sow black tares, like peas, after one or two ploughings, three or four bushels to an acre.

Til equinoxe is hemp ysowe as nowe,
What lande is beste for it and seedes geson[3]
To sowe in ffeveryere is reson howe.
Nowe cicera the blake is sowe in season
On erthes[4] tweyne or oon sowe hem as peson,
With IIII or III busshel, other with tweyne
Of hem an acre lande me may byspreyne.[5]

De novellis pulverandis vitibus fodiendis.

11.

The earth about young vines to be kept fine and loose till the first of October, to kill weeds and prevent the ground from suffocating the young plants.

Now pulverised beth this vynes yonge,
And so forth til Calendes evermore
Of October, to sley the weedes spronge,
And lest the land the vynes over sore
Constreyne; eke weedes rootes uppe be tore.
Nowe vynes is to delve in places colde,
And stakes make, and bynde hem uppe to holde.

[1] cleyi. [2] cicer. [3] rara. [4] aracionibus. [5] seminare.

12.

And swathe[1] a tender vyne in bondes softe;
Ffor bonde to hardde wol holde it in distresse;
A sadder vyne a bigger stake olofte
Mot holde; a lighter vyne is with a lesse
Stakyng upholde. And whi? For hevynesse
Of shade eke sette hem of tort[2] Aquilone.
An hande or half a foote is goode to done.

And swathe a young vine with soft bands; for too hard a one will distress it. Place the stake (a large one for a strong vine, a smaller for a weak one) towards the North, a hand's breadth or half a foot from the vine, not to shade it.

13.

Eke sum her aged vynes wol repare
And trunke hem of alle hie above grounde.
Unconnyngly thai do, right as thai are.
The Sonne and dewe goothe doune into thaire wounde
That is so wyde, and rotyng it confounde.
A better way for hem I wol declare:
Ablaquiate hem deep, or make hem bare.

Some to renew their old vines cut them off high above the ground; but a better plan is to loosen the earth from the root.

14.

A lite over the knotte inwith the lande
Hem kitte and wrie, and save hem so for drede
Of colde or hoote; but deep yf that it stande
And gentil be, doo this. Or thus I rede
You doo: with gentil graffes hem to sede.
Alle this in places hoote first in this moone,
In places colde is after Idus doone.

Cut them a little over the knot, under the ground, for fear of cold or heat, but only when it is deep and of a good sort. Otherwise, I advise you to graft them with generous cuttings. In warm places this is to be done in the beginning of March, in cold places in the middle of the month.

15.

And umbydelve[3] a drie or seekle[4] vyne,
Putte aske of ooke or vyne aysel amonge,
And poure upon the roote, and olde bryne.
Or graffe hem lowe, and dounging make hem stronge.
On vynes hurte doo goote or shepes dounge,
And plaister it with moolde, eke in the roote
Relented dounge yputte on dothe it boote.

Dig about a sickly vine, and pour upon the root ashes of oak or vine mixed with vinegar and brine. Or graft them low down and strengthen them with dung. Put goat's or sheep's dung upon a vine that has been injured; if the root is hurt, liquid dung will do it good.

[1] liga. [2] versus. [3] circumfodias. [4] egram.

De oleis amurca sanandis, seminariis et rosariis.

16.

Pour oil-dregs upon the root of unhealthy olives. Apply four or six *congii* of it to large trees.

Olyves nowe that oute of helthes dwelle
Oyldregges salt effunde uppon the roote.
Ffor grettest treen, as telleth Columelle,
VI Congeus or IV of it ymmote.[1]
Two basketfull of bene chaf doth boote,
As other seyne, to grettest treen, and olde
Bryne on hem to kest is weel with holde.

17.

If the oleaster be barren, take two boughs of a fruitful tree from the south side; force them through the tree by two holes; cut them off close, and add chaff and clay.

A morter fast is made aboute the tree,
The rootes hidde, and moste in places drie;
And bareyne yf thyne oliaster be,
Take bowes tweyne of treen that fructifie,
But southwarde of the tree theese bowes trie,
And streyne hem throwe the tree by bores two,
And kytte hem by; do chaved cley therto.

18.

If they are too fat drive a stake into the root. Now weed corn again, if it be the custom. Make a seminary of berries and seed, and rose-beds, early in the month.

Or dryve inne elm, or ook, or elles stonys
And plaster hem. To fatte yf that thai be,
A stake anoon into her rootes doone is.
Nowe cornes weded efte is goode to se
Yf it be the use, and frigiditee.
Of seede and baies make the seminary;
Sone in this moone eke make uppe the rosary.

De Carduo.

19.

Now sow the teasle in dunged, loose land, at the waxing of the moon, half a foot asunder.

The garden nowe to tille is best begynne.
The tasul nowe in dogged lande is sowe
And resolute. In fatte beste uppe thai wynne.
The molde,[2] and other suche as diggeth lowe,
Anoie hem not, in harde lande yf thai growe;
To sowe hem in the wexing of the moone,
And half a foote asonder is to doon.

[1] imoveas. [2] talpa.

20.

The tasul seede ynverse is not to sette,
Lest crooked, feint, and hardde of it ascende.
Sette hem not deep; oonly three fyngers mette
On hem; unto the yoint in lande descende,
And hele[1] hem light; eke weede hem ofte anende.
Until the plannte uppe gete and bygly sprynge;
And yeve hem in the heete a waterynge.

Do not set the teasle-seed inverse, nor more than three inches deep. Let the teasle sink in the ground to the joint. Cover them lightly, weed them constantly, and water them.

21.

Breke of the seedes toppe, and thai wol be
Withoute thorn; her seede yf me reclyne
In baume, or nard, or opi,[2] daies thre,
Or juce of roose, eith'r in mastycyne,
Or madefie it so in oil lauryne,
Let drie hem sowe, hem up by oon assent
Thai wol and have odoure like her unguent.

If you break off the points of the seed, they will bear no thorn. Steep the seeds three days in balm, or nard, or opium, or rose-water, or oil of mastic, or laurel, and sow them dry; they will soon grow, and have that odour.

22.

And yerely from the codde awey let take
The planntes, lest thaire moder fainted be.
In other place a borde[3] of hem let make,
But sumdel of the roote on hem thou see,
And hem that shall of seede purvey the
Pulle every blake awaie that thou may finde,
And wrie hem with a shelle other a rynde.

Take the plants every year from the stock, lest it be weakened. Remove them with a part of the root. Among those that are to supply you with seed let there be none black.

23.

Ffor sonne or rayne the seede is wont to sle.
Ffor moldewarpes cattes is to kepe,
To ligge in waite to touche with her cle.
A wesel tame have sum men ther thai crepe,
Hem forto take. An oth'r sumdel deep
Have caves made, and thay, for ferde of sonne
On hem let inne, anoon away beth ronne.

Sun or rain will kill them. Cats are to be kept against moles. Some keep a tame weasel in their haunts. Some make holes, and they run away for fear of the sun let in upon them.

[1] operias. [2] opio. [3] a bedde.

24.

Some fill their holes with red lead and cucumber-juice. Others lay a gren (or snare) to catch them. Now is the time to sow garlic, etc.

Her holes oon wel filleth uppe with wilde
Cucumb'r juce, and dothe with alle rubrike.
A green[1] an oth'r hath for hem ytilde;
To take hem therwithal is not unlike.
Garlic, cunel, eke onyons and ulpike[2]
Nowe sette in places colde, senvey and dyle,[3]
Eke wortes nowe to sowe is grettest skyle.

25.

Now sow hollyhocks, armorace (or wild radish), origan, leeks, bete, lettuce, capers, savory, colocasia, cresses, endive, and radishes.

Now holyhocke is sowe and armorace,
Or arborace that wilde raves[4] are,
And origon nowe plannte him in his place;
Now lekes, betes, letuce, and capare,
Savery, colcase, and cresses; noo man spare
This goldes outher rabes[5] forto sowe;
And bless it; trust in God that alle shal growe.

26.

Now sow melon-seed two feet apart in prepared ground, but steep the seed three days in milk or mead, and set them when dry. Keep them in rose-leaves to make them odorous.

Nowe melon seede two foote atwene is sette
In places well ywrought or pastynate.
But daies thre this seede is goode bewette
In mylk or meth, and after desiccate
Sette hem; thai wol be swete. Eke adorate
To make hem, kepe hem long in leves drie
Of roses, hem thai wol adorifie.

27.

Sow cucumber-seed thin. The furrows to be a foot deep and three feet broad, and let there be eight feet of untilled ground between the furrows. Macerate the seed in ewe's milk and mead.

Cucumber in this moone is sowen rare;
Her forowe a foot of depth, three foote of brede,
And enter[6] forough and forough VIII foote spare
Of leyes,[7] that therin thai forth may sprede.
The weede wol help hem; therof is noo drede.
Thaire seede in ewes mylk[8] and meth to swelle[9]
Wol make hem white, and therof tast and smelle.

[1] laqueum. [2] ulpicus. [3] anetum. [4] rafani. [5] rafanum. [6] inter. [7] crudum. [8] ovillo lacte. [9] macerare.

28.

Thai wol be longe and tendre yf me sette
A broode flatte vessel with water two hande deep
Under; thaire seede therof uppe wol be fette
By rootes, and in lenght away thai creep.
Withouten seede who liketh hem to kepe,
With oil Sabyne enoynte her seede and bray,[1]
Culex an herb and hem therin confray.[2]

To make them long and tender, place a broad flat vessel of water under them, which they will try to reach. To have them without seed, anoint them with Sabine oil and bray them with the herb culex.

29.

Cocumber floure of sum men into a reede,
Ythorled every knotte, is softe ydoo.
The floures stalkes heede with alle his heede
Therin, and passyng longe his fruyte wol goo.
Hit is so ferd of oiles, that therfroo
Hit hoketh yf me sette it nygh ther under,
And turne it wol for fere, yf that it thonder.

Some place the flowers of the cucumber in a reed, of which all the knots are bored through, its stalk and head being hidden therein. It is so afraid of oil that it bends like a hook to avoid it. Also it turns away from thunder.

30.

Cucumber flour eke growing in his vyne
Into sum erthen poote yf that me lede
Made like a man or beest fers or benynge,
The fruite wol have benyngnitee or drede,
As man or beest as hath the potte in dede.
Gorgilianus Marcial doth telle
Alle this; and this of hem saith Columelle.

If the flower of cucumber be trained into a pot made in the shape of man or beast, it will take the same form, as say Marcial and Columella.

31.

In glade lande dounged yf we have the brere[3]
Or ferule, after hervest whenne oon with
The nyght is day, lette cutte hem of right nere
The grounde, and with a pryk of tree the pith
Pyke oute, and make hem holgh: eke doo in sith
Donnge and cucumber seede; therof wol the
Ffruyte that withsaide[4] may not in coldes be.

Cut off briars and cane after the autumnal equinox close to the ground, and with a wooden pin pick out the pith, and put in dung and cucumber-seeds, and the fruit will flourish undeniably.

[1] tere. [2] confricant. [3] rubos. [4] denegare.

32.

Asparagus is sown about the first of April in small beds made by line a foot and a half or three feet deep, dung it well, weed it, and cover with straw, which may be taken off in early spring.

Sperage is sowe aboute Aprill kalende
In redes smale ymade by lyne in wete
And fatte lande, so that seedes who descende
In half a foote or three therin thai lete,
And sprede on it above of dounge a shete,
And weede hem wel, or kest upon hem stre
Til prime veer; ther may it take of be.

33.

The asparagus will grow in three years. A shorter way is to grow them from spawn. Put as much seed as three fingers will hold in each hole of rich, well-dunged mould

Therof Sperage after thre yere wol sprynge.
This tyme is longe. A shorter way ther is
Thees herbes of ther sponges uppe to brynge,
Ffor thai wol fructifie anoon; and this
Ys crafte of makyng sponges and not mys.
Doo seede as moche as three fyngers wol holde
In everie hoole of fatte and dounged moolde.[1]

34.

These seeds will unite in one root, or spawn. This also has a delay of two years with dunging and weeding. It is better, therefore, to buy than keep them so long in the ground.

This seedes wol connecte until oon roote.[2]
This calle[3] a sponge. Eke this hath taryinge.
The semynaire in two yere must it roote,[4]
Ynourisshed with dounge and ofte wedynge,
From hervest equinoxe in his planntynge,
And eke in veer: but it is lesse vice
To beye hem then so longe in lande cherice.

35.

In dry soil set them in furrows moderately deep, but in wet land near the top. The first asparagus is to be broken off. Pulling them might remove the spawn. But afterwards they may be pulled.

In solghes[5] sette hem myddel deepe in drie
Lande, and in wete land in the summitee.[6]
Above humour wol make hem multiplie,
So that it passe and not abydinge be.
The first Sperage of broken is to se.
Thaire sponge, yf that me pulde hem, myght remewe:
But after hem to pulle is not to eschewe.

[1] terre. [2] radicem. [3] clepe. [4] radicare. [5] sulcis. [6] summitate.

36.

The eyen[1] of thaire germynacion
With pulling wol disclose after the ferme[2]
Yere, and to breke hem occupacion
That tyme is nought: for thi sette it to ferme,[3]
Places feconnde hemselven closeth ferme[4]
By brekyng so. In veer is thaire servynge.
Reserve in hervest hem that seede shall brynge.

Pulling will make them disclose their buds after the first year; and to break them then is no benefit. Therefore be assured that fruitful places are closed by breaking.

37.

Nowe rue is sowe in lande that is plesaunt.[5]
Sprynge aske on hem, and contente thai abide;
And places hie is thaire desire to haunt,
Ther humour may awaywarde from hem slide.
Seede yf me sette eke that thaire leves hide
Enclosed, frote hem by and by with hande;
And smale yf seedes be, springe hem in lande,

Sprinkle ashes on rue, and sow it on high ground where the moisture may run from it. If the seed is hidden in the leaves, rub it out. If the seed be small,

38.

And overwrie hem after with a rake.
The caules that of seede encluse uppe wynde
Wol bygger be, but latter thai awake.
Their bowes puld with parcel of the rynde
In veer better then planntes shall thou fynde.
Transplannte alle hoole the plannte, and it is slaye.[6]
And other benes bowes all to braye.[7]

rake it in. Cabbages grown from seed will be larger but slower. A branch pulled off in spring with a piece of the stalk will be better than a plant.

39.

And therin, or in stalons[8] forth thei sette
Her seede, and best for hem is solute lande.
Thay sayen eke stolon seede is but the bette.
In figtree shadowe gladdest wol it stande.
Ne delve awaye the weede, but pull with hande.
Fful ferd it is for touching of unclene
Wymmen; and sluttes I suppose it mene.

They do best in a loose soil. Stolen seed is said to thrive best. They shun the touch of sluts.

[1] oculus. [2] primum. [3] ad firmam. [4] firme. [5] aprico. [6] occiditur. [7] contundunt. [8] bulbes.

40.

Coriander grows best from old seed.

Til Octob'r from the ingresse of this moone
Ys Coriander (sette) is fatty londe,
And thelder seed, the better wol it doone.
In lene soil also thay wol up stonde.
They were eke glade good humor when thay fonde
With every kind of wortes wol thay growe.
This gourdes[1] in this moone also beth sowe.

41.

Long gourds grow from the seeds which are in the neck of the pod.

Ffatte soil thai love ydounged, molsh,[2] humyde.
In gourdes this is goodly, that the longe
Gourdes growe of the necke seede, and wyde
Gourdes up of the botteme seed beth spronge:
And greet oute of the wombe seedes honge;
Inverse her seede to this entente let sowe,
And helppe hem up with rayles, as thay growe.

42.

Hang up the seed till winter, or they will rot. Blite, once rooted, lasts long words (*quære* worlds, ages).

Gourdes for seede til Wynter honge stille;
Hem then in sonne or smoke it is to drie.
And elles wol thai rote, and that were ille.
Iche erthe ywrought nowe blite wol multiplie.
And weede it not; hit self wol seedes strie;
That though the list, yf it be oons spronge,
Thou shalt it not destroie in wordes longe.

43.

Pelitur (*serpyllum*) grows best near the water's edge. Anise and cummin to be sown now.

Nowe pelitur to plannte is and to sowe,
But in his age it wol be bowed feire,
By ponde, or laake, or wynche if that it growe
So by the brynke. Anyes in gladsom ayer
And comyn sowe hem now ther is theire leire.
And helppe hem wel with humour and dounging.
Nowe cometh the crafte pomgarnat up to brynge.

[1] cucurbita. [2] solutam.

44.

De malo Punico.

In Aprille and in Marche in tempur lande
Pomgarnattree is sette, in hoote and drie
In Novemb'r this tree loveth to stande
In chalky, lenysshe lande to multiplie.
To stande in fatte lande wol it not denye.
Good eke for it beth regions hoote.
Ffor settyng plannte is best pulde from the roote.

Hot soil best for pomegranates. For setting pull plants from root.

45.

In dyvers wyse alle though it may be sette,
To sette is beste abough a cubit longe,
Clenliche ycutte iche ende an hafte greett,[1]
And sette it in the delf so lenyng wronge.[2]
But first her either ende in swynes dounge
Ywonden[3] be, or with a mal in hande
That softe is smyte hem ynne, and let hem stande.

The plants to be a cubit long of a hand's breadth, driven in obliquely with a soft hammer.

46.

The bough to sette is best in germynyng,
To putte eke in the roote of hem III stonys
Ys crafte to kepe her fruytes from clevyng.
But hem to sette enversed nought to doone is.
To wattir hem eke nowe and nowe[4] eftsones
Wol make hem soure: in landes that beth drie
Thai wol be swete enough and multiplie.

Three stones put into the root will prevent the fruit from cleaving. Frequent watering will make them sour.

47.

Yit watter hem yf over drie it be.
In hervest and in veer hem umbidelve.
Yf thai be soure, eke stamppe a quantitee
Of laseris with wyne, hem two hemselve,
And helde it in the croppe, or umbidelve
The rootes, and dryve ynne a firbronde[5] pynne.
Other so dolven kesteth seefroth[6] ynne.

Laser (benzoin) with wine poured on the top is a remedy against sourness; or drive a peg of firewood through the roots, or cast sea weeds on them.

[1] Manubrii crassitudine. [2] oblique. [3] oblinatur. [4] assidue. [5] tede. [6] algam.

48.

Others make a compost, and put a stone of it on the roots thrice a year, or oil dregs and sea-weed twice a month.

Summen therwith doth asse and swynes dounge;
And yf the floure holde not upon the tree,
With water mynge uryne observed longe.
Thaire roote on this oon yere doo tymes three.
Oon stene atte oon tyme is goode quantitee.
Oildregges eke is goode, outhir seefroth,
And twye a moneth kest on hem this broth.

49.

Inclose them in lead, or in an adder's skin; if they crack, place a stone under the head root, or sow squills, or twist tow round them as they hang.

Or thus: the flouring tree trunk in leed
Enclude, or in an edder skynne it wynde;[1]
And yf thai chappe,[2] a stoone under the heed
Roote is to doo, to sowe eke sqille is kynde
On every syde: eke hem doo writhe or wynde[3]
In togh[4] upon thaire tree right as thai honge;
And incorrupt thai wol been alle yere longe.

50.

Ox-gall, or a brass pin, or swine's dung keeps off worms.

For wormes bathe her roote in oxe galle;
And doute it not anoon thai wol be dede.
Or with a brason pynne of scrape hem alle.
And hardde it is yf thai therafter brede.
Or ass uryne and swynes thost let fede
Hem therwithall; and thai wol die or flee.
Now se thaire craft for hem mervel to see.

51.

It will make their grains white if you mix a fourth part of gypsum with clay and chalk.

Kest lye and aske ofte (up)on the trunke aboute,
And thai wol be right gladde and fructifie.
Eke Marcial affermeth oute of doute
That greynes white in hem this crafte will die:[5]
To cley and chalk the firth part intrie
Of gipse, and doo the rootes to III yere,
And this wol make hir greynes white and clere.

[1] involve. [2] crepent. [3] torquere. [4] in tenacibus. [5] colorare.

52.

To make hem of a myrous magnitude,
Ley doune an erthen potte beside her tree
Oon bough therin with oon floure let enclude,
But to a stake ybounden must it be
Ffor lepyng out: this potte ycovered se.
By hervest wol thi potte this apple fille.
If this be soothe, the craft is not full ille.

It will make them of wondrous magnitude if you enclose one blossom on a bough in a pot tied to a stake, to prevent its getting out, and covered.

53.

With juce of portulake[1] and tytymalle
Evenly myxt, or thenne the budde oute sprynge,
Enointe the trunkes of this trees alle,
And manyfold of fruyte uppe wol thai brynge,
In bowes of it self is his graffynge.
Devyde hem that pith[2] be fro pith serjointe.[3]
In thende of March thaire graffyng is in pointe.

Anoint the trunks with purslain or thithymallus ere the buds shoot. Graft it upon itself, pith to pith, in March.

54.

The freshest graffe is in the stook to doo
In hast, lest tarying his humour drie
That nys but smal; to kepe hem longe also,
Let pitche her pedifeet,[4] and honge hem hie.
Or plucke hool into see water trie
Hem feire, or into oildregges hoote hem deep.
Or this or that III dayes let hem steep.

Graft them quickly, pitch the stalks, and suspend them; or pluck them whole and plump them them in sea-water.

55.

And after drie hem in the sonne, a nyghtes
Leve hem not throute, and then in places colde
Lette honge hem uppe. To use hem thus to dight is:
In water fresshe II daies be thay wolde,
Thai wol be fresshe and fyne her on be bolde.
Or ley hem feire in chaf that never oon other
Touche, and ther thai beeth save ynough, my Brother.

Leave them not out of doors anights. When you wish to use them keep them two days in fresh water.

[1] pusillane. [2] medulla. [3] sejuncta. [4] pediculos.

56.

Or make a trench and place over it a piece of bark of the same length to keep off moisture.

Or make a diche in longe, and take a rynde
As long as it; in that the stortes doo
Of pomgarnat before and not behinde.
Then turne it on this diche enversed soo
That thay may honge and noo lande come hem too.
This rynde hem wol from alle humor defende.
Other hem drye in cley, and so suspende.

57.

And bury a jar half full of gravel in the open air; take pomegranates with their stalks, and press them in with canes or elder-branches.

Eke whelve a seriol[1] ther-oute[2] that have
Gravel upp to the myddes, pomes take
The tenes[3] with to stande in cannes save,
Or holgh ellerstickes is goode to make
And fyngers IIII up from the gravel stake
Hem so. Eke good it is to kepe hem longe,[4]
That stalkes be not left on hem to longe.[5]

58.

Or suspend them in a jar half filled with water, or keep them in a tub of barley.

Or in a seriol[6] half water fild
So licoure touche hem not let hem suspende,
And cloos it faste in wynde lest thai be spild.
Or lette a tonne of barly hem comprende
Uchoon from other, close it til thou spende.
Thus kepeth men this fruyte in dyvers wyse.
And wyne to make of hem this is the gyse:

59.

To make pomegranate wine, press the ripe grains in a basket of palm, and after boiling, mix six pints with a pound of honey.

The greynes ripe ypurged fresshe and clene
Putte in a poche[7] of palme and with the wrynge
Let presse hem, boile hem half awaie bydene.
Whenne thai beth colde in pitched vessellinge
And cleyed close hem up. But that boilynge
Of sum is leeft. Six sexter with a pounde
Of honey meddel thai, and save it sounde.

[1] seriolam. [2] subdivo. [3] tenacibus. [4] diu. [5] longe.
[6] seriola. [7] fiscella.

60.

In March orenge is sette in sondry wyse:
In sede, in bough, in branches,[1] and in clave,[2]
Thai loveth lande that rare is and divise.
Eke after heete and rayne thai ever crave.
But greynes sowe, and thus thou shalt hem have:
Lande dolven two feet deep with askes mynge,
And bedde it smal for wedyng and wattrynge.

Oranges love soil that is fine and crumbling. If you sow pips, dig two feet deep, and mix ashes with the soil in small beds.

61.

And make a delf with hande an handfull longe,
And doune the pointe thre greynes therin doo;
Weete hem daily; sone upp thai wol spronge;
Soonest yf luke water be kest therto;
And herbes next the brannches weede hem froo.
Her tyme of transplanntyng is III yere age.
A bough yf that thou sette a foote him gage;

Put three pips in a trench a palm long, and water daily. If you plant a bough let it be a foot deep.

62.

No lenger, lest hit rote:[3] and of the clave
Is best an handful greet in crassitude,
Her eith'r ende ysmoothed[4] is to have,
And cubital let make her longitude.
The prickes[5] kitte awaie and thinges rude,
But save the gemmes in the summyte,
That hope of future germynyng may be.

Not more, lest it rot. If you plant a clave (or truncheon) let it be the thickness of a hand and a cubit in length.

63.

And diligenter folk in oxen dounge
Encludeth her either extremitee.
With seefroth[6] other have hem umbiyonge.[7]
An other list ycleyed hem to se.
The brannches smaller shorter must thai be;
In like maner eke drench it as a clave,
But landes tweyne is longe ynough to have.

More diligent folk wrap both ends in dung.

[1] tales. [2] clava, ramo manubrii magnitudine. [3] putrescat.
[4] levigatum. [5] aculeos. [6] alga. [7] circumdederunt.

64.

In cold countries they must be inclosed in high walls to thrive. Cover them with straw in winter,

The clave ysette axeth noo spaces large
Hoote, ronke, and weete he loveth nygh the see.
Though treen upholde him not, he geveth no charge:
In countree cold and tild yf thai shall be
Men must hie enclyse as forto thee,
Or sette southe. Eke in the wynter season
Covert of stre thaire coldes must appeson.

65.

and uncover them in summer. Plant them in hot soils in autumn, in July or August n cold lands.

Whenne Somer cometh, unclose hem, thai beth sure.
Eke braunche and clave in landes ferventest
Atte hervest forto sette, as doo thi cure.
At Juill and Aust in landes chillingest,[1]
And daily make hem dronken hardiest.
I am expert so that thai forto greet[2]
In magnitude, and brynge in pomes greet.[3]

66.

The vines of gourds burnt make useful ashes for oranges.

The gourde[4] is goode nygh this orenge ysowe,
Whoos vynes brent maath askes for hem sete.
And delvynge ofte enyoieth hem to growe,
And to provyde of pomes goode and greet.
But here and there the drie awaye surtreet.
Hoot lande Aprill, and cold in May is kynde
To graffe hem lowe in trunke and not in rynde.

67.

Graft them on pears and mulberries. In Assyria there are oranges never without fruit, Martial says, and in Sardinia also.

In per tree graffe hem, and molbury[5] tree.
Oon in an erthen potte the graffes deeth.
Eke Marcial affermeth that ther be
Of hem in Assiry that never beeth
Withouten fruyte. Best witteness is that seeth.[6]
"I saugh," he saith, "inwith my territory
In Sardyne oothinge wel worthi memorie":

[1] frigidissimis. [2] grandescere. [3] magna. [4] cucurbita. [5] moro. [6] interpositio.

68.

There humour is, eke erthe and aier wel warme,
That fruite to fruite fro gree to gree succedeth,
That children yonge her eldron after harme,
The grene after the riper fruyte proceedeth.
The floures sewe as fruites grene hem ledeth.
Thus maketh thai of thaire fertilitee
In helping nature a feire eternytee.

Where there is moisture and a warm air, there is a continual succession from one degree to another, flower pursuing fruit, as children *harm* after parents.

69.

Thai sayen thaire bitter margh[1] wol channge sweete
Her seede in meth[2] III daies yf me steep,
Other in ewes mylk[3] as longe hem wete.
In ffeveryere sum men eke bore hem deep;
Into the trunke upwarde humoure to weep
Out suffre thai until the fruyte be fourmed;
The myddel to sweetnesse is thus confourmed.

The bitter pulp is made sweet by steeping in mead or ewe's milk. Some bore the trunk.

70.

Nigh alle the yere men keep it on the tree.
Thai keep it bette in cloos vessel ydoone.
With levy bowes puld eke let hem be
By nyght, and under cloude yhed the moone,
And privily disposed up ichoone.
Sum eke clere iche of hem in his vessell,
And in a place of derknesse keep hem well.

To keep, they should be gathered at night, with leafy boughs, when the moon is hid by clouds.

71.

Hem sum in cedur scobe, and sum in stre
Mynute, and sum in smal chaf wol witholde.
Nowe meddellers[4] in hoote lande gladdest be,
So it be moist; thai come also in cold
Lande sondy fatnesse rathest yf it holde,
With stones myxt it stont in argillous
Lande, and with gravell myxt in glareous.

Some keep them in cedar-shavings, or straw, or chaff. Medlars grow in clay, mixed with stones or sandy gravel.

[1] medulla [2] mulso. [3] ovillo lacti. [4] mespilus.

72.

Medlars increase slowly. They love cutting and frequent watering.

In Novemb'r and Marche her brannches[1] sette
In dounged lande subact, her eith'r ende
In dounge ydoone. Thaire increment to fette
Is ferre, and unbydelvyng wol hem mende.
Kittyng thai love and lite humour to spende
Ofte in the drought. The seede also is sowe,
But hope is longe on it her fruytes growe.

73.

A brass pin will drive off worms. Too much quicklime would make them unfruitful.

A pynne of brasse the wormes of dryve,
Or oildregges, or mannes olde uryne,
Or quyk lime, lite of that, lest it unthryve.
Or kest on water of decoct lupyne.
For bareynnesse yet men from that declyne.
Mynge askes of vyne and dounge, and hem infounde
Into the roote, and thai wol be fecounde.

74.

Vinegar and ashes mixed with red ochre kill ants. If the fruit fall off, drive a piece of the root into the centre of the trunk.

Aisel and askes tempred with rubrike
Ykest on hem sleeth doune this Anntes alle.
Oute of the roote a pece[3] it is to pike
Yf that the fruyte myslike and from hem falle.
This pece a mydde his trunke it is to malle.[4]
And in himself graffe hem in ffeberyere,
In mele also, eke graffe hem in the pere.

75.

They must be grafted in the trunk, not in the bark, which is lean and weak. To keep they must be plucked unripe.

The graffe is to be take amydde his tree.
The toppes vicious are often sene.
In trunkes cloven guaffed must thai be
Not in the ryndes; thai beth fastyng lene.
To keep, ypuldde not mellowy but grene
Wolde be; longe on the tree thai wol endure.
Eke thai in pitched pottes kept are sure.

[1] taleas. [2] sere. [3] frustrum. [4] percute.

76.

Suspence in rule hem keep with pusk condite
Ypuldde in myddes of a day serene.
Or in smal chaf asonder hem alite.
Semymature also me may hem glene,[1]
And daies v in salt water hem lene.
In-founde hem then until thai swymme, and depe
In hony this fruyte ripe ynough thou kepe.

Suspend them in a row, seasoned with posca; or separate them in chaff; or macerate them in salt-water.

77.

The fige to plannte in hoote lande best is holde
In Novemb'r; and there is tempre lande
In Feberyere; and there as lande is colde
In Marche, or in Aprill it doo to stande.
A toppe of it to sette other a wonde
Ys holdon best right in Apriles ende,
When grene, and juce upon hem dothe ascende.

The fig-tree, if grown from a cutting or a wand (stake), to be planted at the end of April when it is green.

78.

The planntes sette is stones to sustene;
And dounged lande upon the rootes spende;
And cannys knottes pike oute hem bydene.
The tender cropp for colde herwith defende.
In places colde a topp, III branched thende
Of II yere age or III towarde the sonne,
I cutte and sette as here is taught, is wonne.

Stones are to be placed on the plants, and they are to be defended from cold by split canes.

79.

The greyn inwith the grounde is so to stonde
That graffes III on erthe aboven goon;
But cleve it softe yf that thou sette awonde,
And in this clifte do feire a litel stoone.
In fferyere and Marche myself aloone
In Italie haue sette fige planntes greete,
And right that yere eke of thaire fruite eete.

The plant is so to stand in the ground that three grafts may appear. But if you plant a wand (stake), cleave it and insert a stone.

[1] colligere.

80.

Plants sparingly knotted lack fertility.

But hem I sette in wel pastyned lande,
And thai tributed with felicitee.
The knotty plannte is best; for thai that stande
Yknotted scars lacketh fertilitee.
And thai that in the semynary be
Matured wel and plannted so wol sprynge
Upp feire, and pomys gentilest forth brynge.

81.

Some place the fig-plant in a bulb of squill.

A bulbe of sqylle eke summen wol devyde,
And ther into this plannte of fig-tree trie,
And bynde it so therto that it abyde.
Thai love spaces large and delves hie,
And landes that beth hardde, and smal and drie.
To savoure wel in sharpe and stony lande,
And almoost every where eke may thai stande.

82.

Those that grow in cold places, having little sap, do not last until the hot weather, and it is best to use them when they are green and of sharp taste.

Thoo that in hilles growe or places colde
Have litel mylk; for thi thai may not dure
Til it be hoote; and best her use to holde
As thai beth grene and greet, of savor pure
Argute ynough; but fatter fige and sure
To kepe in hoot lande and in feld is spronge.
Thaire kyndes to reherce it is to longe.

83.

All the kinds of figs are cultivated in the same manner. One kind is called *carica*. Another is *præcoqua*, which does best in cold places. In very hot lands the late fig is best.

Sufficeth this, that all have oon culture.
And as the carike hath, yeve hem distannce.
In places passyng colde it is moost sure
Precox to plannte, her fruyte thai soone enhance
Er shoures come; eke it wol moost avannce
In landes that beth estyvous for heete
The figtree latly riping forto gete.

84.

Hit joyeth dolven ofte, and it to dounge
In hervest is availle; dounge of the mewe[1]
Is best for hem. The roted and mys spronge
Let kitte hem of, and so that thai may sewe
A broode by grounde. Her taste is eke eschewe
In places weet, and hem therof to boote
Kest askes on thaire circumcised roote.

Dung from the aviary is best for them. Cut off decayed and ill-grown branches, so that the tree may spread laterally. Cast ashes on the roots when cut round, to cure the flavour.

85.

Sum men sette amonge hem caprifige
Tree, that it nede not for remedie
To honge on every tree that trees fige.
In Juyn, as sonne is hiest, to caprifie
The fig-tree is, that is to signifie
The figges[2] grene of caprifigtree rende[3]
With tree made like a sawe on hem suspende.

Some plant the wild-fig amidst figs instead of hanging its fruit on every tree. Caprify when the sun is highest in June.

86.

Ffor lacke of that, a yerde of southernwoode
Let honge upp that; or this: take rammes hornys,
Kest hem aboute her rootes, thai beth goode,
Or callum that in Elmes leves borne is;
Thaire abundance as goode as rammes horne is.
Or thus: the turgent trunke let scarifie,
That humour effluent oute of it hie.

Or hang on it a branch of southern-wood; or put ram's horns or *callum* on the roots; or scarify the roots.

87.

To make hem save from wormes sette a bough
Of terebynt, other a birche stalk.
Do that with figtree planntes in the slough[4]
Enverse, and wormes in hem wol not walke.
Or brason scrapes oute of everie dalke
Hem scrape; oildregges oon, and olde wyne
Another to thaire rootes wol reclyne.

Against worms place an inverted bough of turpentine or birch in the trench. Remove the worms with brazen scrapers from every hole (dalk).

[1] aviario. [2] grossos. [3] pertusos. [4] scrobe.

88.

Clay, oil, or quick lime placed in their nests, or red ochre with pitch and butter on the trunk, or Coracine pitch hung on the tree, are considered remedies against ants.

Oon useth cley,[1] an other oil, and he[2]
With quyk lym wol her dennes have for doo,
Yf anntes unto thayme ennoyes be,
Rubrike with pitche and butter must be doo
The trunke aboute, and utter wol thai goo.
Pitche coratyne upp hanged in the tree
Ffor anntes, saithe an other, wol see.

89.

If the fig-tree cast its fruit, oil-dregs, or red ochre, or river-crabs, or rue, or sea-weed, or a scythe used for lupines, are accounted remedies.

Yf figtree cast his fruite, oildregges oon,
Rubrike an other watermyxt wol doo
Upon the tree, the thridde is forth ygoon,
The floode-crabbe and a braunche of rue also
Upp hongeth he. Seefroth the firthe is goo
To honge upp, and the vth he saithe a sithe
Made for lupyne is upp to honge aswithe.

90.

Or bore the roots, and stick a wedge in every bore, or score the rind with an axe. When the leaves begin lop off the tops.

An other saieth the rootes shal be bored,
A wegge in every boore eke shal be steke
The rynde an other hath with axes scored.
But when the leves gynneth oute to breke,
Of figes fatte and fele it is to speek.
Right as thai first begynne in germynynge,
Thaire highest topp choppe of for any thinge,

91.

Or that which grows from the middle. To make them continue long ripe, cut off the grapes when as large as beans. To ripen them, anoint the fruit with oil, onions, and pepper when they wax red.

Or choppe of that amydwarde in the tree.
And premature yf that the list elonge,
Thaire grosses, whenne as greet as benes be,
So take hem of. Eke yf the thinke hem longe[3]
Unripe, in oil and juce of stalons longe
With pepir myxt ennoynt her pomes, whenne
Thaire grosses rody wexing me may kenne.

[1] bitumen. [2] tertius. [3] din.

92.

And in Aprill a figtree graffed is
Under the rynde, and if the tree be yonge.[1]
The cloven stok to graffe is not amys,
And wrie hem fest, ther into yonge.[2]
Eke next the grounde ykitte wol sonnest fonge.
Men graffe in Juyn, oon yere olde graffe is take
And more or lesse, as nought is to forsake.

Graft figs in April under the bark, or, if young, in the cleft stock, and cover them close (lest wind) get in. They take best near the ground.

93.

And in Aprill figtreen inoculate
May best be there as drie landes be,
And eke in Juyll thaire lande is mediate.
Atte October in luke lande pletcheth[3] he.
In caprifige and in mulberry tree
Figtree men graffeth forto multiplie,
And oon wol use a graffe, an oth'r the eye.[4]

Fig-trees may be budded in April in dry land, and in July where the land is middling. Another grafts in October in tepid land.

94.

Eke figges grene in hony may me keep
So thai ne touche, Outher in gourdes grene
Make everie fige a dover into creep,
And that was cut of close it after clene,
And honge hem ther no fir ne smoke is sene.
A fresah potte on hem sevred pitcheth ynne,
And dothe this potte swymme in a tonne of wyne.

Keep green figs in honey, or in a green gourd. Hang them where no fire or smoke is. Put them in a fresh pot and make it swim in wine.

95.

And Marcial saith men in dyvers wyse
Her figges keep, and oon for everichoone,
As campaine hem kepeth, shall suffice.
On fleykes brede and drie hem is to doone
And yet al softe in baskettes repone.
And in an oven hoote upon III stonys
For brynnyg it this figgy basket doon is.

One method of keeping is sufficient, as in Campania: spread them on broad, dry crates, and lay them whilst soft in baskets in an oven, upon three stones to prevent burning.

[1] novella. [2] introsat. [3] propagat. [4] oculo.

96.

When baked, place them hot in a jar pitched and covered, their leaves being laid between them and the pot. In rain dry them in the house on hot ashes.

Whenne thai beth bake, alle hoote into a stene
Lette hem be pressed pitched and ywrie,
Thaire leves doon the potte and hem betwene.
For rayne in sonne yf thou ne maist hem drie
Hoote askes may this fleykes under strie
In house in stede of sonne, and dried so
In chistes smale or coffyns hem doo.

97.

Plant fig-tree cuttings. To make one tree bear diverse fruits take two boughs, a black and a white, and twine them together.

Of figtree toppes planntes nowe thay make,
And dyvers fruite oon figtree forth to brynge,
Two bowes, oon blaak and oon white, thai take
And bynde and wethe[1] hem so that germynyng
Comyxt upp goo: thus sette hem forto spryng
In moist ydounged lande annexed so
That the een[2] germinannt togeder go.

98.

Thus united they bear fruit of different colours in divided unity. Now graft pears, apples, service trees, quince, etc.; also pistacia and pine-apples.

Thay uned thus fruite of dyvers coloure
Upbryng in this dyvysed unytee.
This peres graffe and pomes sweet or soure,
As serve or quyns, plumme and mulbyry tree.
The IX^th^ Calende of Aprille doon this be.
Pistacia is graffed nowe to growe
In colde lande, and pynapul seede is sowe.

99.

De comparandis bobus, tauris et vaccis.

Now is the time to buy oxen, or to prepare for use those you have; for they are now lean and you see what they are.

And tyme is nowe thyne oxen to be bought.
And be thai bought or of thi propretee,
Hem nowe to greithe is goode for ought or nought.
Now be thai lene, and sheweth as thai be,
And light to tame her contumacitee.
Ther are in hem certayne signes spectable
Which is to eschewe, and which is profitable.

[1] torquent. [2] oculi.

100.

Take oxen yonge, ylymmed grèet and square,
Ychested sadde, in brawnes rysing greet,
Whoos fronnte is crispe and glaade, large eres are,
Thaire lippes and thair een blacke as geet,
With hornes stronge and streght is goode to gete,
Compact a runcle necke, dewlapped syde
Unto the kne, and nosed upwarde wyde.

Great limbs, firm chest, rising muscles, curly forehead, large ears, black as jet, straight horns, brawny neck, ample dewlap, wide nostrils.

101.

Yshuldred wyde is goode, an huge brest,
No litel wombe, and wel oute raught the side,
The leendes broode, playne bak and streght,
The thies sadde and senowy, not to syde,
With greet cleen, and tailes longe and wide,
The body thourgh yheered, thicke and breef.
The rede coloure is best, and broune is leef.

Wide shoulders, large breast and stomach, sides stretched out, thighs firm and sinewy, not too wide, hoofs large, tail long, the whole body covered with short hair, red or brown.

102.

Bette is to take of contree then of straunge,
Ther as with soil or aires qualitee
Thai be not tempted as to fynde a chaunge.
Or thus: take hem that of lyke countree be.
And of alle othər this is forto see,
That even strengthed thou togedir dresse,
The feebeller lest that the stronge oppresse.

Better to take them from the neighbourhood, that they may not want a change: or, at least, let all be from the same country, and of equal strength.

103.

Thaire thewes is to see that thai be meek,
Quyk, and aferdde of clamoure and of gode,[1]
And ever appetent metes to seek.
The fodder grene is best as for thaire foodè.
For faute of that gete othər thinges goode,
And fodder hem as thai beth sette on werk.
For boles eke now tyme is forto kark.

See that their tempers be meek, afraid of noise and the goad, and always ready to eat.

Time to care for bulls.

[1] stimulo.

104.

Bulls to be tall, large limbed, not too old, with stern face, brawny neck, small horns, stomach narrow (qy. streyt). Choose cows high chested,

Take bulles that beth high, ylymmed huge,
Of myddel age, and rather yonge then olde,
A ferdfull face, his neck in many a ruge[1]
Yfretted greet, and litel hornes wolde
He have, ywombed strerte is likely holde.
The kyen also the tyme it is to trie.
Doo cheese hem that be chested huge and hie.

105.

high-headed, with large stomachs, fair, black horns, hairy ears, wide dewlaps, great tails, lytle hoofs, black, short thighs. Let them calve from three till ten years, not earlier.

For heded hie and wombed longe and wyde
Black horned feire, and een greet and blake
Wel hered eres, and dewlappes syde,
With tailles greet, and litel cleen thou take
Blake hered theyes short, I undertake
That goode are thai calvyng[2] from III yere olde
Til x is best, and other with noo holde.

106.

Carefully remove the old. Greek notions on the subject.

Thyne olde away to doo be diligent,
To werk or what thou wilt, and take in yonge.
The Greekes sayen that the lift[3] instrument,
The lift stoone of this bulles bestes stronge,
Knytte him fast in his purce and let him honge
In coitu, and he shall gender males,
And his right stoones up knytte genderes females.

107.

In winter keep the herds near the sea; in summer where there are bushes and herbs.

But in this caas thai mosten been abstened
From generacions libertee
Til thai therto be verray hoote for tened.
And have thi drove in wynter nygh the see
In places glade; in hilles may it be
In Somer, namely thaire as bosshes growe
And herbes for thaire fosteryng ynowe.

[1] toris. [2] MS. calvyny. [3] sinistrum.

108.

Though thai be better fedde aboute floode,
Yet luke water best helpeth thaire feture.[1]
Rayne water luke in lakes that is goode
For hem: floode water colde is in nature.
This droves may the Winter cold endure
Theroute all Winter thourgh, yf it be nede.
But for thi kyen incalf it is to drede.

Rain-water in pools is best for them; for it is warmer than river-water. The herds may be out in the cold all the winter, but not cows in calf.

109.

Lest thai have wronge, let make hem closes wyde,
Thaire stalles eke beth of utilitee
With stones paved well from syde to syde,
Or gravelled, eke flored may thay be
With cley, and lenyng sumdel so that the
Humour may passe. Eke southwarde stande it, colde
Blastes sumthyng object eke from hem holde.

Let them have wide enclosures, paved or gravelled, or floored with clay, sloping to let off the moisture. Let them stand southward, with something to withstand cold blasts.

110.

Exon may nowe be tamed three yeer olde;
That atte v yeres age is harde to doo.
Thaire tamyng is by the heed hem to holde
While thai beth yonge, and stroke hem to and to
With hande, and make afore her stalles so
Enlarged rowme outewarde when thai beth wende,
That noothing hem afere, or ought offende.

Oxen to be tamed at three years by holding their heads and stroking them with the hand. Leave room before their stalls that when they go out nothing may frighten them.

111.

And footes VII longe thaire stakes stonde
To teye hem to: but fully hem to tame
Chese out the feirest day that may be fonde
There noo tempest or thing is worthi blame.
Now bringe hem oon and oon to yoke by name,
And yf thai be rebel, so let him stonde
Fastyng oon day and nyght in yokes bonde.

Let there be stakes seven feet long to tie them to. On a fine day bring them one by one to the yoke. If they rebel keep them fasting in the yoke a day and a night.

[1] calvyng.

112.

Caress them, and approach them in front, stroke them on the nose and back, sprinkling wine upon them. If they begin to kick or butt, the habit remains with them.

Now glose hem feire, and bryng hem not behinde,
But right afore of metes sum likyng,
And strook hem nose and bake, eke then is kynde
Cleer[1] wyne on hem alle esily to sprynge.
But warre the horne and heles lest thai flynge
A slappe to the. Atte this if thai begynne
And take effecte therfro thai wol not twynne.

113.

When tamed rub their mouths with salt, and put three pieces of salted fat, each a pound weight, in their throat. A pint of wine given with a horn tames them in three days. Others work them gently at first on land already ploughed.

Thus tamed, her palate and mouthes frote
With saltes, and salt grees pounde peces[2] take,
And three of hem putte in thyne exon throte.
A sexter wyne inwith an horne let shake
In daies three thaire raginge wol aslake.
And other tempte hem frist on werkes smale,
In ereed lande the plough as forto hale.

114.

A shorter way is to yoke the wild ox to a tame one, and if he lie down in the furrow, only bind his feet.

A shorter waie—the wilde oxe with the tame
Yyoked be, to teche hem howe to doo.
And in the forgh downe yf he sitte as lame,
Noo fier, noo strook, noo prikyng come him too;
But bynde his feete that he neither stonde nor goo.
This doon, he wol for hungre and for drie
Go from this vice, and use it not past twye.

115.

Fed stallions now visit mares, and then go to their stable. One horse is not sufficient for over-many.

Feed stalons fatte goth nowe to gentil marys,
And, thay replete, ayein thai goothe to stable.
Oon horses wit for over fele eke bare is.
Let every stalon have as he is able;
So may thai longe endure and profitable.
A yonge and a lusty hors, if it shall thryve,
May have but twyes VI or thries V.

[1] merum. [2] offas.

116.

Yeve others like her strengthes qualitee.
But thinges IV in hem is to be holde,
Fourme, and coloure, merite, and beautee.
First fourme hem thus: greet rowme his body holde,
And sadde for lacke of strengthe unlike to folde,
Her sydes longe, her altitude abounde,
And buttocks have thay right greet and rounde.

The four things to be regarded in a horse: first form.

117.

Ybrested broode, and alle the bodie lifte
In brawnes greet and knotty densitee,
With holgh horne, high yshood, sadde foote and swifte;
Nowe have an eye aboute on thaire beautee.
The parties bethe thees in that to see:
A litel dried hede, uppon the bonys
Is best yf that the skynne wel streite ydoon is.

Next beauty: a small dry head, and the skin close to the bones,

118.

Thaire eres shorte and sharppe, thaire een steep,
Thaire noses thorled wyde and patent be,
Thaire tail and mayne enlarged, wide and deep,
Thaire hoof alle sadde fixe in rotunditee.
Colours nowe to knowe attendeth ye:
The baye is goode coloure, and broune purpure,
The lyarde, and the white and browne is sure.

short ears, deep eyes, wide nostrils, large mane and tail, hoofs firm and round. Next colour, bay, chestnut, liard, or roan, and light brown are good;

119.

The walnyed is goode, also the blake
Is fyne coloure, the falowe, and hert hued,
The pomly gray for him I undertake,
The gray, the goldenhered and the skued.[1]
And next hem in merite is dyvers hued
Blacke, bay, and permyxt gray, mousdon also,
The fomy, spotty hue, and many moo.

also walnied, black, the colour of the fallow-deer and hart, dapple-grey, grey, golden-haired and skew-bald. Next in merit, black and bay mixed with various colours, mouse-dun, etc., etc.

[1] guttatus.

120.

Stallions to be of one clear colour; all others to be excluded, unless of signal merit. Mares to be large in bulk and stomach in well-bred stables.

But stalons best beth cleer in oon coloured,
Alle other lefte, but yf the magnitude
Of thaire merite hem that been discloured
Excuse, and in a maner so exclude.
Thi mares take of like similitude,
But rathest be thaire bolk and wombes large.
This crafte in gentil haras is to charge.

121.

Take care that stallions be kept apart, lest they hurt one another when furious. In summer place them where is cold and shade.

Alle other mares may be with thaire malys
Alle yere atte large; and this is thaire nature:
That moneths XII in fole everie female is.
Another thing in stalons is to cure,—
That thai be sette asonder for lesure
Whenne thai beth wode; and do this maner drove
In Somer there is colde and thicke of groves.

122.

In winter let them frequent rich and warm pastures, hard enough to strengthen their hoofs. If the mares refuse the horse anoint them with powdered squills.

In winter ther is fattest and plesaunte,
And sumdel hardde to sette atte firmitee
Thaire hornes on thaire feet, this let hem haunte.
Impacient yf that females be
And wol noo male, her naturalitee
With stamped squylle embawme other ennointe,
And thai wol soone enable in that jointe.

123.

Keep brood-mares from cold and hunger, and give them ample space. Let well-bred mares with male colts rest every other year. Others require no care.

Fro colde and hungre holde hem that beth greet
In fole, and yeve hem place atte thaire pleasaunce,
And gentil females that males gete
Iche other yere be kept fro fecundaunce;
[. . . . . .]
So shall thai be the bigger huge and pure.
Alle other take as cometh of hem noo cure.

124.

A stalon may begynne atte yeres v,
And his females at yeres ii conceyveth.
But after yeres x thaire coltes blyve
Shall never goo, the pukker thai deceiveth.
Foles with hande to touche a corser weyveth;
Hit hurteth hem to handel or to holde.
Defende hem eke, as reson wol, from colde.

The colts of a mare more than ten years old of little value. Foals not to be handled.

125.

In foles, as thai are adolescentes,
Yf thai be goode, asmoche is forto see
As is aforne wel saide of thaire parentes,
Quyk, swifte, and steryng with hillaritee.
Now foles two yere olde may tamed be:
Take brawny-bodied, huge, argute, and longe
Smal ballockynge, and ever shortte uphonge.

Foals to be chosen by the same marks as their sires; they may be broken in at two years.

126.

In other thing take hem her fader like,
So thewed that from high quiete and rest
Anoon thai may be stered forto prike,
And fastest pricked turning at the best,
Ner harde be it not eft to make him rest.
Thaire myddel teeth aboue at two yere age
Thai cause, at yeres iiii an other gage.

Let their thews (*manners*) be such that they may be stirred from rest to speed, and again from greatest speed made to rest. They change the upper middle teeth at two years, and at four change again.

127.

Er yeres six oute gothe the gomes stronge,
The caused first at yeres vi are even.[1]
At vii yere are all illiche longe,
The markes of thaire age are lost at sevon.
Thaire browes hoore, her tempils holgh unevon,
The teethe oute seeth. Now alle iiii footed bestes,
And namely hors, to geldde yholdyn best is.

Ere the sixth year the grinders fall out. At six those first changed are even, at seven all are of one length, and then all marks are lost.

[1] equantur.

De Mulino genere & Asinis.

128.

For mules choose a mare strong-boned, of great bulk and noble form, three years old.

This mules forto make who so delite,
A mare yboned sadde, ybulked greet,
Yformed nobully most been elite;
And though she be not swyfte, a strong one gete
Of yeres iiii unto this werk to trete.
Till yeres x she for this admyssure
Is goode, but this mot have a besy cure.

129.

His wife (the ass) is to be haled out, the mare is to be haled in.

The mare yf the asse eschewe, on his female
As tempte him first; and when he gynneth ride,
Hys wyf is oute, this mare is into hale.
While he dothe on, that other holde aside.
For furious in lust he wol abide
And doo: but yf he bite hir in his rage,
Let labouryng his melincoly swage.

130.

The best bred mules are from the mare and the ass. The produce of the wild ass and the mare sure to be strong and swift.

A mule eke of an hors and of an asse
Is hadde, and of a wilde asse and a mare,
But gentiler in kynde never nasse
Then of the mare and asse yformed are.
Of asses wilde and mares better nare,
Ther noo stalons of whome the geniture
For to be stronge and swyft me may assure.

131.

A stallion ass to be bulky, brawny, firm, large-limbed, strong and steady; black, mouse-coloured, or red. If the brows and ears are spotted, the offspring will be variegated.

A stalon asse ybolked, brawny, sadde,
And large ylymmed, strong, and steyth, alle blaak
Or mou(s)hered or reede is to been hadde.
But chois yf that ther be, moushered taak.
And discolour in browes hath a laak
And eres eke, but what that thaire of [s]prynge
Of variannt colour forth thai brynge.

132.

Three yeres age is leest and x is meste,
And from her damme a she asse oon yere olde
Doo putte in share pastures that the beeste
In tender age on labour gynne holde;
The male aselle in feeldes forto holde
Hit needefull is, for he to diligent
Laboure wol take, and ek be negligent.

From three to ten years is the age. Place the she-ass of one year in rough (?) pastures to learn labour; keep the male in the fields, to work and be idle in turns.

De apium infirmitatibus & curacione.

133.

The bee that Marche is wonte to be ful seke,
That after Winter colde and abstinent
On titimalle and elmes gynneth pike
That bittir be, wherof anoon relent
Thaire wombes are, and sone be thay shent
But yf me helpe anoon with medicyne.
Nowe rewe on hem and helpp hem oute of pyne.

Bees, sick after cold and abstinence, will pick spurge and elm-blossoms, and be injured unless helped by medicine. Pity them.

134.

Wyne Amynee with pomgarnates grayne,
Or reyson graynes with dewe[1] Siriake[2]
And mighty wyne, alle this ygrounden playne
And boiled in sharppe wyne is forto take
And into litel treen trowes shake.
Or roosmaryn[3] in meth[4] decoct congele,
And yeve it hem in gutters,[5] hem to hele.

Give Amynean wine with grain of pomegranate, or *Ros Syriacus*, with raisins and strong wine; shake in little troughs made of trees, or give rosemary boiled in mead.

135.

And clorded[6] yf thaire backes be, silent,
And slough, a thing horrible to beholde,
And corses dede oute beryng diligent,
Chaneles[7] is to make of cannes[8] olde
That iche of hem a quantitee may holde.
Putte hony into hem and powder galle,
Or pouder rose, and it wol hele hem alle.

If they be contracted, silent, and slow, carrying out dead bodies, make channels and put in honey and powdered gall, or powdered rose.

[1] rore. [2] Siriaco. [3] rosem marinum. [4] mulsa.
[5] ymbricibus. [6] contracto. [7] canales. [8] cannis.

136.

Cut away rotten and empty combs with the sharpest knife of all the row.

Moost spedy is the roten combes kerve
Awaye, and yf the swarme is but of fewe,
Thaire empty combes of the same serve.
But take the kennest knyf of alle the rewe,
To doe this softely with, lest alle remewe,
And thai seyng thaire dwellyng so forfare
So fly awaye with greet compleynt and care.

137.

Abundance often injures them; for they think of nothing but working till they die. Therefore if the combs drip with excess of honey, keep them three days at home.

Ek ofte ennoieth hem felicitee,
As floures over fele of whom thai trie
So faste hony that on fecundite
Thai thinketh not, nor horde to multipli,
But dothe hemself travaille until thai die.
Forthi yf combes ronke of hony weep,[1]
Three dayes stopped up atte home hem keep.

138.

Thus stopped up they will attend to generation. Cleanse the hives about the 1st of April wherever winter has damaged them, and pick out moths, spiders, etc.

Thus stopped uppe, in generacion
And brynging babes forth thai wol attende.
Thaire dwellyng places expu(r)gacion
Of every filthe aboute Aprill Calende
Wol have of right ther Wynter hath it shende.
Nowe pike oute mougthes,[2] attercoppes,[3] wormys,[4]
And butterflie[5] whoos thoste engendryng worme is.

139.

Place under them smoke of incense and dry ox-manure till autumn. Advise thee well (*i.e.* take care) to be sober, chaste, sour meats being uneaten, exempt from baths, etc. in doing bees service.

Smooke of encense effuse in drie oxe dounge
Doo under hem, to hele hem and socoure.
Til hervest doo this ofte, yf it be longe.
Alle sobre, chaste, uneten metes soure,
From bathes aliene, unclene odoure,
And sauces alle and metes salt avyse
The wel to been, in doyng been servyce.

[1] drepe. [2] tineas. [3] araneas. [4] vermiculos. [5] papiliones.

140.

With Octobȳr Marche houres feet beth even
The first hath xxv. feet, xv
Feet hath the secounde houre, the thirdde xi,
The fourthe hath viii, and v up six sustene,
And six hath v. In vi, vii demene,
And so goo forth. x hath feet thries v.
xi goth with xxv blyve.

Length of the several hours in March.

Deo Gracias.

Nowe Marche is doon and to correctioun
His book is goon, as othȳr did afore,
Of him that said I thi protectioun
From all thy foon adversannt lesse & more ;
And his beheste stedfast is evermore.
Honoure, empire, and jubilacioun
To Ihēsu Crist in special therfore,
My lyf, my light, my right salvacioun.

The translator's epilogue.

APRILIS.

BOOK THE FIFTH.

Prefacio in quintum librum.

The translator's preface.

Ayenie to werk am I sette, and I haste.
Come of, let see who be the sharppe penne.
The tyme is riche, and synne is hit to waste,
Every moment saith "Rys! I goo. Come, thenn,[1]
To jugement." O what may I saye thenne[2]
That many an hour have spende & not alle well.
But Mercy, God! Now husht of that: for renne
I must, and here begynne atte Averell.

De Medica seretica & disciplina ejus.

1.

Trefoil sown in April will last ten yeare, and may be cut four or six times. It dungs lean lands, fattens lean beasts, cures sick ones. An acre enough for three horses a year.

At Auerel Medike is forto sowe
In beddes fourmed, as is taught beforne,
That ones sowen yeres x wol growe,
And yerely IIII or tymes sexe yshorne.
Hit doungeth landes lene, and beestes lorne
For lene it fedeth uppe, and seek aviseth.
Thre hors ayere an acre wel sufficeth.

2.

A *cyathus* enough for a bed five feet broad and ten long. Cover quickly with a wooden rake. Use no iron.

A cruse is for a bedde ynough to take
Of footes v in brede, & double longe,
And wrie hem quycly with a treen rake,
Lest that the sonne up brenne, or do hem wronge.
From thennes doo noon yren hem amonge,
But oonly tree, and goode is weede hem ofte,
Lest weedes ille oppresse hem yonge and softe.

[1] inde hinc. [2] tunc.

3.

First repe it late, that sedes sumdel shake,
And after repe it as the thinkest goode,
And fodder for the beestes therof make,
First scant[1]; it swelleth and encreaseth bloode;
And watter wele the londe ther as it stoode.
Sixe sithe ayere repe it; as ofte it weede:
And yeres x ther is of it noo drede.

Do not cut it the first time till it sheds its seed. Let it be given to beasts sparingly at first, for it swells them and makes blood. Cut it six times a year.

De serenda olea: de vineis, &c.

4.

Olyve is graffed now in tempre lond,
As is beforne ytaught, under the rynde
In wilde olyve,[2] olyves forto stond
So that, though thai be brende, oute of thaire kynde
Thai chaunge not. This crafte be not behinde.
Maak delves, sette in hem thi wilde olyve,
And fille hem uppe half fulle until thay thryve.

Graft olives under the rind of the wild olive.

5.

This wilde olyve ytaken, graffe hem lowe,
And as the graff upp springing gynneth renne,
The molde aboute his stock and him up growe
Wel upp over the grafyng stede; and thenne
Though fire be sette on it it shal not brenne,
His comyssure in erthe it stont so depe,
And oute of it olyve ayein wol crepe.

Graft it low, and as it rises let the mould rise about the grafting place. Then the joint is so deep that it cannot burn.

6.

Olyves sum in rootes graffe, and rende
Hem after out with parcells of the roote;[3]
But first this craffes wel must comprehende.
And set hem forth as planntes forto roote.[4]
From the VIII kalend of Aprill it is boote,
As Grekes sayen, til Jules thridde none
To graff in hoote lande late, in colde land sone.

Some graft in the root, and when they have taken rend them off with part of the root, and plant them out. Graft from April 1st to July 5th.

[1] parce. [2] oleastro. [3] radicis. [4] radicare.

7.

Before April the 13th vines are to be dug in cold places, and those which were not set in March should be set now. Panic and millet are planted in places moderately dry.

Er thenne this moones Ide in places cold
Beth vynes dolve, and hem that Marche hath lefte
Unsette, lette sette hem nowe. Nowe weeded wold
Thi semynaires be, and dolven efte.
Panyke and mylde in comyn drie is lefte.[1]
To sowe and eree[2] upp feeldes fatte and weet,
And weedes tender yette oute of hem geet.

De diversis herbis in orto.

8.

Now sow cabbage to serve for cole-wort. Parsley will grow now till autumn.

Last in this moone as veer is nygh atte ende,
Brasike that wortes serveth is to sowe,
For tyme is past a croppe on it to ascende.
Eke Ache in every manner lande is throwe
So it be weet. In drie eke wol it growe
Yf nede be, and nygh in all the moonys
Fro pryme veer til hervest last, this doon is.

9.

Three sorts of parsley: hipposelinon, helioselinon, and peloselinon.

As of this Aches there be kyndees three:
The soure and stordy yposelinon,
This is the first; the softe yfoiled be
Seconde, yclept Elioselinon,
In lakes spronge; and Petroselinon
In places hardde uppe sprynging: diligent
Men tille, and have alle three to theire entent.

10.

Parsley will be made crisp if you pound the seeds, or bruise them, after they are grown, with a roller or with the feet.

The gretter ache is made thus: fingres tre
Ful of that seede doo in a lynnen thynne
Clothe in a litel delf so sette it be.
The growyng of hem into oon heed wol wynne,
And so be greet asonder not to twynne.
Thai wol be crispe her seede yf that me crese,
Or with a rolle or feet hem sprongen brese.

[1] acceptum. [2] plowe.

11.

Ek the older seede the sonner it is spronge,
The yonger dwelleth longer. Nowe Avage[1]
Is sowe, and so forthe alle the somer longe
Til hervest come in with his gretter wage.
But yeve him drinke ynough in youth and age.
For humour dronken, rathest upp gothe he,
And sowen hidde anoon he praieth be.

Avage requires much water, and to be covered up as soon as sown.

12.

From him the weedes plucke: unnecessarie
Is him to plaunte yf he be wel ysowe.
Yit better wol he spryng and higher caire
Wel rare yf he be plannted forto growe,
Eke juce of dounge and humoure on hem throwe.
With yren him to croppe is his encrese,
So cropped forto sprynge he wol not ceese.

Orage need not be transplanted, but it will grow better if planted thin.

13.

Basilicon is sowen in this moone,
And theruppon ysowen yf me shall
Hoote water sprynge, upp gothe it wonder sone.
Eke mervaille thinge affermeth Marcial:
Therof that purpure nowe the floure is alle.
Nowe it is white, now rosy. This is straunge.
It ofte ysowe eke maketh wounder chaunge.

Marcial tells wonders of Basilicon changing its colour.

14.

To pelletur, and to horsmyntes[2] eek
Hit chaungeth ofte. Cucumber nowe is sowe,
Melones, pelletur, cappare, and leek.
Colcases planntes now beth sette to growe,
Nowe coriander, letuce, betes throwe
In molde; onyons, myntes, gourdes, goldes,[3]
Nowe secondly to sowe or kest in molde is.

Time for cucumbers, melons, pellitory, capers, leeks, etc.

[1] atriplex. [2] sisimbrium. [3] intibe.

De zizipho & ejus pomis.

15.

Ziziphus may be set in stock, or plant, or stone. Three stones in the breadth of your hand.

Nowe ziziphus in infervent lande;
Atte May or Juyn in londe that beth colde.
Ther gladde and warme is loveth he to stande.
To sette or stook or plannte or boon is holde
Right goode; softe erthe in Marche the planntes wolde
Stonde ynne: thre bones in thyne hondes brede
Inverse into the delf is doune to lede.

16.

Place ashes and dung over and under. When the size of your thumb, plant them out. The land not be too fat. Heap stones round the stock in winter, and remove in summer.

Doo aske and dounge on hem above and under,
And breek away the weedes with thyne hande.
And thombe greet in pastyn hem asonder
Or (in) to delf: thai axe not to fatte lande,
So that by fatte and not by lene it stande.
In Wynter to his codde[1] an heep of stonys
Is goode, that in the Somer utter doone is.

17.

Rub the tree with a curry-comb. Old wine sprinkled on them when newly pulled will not suffer their fruit to wrinkle.

Yf this tree loure,[2] an horscombe wol him chere.
Or lite and ofte embaume his roote oxe donge.
In places drie her fruites ripe alle yere
Is kept in cleyed erthen pottes longe.
Nowe ruge[3] on hem puldde newe olde wyne yspronge
Wol suffre be: eke honged with thaire bough,
Or in thaire leves fold, is goode ynough.

18.

For reasons taught before, pomegranates and peaches are to be grafted now; also the citron.

This moone also, by rather lerned reason,
To sette and graffe in places temperate
Pomgarnat is, and peches have thaire season.
Atte May Kalendes hem to enoculate[4]
Right as we saide of figges emplastrate.
Eke Citurtree this moone in places colde
Is forto graffe, as is beforne ytolde.

[1] codici. [2] tristis sit. [3] rugam. [4] inoculare.

19.

In colde lande nowe the figtree plant is sette,[1]
And graffed in the stock or in the rynde,
As disciplyne of hem beforne is sette.[2]
And hem to enoculer eke have in mynde.
Nowe Cefalon the palmes plannte is kynde
In glaade to sette and hoote; now graffyng serve[3]
In quynce, in white thorne, in himself wol serve.[4]

Plant and graft the fig, and the palm, called also cephalon, and the service-tree.

De oleo violacio & vino.

20.

Oilviolet to make attende: of oil
As many pounde, asmany unces take
Of violette, not but oonly the foil.
And XL daies standyng theroute[5] it make.
To X sester olde wyne V pounde in slake
Of violet undewy, and X pounde
Hony the XXX^the^ day is forto enfounde.

Oil-violet to be made of the leaves.

De vitulis nutriendis, tonsuris et signaturis.

21.

Now calves to be calued is the gyse.
But yeve hem meete ynough that were with childe,
That thai to mylk and laboure may suffice.
And yeve thaire children tosted grounden mylde[6]
Commyst with mylk. Now shepe shere in ayer mylde;[7]
Late lamber marke hem nowe, nowe frist tuppyng
Be made, lambron to ripe er Winter sprynge.

Feed calves with millet mixed with milk. Shear sheep, and mark late lambs.

De apibus investigandis et alvearibus purgandis.

22.

This moone in places apte is been to seche:
Place apte is there swete herbes multiplie,
And bees the welles haunte and water cleche:
Utilitee is ther to mellifie.
But where the swarmes dwell is crafte to aspie.
And first yf thai be dwellyng ferre or nygh,
See here the crafte; and truly it is slygh.

Seek for bees this month where are sweet herbs and water.

[1] plantatur. [2] posito. [3] sorbi. [4] servire.
[5] sub divo. [6] milio. [7] calido.

23.

Mark the bees' backs with ruddle, and see how long they are returning.

Take rubrik[1] poured in sum litel shelle,
And therwithall the bak of every bee
A pensel touche as thai drynk atte the welle,
And note hem aftør widerwarde thai flee.
Then by thaire ayein turnyng a man may se
Howe ferre or nygh thai be: and to the nygh
To come is light; but to the ferre be sligh.

24.

Put honey or wine into a hole cut in a joint of a reed, and when many are gone in close it.

Kitte out ayointe of reede, and in the side[2]
Therof let make an hoole, and therin doo
Hony or sweete wyne[3] sumdel beside[4]
The welle or water that the been goth too.
Lette hem goon in as fele as wol in goo;
And aftør hem the hoole yclosed be,
And first let oon of hem oute of it flee,

25.

Let out first one, and then another, and follow them.

And folowe fast, for thiderwarde thai dwelle.
Streght wol she flee; and when thou may not see
No lenger hir, an othør forth to telle
Let goo; for thiderwarde eke wol she flee.
But sew uppon. Do thus froo be to be.
Thus wol thai lede oon to thaire dwellyng place.
But in the mornyng gynne hem thus to trace;

26.

Or, place something sweetened with honey near the well, and those who have tasted it will have a care to bring others.

That alle the day unto thi sewe suffice;
For, towarde nyght in restyng thai assure.
Or thus: a thing with hony thou devyse
To sette as by the welle of thaire pasture.
When oon hath tasted it, anoon his cure
Dothe he to bryng his bretheren to that feest;
And that thay haunte anoon, the moost and leest.

[1] rudul. [2] latus. [3] defrutum. [4] juxta.

27.

Now see the cours howe thai goo to and froo,
And fire hem home yf thai be in a cave,
Besmooke hem, oute of it anoon thai goo.
Thenne make a sowne on brasse, and thou shalt have
Hem lightyng on sum boshe or tree; nowe shave
Hem into an hyve. Yf thai be in a tree
Thaire hous over and under sawed be.

If they are in a cave smoke them out, and make a noise with brass. If they are in a tree saw out the nest.

28.

Uppe wrappe hem clene, and sette hem with thyne hyves;
To frote her houses wel with citriage
And herbes sweete is plesaunt to thaire lyves.
Yf this be doon while veer is yonge of age
The welles nygh, of unfeyned courage
Of been therto wol come a multitude.
Now ware that theves naught thi crafte delude.

Rub the hives with sweet herbs in the early spring, near a well; but beware of thieves.

29.

Now purge her hyves; flee the butterflie
That in the malves flouring wol abounde;
A brason vessel streit with brynkes hie
A light atte nyght make standyng in the grounde;
The butterflies wol this light enrounde,
And brenne hemself. Thus may me hem destroye
Uchone anoon that thinges fele ennoye.

Clean the hives, and place a light at evening in a high narrow vessel, to destroy butterflies.

30.

Abrel with September in houres oon is
Ooon twyes[1] XII, and tweyne hath twyes[2] VII.
Thre twyes V; and foure hath seven ons.
And fyve hath V; and sixe hath three foote even.
Nowe VII, VIII and IX, and X, XI
With V and IIII, and III and II, and I
Beth houre for houre, and foote for foote to goon.

The hours of the day in April.

[1] XXIV. [2] XIIII.

Deo Gracias.

Finis quinti libri, et præfacio in sextum librum.

Translator's epilogue.

And here an ende, er thenne I wende, I fynde
Eke doon is in this moone are taught aforne.
O Salvatour! O Jesse floure so kynde,
Of oon for everichon that list be borne,
And for us hinge, a crowne usyng of thorne!
Honoure be to the, Floure(s) of floures ay!
Thi werke awey from derk upborn
So make, as here I take ayaine atte May.

MAY.

BOOK THE SIXTH.

De panico & milio, & feno recidendo.

1.

Atte May in places that beth colde and wete,
Panyk and mylde in thaire maner is sowe.
Now every grayne almest hath floures swete,
Untouched now the Tilman lete hem growe.
Barly and whete & sengul seedes are
VIII daies floure, and XL dayes grete[1]
Withouten floure, ripeness until the gete.

Sow panic and millet.
Single seeds flower in eight days; and after flowering grow ripe in forty days.

2.

All double seede, as benes, peses be,
And other pulse, a XL dayes floure,
And greteth with in places nygh the see.
In places drie & colde nowe tyme & houre
Is hay to mowe, and yf the rayne beshoure,
Winde it not til hit be parfit drie.
Nowe to the vyne is efte to have an eye.

Double seeds flower in forty days, and at the same time grow large.
In rainy weather move the hay till perfectly dry.

De novelle sarmentis relinquendis.

3.

Consider now sarmentes tender, yonge,
And leve a few of hem that saddest be,
And holde her armes up til thai be stronge.
A yonge vyne hath ynowe oon, II, or III,
Armes, and sweethed hem togeder see,
Lest wyndes rude hem breek and overthrowe
And no maner be lefte on hem to growe.

Leave a few of the firmest vine shoots. See that two or three are swathed together.

[1] grandecere.

4.

Pull off the vine-leaves whilst they may be tweaked from the tree without difficulty.

This moone is eke for pampinacion
Convenient; voide leves puld to be.
But sette upon this occupacion
While that me may with no difficultee
With fyngers lightly twyk hem from the tree.
This crafte wol fede up grapes fatte and greet,
And Phebus wol goo Ripe hem with his heet.

De proscindendis & aperiendis novis agris.

5.

Plough and break up fallows in places dry and wet, plain and rough. A common ditch is easier to make than a blind ditch.

Nowe feeldes fatte in herbes overgrowe
Ys goode to plowe, and leyes up to breke.
Se whether drie or wete, or playne or rowe
It be, or full of boshe, or stones steke.
Lette diche it deep that humoure oute may leke.
Yf it be weet, a comyn diche in kynde
To make is lighter thenne the diches blynde.

6.

Make a furrow and fill it to the middle with pebbles. Make the earth over it level without any slope. Take heed that the heads of the trenches fall headlong into a great ditch.

A forgh (III ?) footes deep thi landes thorgh
With gravel, or with litel pibble stonys,
Unto the mydwarde fild ayeme this forgh;
And even the erthe above ascaunce her noon is.
And thus doo efte as ofte as goode to doon is.
But hede it that the hedes of hem alle
Into sum greet diche pitchelonges falle.

7.

If there be scarcity of stones dig in cuttings, or straw, or lap. If many stones, they will do for fencing.

The humour shall passe, and thus thi lande be saved.
And stones yf the lacketh, this is boote;
Sarment, or stree, or lappe in it be graved.
Yf thaire be treen, up storke hem by the roote,
Here oon, there oon to leve a fer remote
I holde is goode. Yf it be full of stonys,
For closure of the feld better stuff noon is.

8.

Have up this stones scorne unto the Wallis,
Thay may thi feelde uncomber and defende.
Yf rishes, gresse, or fern in with this walle is
With ereyng ofte her lyves wol be spende.
Lypyne or benes sowen ofte anende
On hem wol make, yf ever as thai sprynge
Her hedes with a sicle of thou flynge.

Frequent ploughing will kill rushes, grass, and fern. Lupines, or beans, will make an end of them, if you cut off their heads with a sickle.

De ablaqueandis arboribus, occandis, etc.

9.

Nowe wyne and tree that were ablaqueat
To cover hem it is convenient.
Nowe as the treen beth gladde in thaire astate
For gutteryng to howe it and to hent,
A comune busshell greet circumferent,
Or litel lesse, oon of thi worchers falle,
That konnyngest is of his felawes alle.

Cover up vines, etc., that had been bared. Let the cleverest workman cut down trees for guttering.

10.

The semynair is dolven in this moone,
Alle besily: in places over colde
And pluvyous, olyves is to doone,
To kytte, and mosse awaye be rased wolde.
The feeld eke nowe ther as me sowe sholde,
Lypyne for donngyng lande to plowe it need is.
Nowe turne ayein to gardeyne sowyng seedys.

Dig seed-beds, cut olive-trees, and clear away moss.

De spatiis ortorum pastinandis et seminibus serendis.

11.

The spaces that in hervest sowe or sede
Me wol, may best have nowe thaire pastynyng.
Nowe ache is sowe, and howe beforne take heede,
Melonns and coriander sowen sprynge.
Of gourdes, tasil, radishe nowe sowynge
Is goode. Nowe rue is sette, and nowe transplannte
A leek so drynke up bolde him forto avannte.

Prepare the ground for autumn-planting. Sow ach (or paraley), melons, coriander, teasle, rue, and leeks.

12.

Marcial tells a marvel of pomegranates.

In places hoote nowe pomgarnates floure,
That Marcial a mervaille dooth of telle;
In til a potte of erthe enduce a floure[1]
Uppon his bough downe bounden ther to dwelle.
To fillyng of this potte the fruyte wol swelle
By hervest tyme; and then his magnitude
By breking of this potte me may disclude.

13.

Graft peaches, till citrons, set suzubes, figs, and palms.

In landes hoote the pechys in this moone
Emplastred are, and nowe in landes colde,
The citur[2] tree to tille is goode to doone
In divers wyse, as is to fore ytolde.
Now ȝiȝiphus and figtree forto holde
Men sette or graff in cold or chillyng lande.
The palme eke nowe men setteth forth to stande.

14.

To castrate little bulls with a cleft cane,

Now Mago saith is goode castracion
Of litel boles, whil thaire age is tender.
Ferul to cleve an occupacion
Be first, and presse in it thaire stones slender.
So wol thai dwyne awaye that sholde engender.
In veer, and hervest, eke sprynging the moone
Is best, as saithe this Mago, this to doone.

15.

Or with tin tongs. Tie up the wounds with vine-ashes and litharge.

Other with tynnen tonges take her strynges,
First bounden lest thay nolde not graunt hem leve,[3]
And faire of with a knyf thai cutte her thinges,
But sumdel on the strynges hede thai leve,[4]
Tais[5] stauncheth bloode, and alle wol not bereve
Her stordy myght: her woundes let entyne
With aske of vyne, and with spume argentine.

[1] florem. [2] citrum. [3] licencia. [4] demittunt. [5] ? this.

16.

With abstynence of drynk and litel mete
After this feste as fede hem daies three,
Grene herbes croppes, swettest let hem ete,
And bowes softe and toppe of tender tree
Bydewed or bywet whether it be.
Tar mixt with aske and oil after III dayis
Ennoynte his wounde, and save thi beest for ay is.

Let them eat young boughs softened with dew or water; and thy beast is safe for ever.

17.

Castracion in better wyse is founde
In daies late: as first a beest to bynde,
And bounden so to holde him fast to grounde,
And streyne in tre the wytnes of his kynde,
And with a brennyng axe away behinde
To hewe hem bothe; or have a thing therfore
Made like a swerde this folk[1] away to seore.

A better mode of later date.

18.

This yren maade, thi rule of tree ley to
This thinges straite, and with the brennyng yre[2]
So smyte hem of quykly that it be doo,
So wol the woo be shortte, of litel yre,[3]
Eke skynne and stringes seryng so to enfire
Upstauncheth bloode, and closeth so the wounde
That save a cicatrice is nought yfounde.

Smite off quickly with the hot iron to stanch the blood.

De tonsuris ovium.

19.

Nowe sheepe bethe shorne in places temporate.
For sheep ishorne make uncture of lupyne,
The juce of it decoct first ther ate
With dregges both of oiles and aged wynys,
Of iche yliche: a thing for sheep this fyne is.
Herewith ennointe hem alle; and after three
Dayes let over wesshe hem in the see.

Anoint shorn sheep with juice of lupine, mixed with equal quantities of oil dregs and old wine. Wash them in the sea.

[1] testiculos. [2] ferramentum. [3] ire seu doloris.

20.

Or with salt and water long before evening. It will make them free from scurf and scald, and woolly and long-lived.

And yf the see be ferre, licoure of heven
With litel salt decocte this beest ennointe.
Oute wesshe of it, but doo this longe er even:
And over yere thai wol been in goode pointe
Withouten scorf or scalle in cors or jointe,
Also thai shall have softe encrisped wolle
And wonderly prolonged atte the fulle.

De casio faciendo.

21.

Make cheese with curd of kid, lamb, or calf, or with wild teazle, or the skin which adheres to chicken's crop.

Alle fresshe the mylk is crodded now to chese[1]
With crudde of kidde, or lambe, other of calf,
Or floure of tasil wilde. Oon of hem chese,[2]
Or that pellet[3] that closeth, every[4] half,
The chicke or pyjon crawe, hool either half.
With figtree mylk, fresshe mylk also wol turne.
Thenne wrynge it, presse it under poundes scorne.

22.

When firm lay them on crates, but apart.

And sumdel sadde up doo it in a colde
Place, outher derk, and after under presse
Constreyne it efte, and salt about it folde,
So sadder yet saddest it compresse.
Whenne it is wel confourmed to sadnesse
On fleykes legge hem ichoone so from other,
That nere a suster touche nere a brother.

23.

Shut them up in a close place out of the wind. A cheese should not be dry, nor full of holes caused by too much sun, or salt, or too little pressure.

But ther the place is cloos is hem to enclude,
And holde oute wynde although he rowne or crie,
So wol thaire fattenesse and teneritude
With hem be stille; and yf a chees is drie,
Hit is a vyce, and so is many an eye
Yf it see with, that cometh yf sonnyng brendde,
Or moche of salt, or lite of presse, it shende.

[1] caseum. [2] elige. [3] pelliculam. [4] undique.

24.

An other in freshe mylk to make of chese
Pynuttes grene ystamped wol he doo;
An other wol have tyme a man to brese
And clensed often juce of it doo to
To tourne it with; to savor so or soo;
It may be made with puttyng to pigment,
Or piper, or sum other condyment.

Others press pine-nuts, or add the juice of bruised thyme. Flavour with a condiment of pepper or any pigment.

De examinibus apium augmentatis.

25.

Of been the swarmes nowe begynne encrese,
Nowe in the hony combe is bredde the bee.
The greet birdde and kynges doutelees
Men sayen thai been, but Greekes sayne thai be
Clept œstros, and goode is hem to slee,
For thai the swarme unresteth, so thai crie.
Nowe as is taught yit slee the butterflie.

The swarms of bees increase. The Greeks call the king-bee οἶστρος.

De pavimentis in solariis faciendis.

26.

Atte Mayés ende a solar is to pave,
And rather not, lest frostes it enfecte.
A double cours of boording first it have,
Oon transversal, another cours directe.
With chaf or ferne this bordes do be tecte,
And therupon doo stones handfull grete,
And wel foote-tempred morter theron trete.

At the end of May, not earlier, have summer-houses.

27.

Thenne with a barre inbete it, batte it ofte,
And playne it rough, but are it fully drie,
Brik bipedal chaneled bryng on lofte,
This floore that be suffisyng forto wrie.
The chanels fynger grete thou most espie.
On evry half this bryk twoo feet of brede,
That lyme and oil the joint togeder lede.

Beat it in with a bar, but before it is dry bring channeled bricks to cover all the floor.

28.

This cement, brick, stones and clay, dry into one substance. Pour on it a testaceous cement, and it is no harm to flap (or slap?) it with rods.

This scyment, bryk, stoon, cley togeder drie,
And knytte into oon til noon humoure be therin,
Nowe yote on that scyment clept testacye
Sex fynger thicke, and yerdes is noo synne
To all to flappe it with; now brode and thynne
Tilette[1] or tabulette[2] of marble stoon,
Empresse, and never shal this werk agoon.

De lateribus faciendis.

29.

Brick made in the heat dries too soon, and is likely to crack. When formed let the sun sweat out the moisture.

Now brik is maade of white erthe, or rubrike,
Or cley, for that is made in somer heete
To sone is drie, an forto chyne is like.
Thus make hem: sifted erthe and chaf to trete
And tempre longe, and fourmed sonne oute swete
The humour, tourne hem; two feet [longe] every brik
Be, and oon foote brode IIII ynches thicke.

De Rosato XIII *ca^m.* *de oleo liliacio* XIIII *ca^m.*

30.

Put five pounds of rose into six sextarii of wine.

In sestres sex of olde wyne purged rose
Three daies first v pounde is to doo,
The xxxth day x pounde hony dispose
In it wel scommed first, and use it soo.
Take x pounde oil, x lilies therto
Be doo, and XL dayes sette it ther oute[3]
In glasse,[4] and made it is noo longer doute.

De oleo roseo XV *ca^m.* *de rodomelle* XVI *ca^m.*

31.

Huile de rose is made of a pound of oil to an ounce of roses. Rodomel is a pound of honey to a sextarius of rose-water.

In every pounde of oil an unce of rose
Ypurged putte, and hange it dayes seven
In sonne and moone, and after oilderose
We may baptize and name it, cordyng even.
And XL dayes to beholde on heven
In juce of rose a sester that weel smelle
A pounde hony and name it rodomelle.

[1] tessellas. [2] tabellas. [3] sub divo. [4] in vitro.

De rosis viridibus servandis,

32.

That roses that begynneth forto unclose
And cleve a reede that stont & groweth grene,
Doo thayme therin and let it on hem close
Thus til the list: hem wol this reede sustene.
Other condite hem kepe in pottes clene
With pik munyte and couchyng theroute alway.
August in houres cordyng is with May.

Place roses not yet open in a reed which stands green, and close them in it as you like, or keep them out of doors protected in clean pots.

De horis Maii and Augusti.

33.

Half prime hath xxiii feet, and pryme
Hath xiiii, and half undron hath but ix,
High undron vi, and iiii hath mydday tyme,
And noon hath iii. Nowe Phebus wol declyne
Tort occident, and lenger lemes[1] shyne.
Thyne afternoone to thi fornoone confourme
In feet from houre til hour, as is the fourme.

Half-prime, *i.e.* 6 o'clock = 23ft.
Prime, *i.e.* 7 o'clock = 7 = 13 ft.
Half-undern, *i.e.* 9 o'clock = 9ft.
And undern, *i.e.* 10 o'clock = 6ft.

Finis vi^tl. *libri, et prefacio ad septimum.*

34.

So May is ronne away in litel space.
The tonge is shortte, and longe is his sentence.
Forth[2] ride I see my gide, and him I trace
As he as swyfte to be yit I dispence.
O sone of God alloone, O sapience,
O hope, of synnes drop or gile immuyn,
Lovyng I to The syng as my science
Can doo; and forth I goo to werk atte Juyn.

Translator's epilogue to Book 6, and preface to Book 7.

[1] bemes. [2] forride.

JUYN.

BOOK THE SEVENTH.

De area ad trituram paranda.

1.

Make a smooth threshing-floor, and harden against ants and mice.

At Juyn a floore for thresshing thus thai make:
Thai pare it first, and lightly after gete
Hit dolven smal, and chaf therto thay take,
Oildregges fresshe thai tempre with, and trete
It even playne abroode. This helpeth whete
From Auntes and fro myse. Nowe pibble stonys
Thay bete in, and other that cordyng stoone is.

2.

Then let it dry in the sun. Another way is to clean the floor and wet it well, and turn in small animals to tread it down.

And after suffer thay the sonne it drie.
And this is oone. Another way is fonde,
As first the floor to clensse, and after strie
Hit all with weete, and so wel weet the londe,
Doo beestes smale in hit to stere and stonde,
And make hem route aboute, and trede, and strayne
It wel, and so to drie it they complayne.

De messibus.

3.

Barley is to be harvested before the ear break. A good reaper can get five strikes a day. The corn swells if left to lie loose.

Now gynneth barly ripe, and is to anende,[1]
Er the eere[2] to breke and shede it; for as whete
It is not cladde nor cloked syde & ende.
Oon daywerk of a goode repman may gete
V strik, a febbler for III may swete.
And that the corn may grete upon the grounde
Thay sayen is goode to let it lye unbounde.

[1] consumanda. [2] spica.

4.

This moones ende in places nygh the see
And hot & drie is gonnen repyng whete.
But first, yf it be ripe, is forto see
Yf alle the lande atte ones rody grete
Enclyne & thonke unlaced so for hete.
The playner parte of ffraunce a crafte hath fonde
To repe in litel space a worlde of londe.

At the end of the month wheat-harvest begins. See if it be ripe by seeing if the whole field grows red at the same time.

5.

Oon oxes werk alle hervest up shall take
With litel mannes help, and in this wyse:
A squared carre on wheles two thay make,
And borde it bredyng up of certayne sise,
That tort the brynk it brede alway & rise.
His chaule aforne that shal ete up the whete
Ys not right high, but so of even mete.

In the plain country of France they make a square cart on two wheels, boarded so as to be broader towards the top. Its jaw (front-board) is not to be high.

6.

That towe[1] is toothed thicke as the mesure
Of erees[2] wol not passe hem, upwarde bende.
And bakward beth twey thilles made full sure,
As forwarde hath a drey, and in that ende
An meke oxe that wol drawe & stonde & wende
Wel yoked be, and forwarde make it fare.
And every corne[3] wol start into this chare.[4]

That apparatus is to be toothed so close that the ears will not pass, bending upwards. It has two shafts behind as a dray has before. Yoke to it a quiet ox, and every corn will fall into it.

7.

This teeth wol bite hem so that beth bifornys
And fere hem in, the drover[5] aye in kynde
Doo list & lethe as lowe & high the corne is,
That shall trippe in, the chaf fletyng behynde.
Thus shall an oxe in dayes few upwynde
An hervest alle; this carre is thus to carie
In feeld lande playne, ther chaf nys necessarie.

These teeth force in the ears in front. The driver will regulate the height. This cart is for plain lands, where chaff is not wanted.

[1] tabula anterior. [2] spicarum. [3] man. [4] vehiculum. [5] bubulco.

De agris proscindendis, vineis occandis, &c.

8.

Things omitted in May to be done now, viz., plough cold grass land, cover the roots of vines, gather rough vetches, and cut fingreek for fodder. Where land is cold, now hold harvest of pulse.

In coldest lande thing lefte undoon in May[1]
May now be doon, as feeldes me may plowe.
In grassy[2] cold lande vynes rootes may[3]
Eke nowe be wrie, eke now the fittches[4] rowe[5]
Collect may be, and fayngreek downe to rowe[6]
For fodder[7] now is tyme; and every puls,[8]
There lande is cold, is hervest nowe to huls.

9.

Mix pottage-lentils in ashes in oil-barrels, or salt-tubs: they are safe laid by strongly plastered. Beans plucked early kept in a cool place will be free from grubs.

Nowe potageware in askes mynge & kepe
In oilbarelles or salt tubbes doone,
Sadde cleyed well thai save beth leide to slepe.
Nowe benes, in decresyng of the moone,
Er day and er she ryse, upplucked soone,
Made clene, and sette up wel refrigerate,
From grobbes[9] save wol kepe up thaire estate.

10.

Collect lupine, and if you will, you may sow it at once in a dry place.

Lupine also collecte is in this moone,
And yf me wolle, anoon it may be sowe,
Right from the floor as fast as it is doone.
But ferre away from humour it bestowe,
In that garnar that stont not over lowe,
To keep hem longe, and rathest yf the smeke[10]
Perpetual uppon thaire dwellyng reke.

De diversis herbis serendis.

11.

Sow cabbage at the solstice, and plant it out in the beginning of August. Beet, radish, lettuce, and coriander are now to be sown.

Brasik is sowe atte stondying of the Sonne,
And atte the hede of Aust it is to plaunte
In landes weet, or elles rayne beronne.
And ache also is sowen come denaunt,
Bete and radisshe excerciseth thair haunt;
Letuce and coriander, yf me wete
Her lande, up groweth nowe this herbes sete[11] (=sweete).

[1] Maio. [2] herbosa. [3] possint. [4] vicia. [5] rugosa. [6] resecare.
[7] pabulo. [8] legumina. [9] gurgulionibus. [10] fumus. [11] salubres.

De pomis et flore punici, &c.

12.

Yit may the pomgarnates floure enclude
An erthen potte, as twye is taught beforne,
To make a pome of mighty magnitude.
Nowe peres and meles[1] over thicke ar torne
Away the vicious, lest juce ylorne
On hem sholde be that gentil fruyt myght spende.
Nowe ȝiȝiphus in colde lande wol ascende.

A pomegranate inclosed in an earthen pot will bear large fruit. Pears and apples being overthick, the defective are taken away, lest the sap should be lost upon them.

13.

The figtree, as forsaith his discyplyne,
This moone in season is to caprifie.
Nowe have I wist men graffe hem VIII or IX^na.
Now peche in places colde is putte in theye.[2]
The plannte of palm men umbydelvyng hie.
In Juyl and nowe solempne insicion
Hath treen, that men calle emplastracioun.

Now caprify the fig-tree. I have known several graft it. Peaches are now inoculated, and men dig round the palm. Trees are now to have emplastration.

14.

Emplasturyng accordeth with the tree
That hath a juce of fattenesse in the rynde,
As figge, olyve, and other suche be.
Eke Marcial saith peche is of that kynde.
Thus it is doon, as we in bookes fynde:
Of fairest treen loke uppe the brannches clere
That fertilest and fresshest yonge appere.

It accords best with a tree that has a thick juice in the rind. Look up the branches of the young trees that appear most fertile and fresh.

15.

Under the fresshest gemme alle subtily,
That gemme unhurt, with yron reyse a rynde.
The tree that shall emplastred be therby
Take of the gemme, and bark, and therto bynde
This gemme unhurt, and so in bondes wynde
Hit softe his gemme above alle that excede,
Oon gemme as for another so succede.

Under the freshest bud raise the rind with a knife, without hurting the bud. Take off the bud and bark of the tree to be emplastered, and bind on to it this unhurt bud, that one may take the place of the other.

[1] mela. [2] inoculatur.

16.

Place dung on and around, and lop off the upper branches, and leave it twenty days.

Doo donnge upon and umbe on evry syde
And bynde it to; the bowes of that tree
That higher beth, let hewe of or devyde
Away, and dayes xx^ti let it be.
Unbynde it thenne, and there expertly se
How oon tree is in til an other ronne.
Thus better fruyte of bitter fruyte is wonne.

De vitulis castrandis: de casio; & omni tonsura.

17.

Care necessary in treating calves. Now is time to make cheese and shear sheep.

Eke in this moone is made castracioun
Of calves, as is taught a lite aforn.
Therynne is subtil operacioun
In memory wel worthi to be born,
And crafte to make cheses be not lorn,
But used nowe; and nowe in places colde
Solempnitee of sheryng sheepes is holde.

De Apibus, cera, melle, &c.

18.

An indication that the hives are full is a low murmuring of the bees. If the hives are empty, there is more noise.

And in this moone is eke castracion
Of hyves ronke of hony fild, the some[1]
Wherof is this significacion:
All subtilly & smale if that thai summe,[2]
All hugely & harke yf that thai humme,
As houses holgh thaire voices multiplice,—(sic!)
A signe is that her combes beth full done.

* * * * * * *

[Here several pages are lost.]

* * * * * * *

[1] summa. [2] numerent.

19.

Thus siste it that the graynes stille abide
Inwithe the syve, and floures downe to shake;
This floures smale into hony swetest slide
And therof xxx^{ti} dayes let hem take
Ynough, and thenne uptemperyng forsake
No man for hem to make into thaire kynde;
As of rosate is taught, yf ye have mynde.[1]

Let the grains remain in the sieve, the flowers pass through, and lie in honey thirty days, and then let no man fail to make them in their kind.

De Alsica.

20.

Alsike is made with barly, half mature
A party grene and uppon repes bounde
And in an oven[2] ybake and made to endure
That lightly on a querne[3] it may be grounde.
Nowe til a strike a litel salt infounde
As it is grounde, and kepe it therin boote is.
This Juyn and Juyl accorde in houres footes.

Alica is made of unripe barley, bound in sheaves and roasted in an oven until hard enough to grind in a mill.

De horis.

21.

Half pryme on xx^{ti} feet; hole pryme
On xii; half undern viii; hool undern v;
Mydday on iiii; and noon on ii feet by me
Stont fast ynough. Now Phebus chaise upthrive
No lenger may til the occident asblyve
Enclyneth it and erst from the Est it wried.
Forthy beth feet with houres multiplied.

Half-prime is the first hour of the Roman day, whole prime the 2nd. Half undern the 3rd, whole undern the 4th.

Deo gracias.

22.

Nowe Juyn is doo. Salus, blisse, umne, honoure,
Joy, jubile, power, and diademe,
Jesu, be to the, Jesse, the roote's floure,
In mageste that is[4] to sit and deme,
He[5] to us se that in that houre extreme
That[6] prison, helle, all cloose from us be loken,
And with Him we dwellyng. Yet must I yeme
This book, and telle at Juyl of lande up broken.

Translator's epilogue.

[1] This stanza treats of the making of *enanthe* from the flowers and grapes of the wild vine. [2] furno. [3] mola. [4] art. [5] So. [6] Thi.

JUYLL.

BOOK THE EIGHTH.

De iterandis agris, de messibus triticea, &c.

1.

Plough again early. Time to finish wheat-harvest, and clear fields of bushes, and grub up stocks.

Atte Juyl the lande up broken in Aprile
Is efte to plowe, and sone is best his season.
Whete hervest nowe in tempre lande is while
Forto conclude; and by the forsaide reason
Nowe make the feldes wide of busshes geson.
Nowe stocke upp grobbe and tree in wanyng moone,
Thaire rootes eke to brenne is now to done.

2.

Now the corn is away, cut down the trees that were amongst it. Before the dog-days, take up fern and sedge.

Nowe treen that have amongst the cornes growe,
The corne awaye, adowne it is to caste.[1]
Oon daies werk may xx^{ti} overthrowe:
Nowe vynes yonge ydolven first and laste
Wolde be; but not in hete, and pouder[2] caste.
Er the caniculere the hounde ascende
Have uppe the fern and segges to be brenned.

De orti seminibus serendis.

3.

Sow onions, radish, orage, and basilicon. Water lettuce, beet, and mallows. Sow turnips in wet, loose land: they delight also in fields.

Smale onyons nowe beth sowe in places colde
And wete, eke radisshe & orage, yf ye
May watter it, basilicon wol holde,
Letuce & malves, betes, lekes be
To watter nowe; the neep in weet lande we
Nowe sowe and rape, in roten lande rare
In weet lande and in feldes gladde thai are.

[1] proscindere. [2] pulveratie.

4.

But nepes loveth heldes[1] sondy drie
And thynne, eke of the landes propurtee
Er either seede of other multiplie
A wonder thing a man may often see:
Two yere if neep in some lande sowen be
It wol be rape, and rape in sum land sowe
Wol ther ayenne uppe into neepes growe.

Turnips love sandy slopes. In some lands rape changes into turnip, and vice versâ.

5.

Depe donnged lande yturned wel thai love:
That pleseth hem & cornes that ther growe.
An acre lande IIII sester rape above
And v of neep is suffisant to sowe.
For over thicke it is not hem to strowe.
And yf thai be to thicke away thou trete
A part, and so that other wol be grete.

Upon an acre of land sow four sextarii of rape, five of turnip. If they are too thick, remove part, and the others will be the larger.

6.

And forto have the rapes seedes greet
Let pulle first the rape oute of the grounde.
The foiles are of it awaie to geet,
A mydde his caule at half a fynger rounde
Let smyte him of, and plante hem forto abounde
VIII fynger fro: thus wol thai growe in longe
And, as I wene, her seedes sholde be stronge.

To have great rape seeds, remove the leaves at the thickness of half a finger, and plant at eight fingers' distance.

De implastracione.

7.

Solempnyte hath emplastracion,
Wherof beforne is taught the diligence.
Nowe have I made inoculacion
Of pere and appultree: the experience
Hath preved wel. Of wynter fruite science
Yet leseth[2] oute the smale unto the greet
So that the tree may sende her drinke & meet.

Emplastering is now solemnised, and inoculation of pears and apples. Science now selects the small winter fruit and takes them away, that the tree may nourish the larger.

[1] devera. [2] eligit.

8.

I have planted citrons now to great advantage. Now inoculate the fig. Graft citrons and dig about palms in the middle of the month. Gather almonds early.

Now plannted I scions[1] of citurtree
In colde and weete, and wattre it so longe
That forth thai come in greet felicitee.
The figtree nowe to encye[2] it is noo wronge.
In weet lande citur graffed wol be spronge,
And palmes delve aboute amydde this moone.
Almondes ripeth nowe: go gete hem sone.

De armentis & gregibus admittendis.

9.

Time for cows to breed, that their ten months may end in spring. If they are too fat, they do not breed so well.

Nowe shal the bulle his Wyfes to him take,
And fille her wombe, in monethes x to anende
Thaire tyme of birth at veer; for now thai wake
All fresshe, for veer thair Venus bronde hath tende.
XV of hem oon male is forto ascende,
As telleth Columelle, and wol contente.
Yit yf thai be to fatte her werth is shente.

10.

Where fodder is abundant the cow may breed oftener. Moderate food is beneficial. If they are put to the plough they may breed alternate years.

In places ther is fodder abondannce,
The ky may otherwhiles be withdrawe.
Mete in mesure her calvyng wol advannce.
Eke in the plough perchaunce yf thai shal drawe
Itche other yere thai may go to by lawe.
And so shal thai for either werk endure,
That is to saye, in laboure & feture.

11.

The tups should have white tongues. If they are spotty the lambs will be so too. From white sometimes other colours spring, but not from black.

Nowe putte amonge the shepe thaire tuppes white
Not oonly woolled, but also thair tonge;
Yf it be spotty that a man may wite
If he begets him spotty lambes yonge.
Yit sumtyme of the white are other spronge.
But Columelle, he saithe, of tuppes blake
White sheep Nature is never wonte to make.

[1] talea. [2] inoculare.

12.

The tuppe is chosen faire of altitude,
Ywombed side, and tecte in whittest woolle,[1]
A besom tail holdyng his longitude,
Yfronnted large, and stoned atte the fulle.
From youthe until VIII yeres olde thei wole[2]
Wel do this crafte, and she from yeres tweyne
V yere is goode, and then is she bareyne.

The tup should be tall, broad-bellied, and covered with white wool, with a long tail and large forehead. He answers until eight years, the ewe till five.

13.

Yboned large, eke long & softest flesys.
And thai that wide wooly wombed be;
Such ewes to the tuppes oute to chese is.
Of pasturing thai must have ubertee
Fro breres ferre; for thaire iniquitee
This seely innocentes wol unclothe,
And wellesay to tere her skynnes bothe.

Ewes should have large bones and long soft fleeces. Their pasture should be rich, and free from briars, which would unclothe the silly innocents, and also tear their skin.

14.

Nowe let hem doo, by wynter to be stronge.
Males to make, as saithe the Philosopher,
Septemtrion pastures let hem fonge,
And towarde that wynde if the tuppes ofre[3]
With litel males filleth thai the coffre;[4]
And towarde Southwynde geteth thay femalys.
Yf it be sooth, right notable this tale is.

The lambs should be strong before winter. Aristotle says males are born in northern pastures, females in southern.

15.

In hervest putte a way thi feble shepe
As thus thai may be solde, or elles spende.
A coitu twey monethes summen keepe
Her raam until Cupido be wele to ende.
And sumen lette hem alle the yere ascende.
And instinct so dayes shortte & longe,
Ther shal not lacke hem tender lambes yonge.

Sell or use feeble sheep in autumn. Some men let their sheep breed at any time of the year.

[1] lana. [2] volunt. [3] v profre. [4] ventrem v. matrem.

De extirpando gramine.

16.

When the Sun is in Cancer, and the Moon six days old in Capricorn, grass pulled up will not grow again, nor if removed with a cypress fork, or tools, sprinkled with goats' blood.

Nowe with the Crabbe inhabityng the Sonne,
The moone of VI in Capricorn ysette,
Yf gresse ypuled uppe be the lande is wonne.
Eke cipur tonges[1] with gootes bloode wette
And toles from the furneys if me sette
By sprent with gootes bloode, the grasses rowe
With thees if me fordoo, thai shall not growe.

De Vino scillite.

17.

To make squill-wine, dry mountain, or sea squills, as soon as the dog-star rises, far away from the Sun; put a pound into a jar of wine.

And vyne squyllitee is thus made in this moone:
The montayne squylle, other of nygh the See
As riseth the Canyculers as sone
Wol ferre away fro sonne ydried be.
A stene of wyne a poundes quantitee
Of hem receyve, alle leves superflu
Ikiste away, and thai that paled greu.

18.

Others let the leaves hang over the wine, but not dip into it too deep. It is good for coughs, and pains of the stomach, phlegm, and spleen, digestion, and eyesight.

And other garlande hem, and so depende,
Into the wyne so thai go not to depe,
And take hem oute atte XL dayes ende.
This wyne is goode the cough[2] away to kepe;
Alle ille oute of the wombe it maketh krepe;
It solveth flevme, and helpeth splenetyk;
Digestion it maketh, and een quyk.

De Idromelle.

19.

To make mead, put one sextarius of unscummed honey into six of clear water, and let naked boys shake it for five hours in boilers, and then let it stand forty days.

For meth in risyng of Caniculer
A sester of unscomed hony doo
In sesters VI of well water cler
In carenayres naked[3] children goo
And glocke it oures V to & froo
Vessel and all, and after in the Sonne
With XXXX daies standyng it is wonne.

[1] ciprei bidentes. [2] tussim. [3] investes.

De aceto squillino.

20.

And in this moone is made Aisel squillyne:
Of squylles white alle rawe take of the hardes,
And al the rynde is for this nothing fyne,
Then oonly take the tender myddelwardes
In sesters XII of aisel that soure harde is.
A pounde & unces VI yshrad be doo
And XL dayes sonnyng stonde it soo.

To make squill-vinegar, take off the shells and rind, and put the middle part only into twelve sextarii of vinegar. Shred one pound six ounces, and let it stand forty days in the Sun:

21.

After this XL daies cloos in sonne
Cast oute squylle, and clense it feetly wel,
And into vessel pitched be it ronne.
An other XXX^ti galons of aisel
With dragmes VIII of squylle in oon vessel,
Pepur an unce, of case and mynte a smal[1]
Wol do, and use in tyme as medicinal.

then cast out the squills and strain carefully into a closed vessel. Or, thirty gallons of vinegar with eight drachms of squills, an ounce of pepper, and a little casia and mint.

De sinapi.

22.

A sester and a semycicle take
Of senvey seede, and grynde it pouder small,
V pounde of hony theruppon thou slake,
Of Spannysh oile a pounde do therwithall.
A sester of fyne aisel tempur shall
This thinges; groundon well thus use it longe.
This Juyl and Juyn have houres even longe.

Grind a pint and a half of mustard seed, mix five pounds of honey, one pound of Spanish oil, and a pint of vinegar.

De horis.

23.

Oon gooth of XXII with XI,
And II with X on XII feet goth blyve.
Eke III with IX on VIII extendeth even,
And IIII as VIII abregged is to V.
To V & VII leveth III alyve.
And manly VI in myddes of the day
Stonde forth an houre, and uppon feet but tway.

The length of the hours in July.

[1] aliquantum.

Finis VIII *libri. Præfacio in novem librum.*

Translator's epilogue. The latter part unintelligible.

This Juyl is doon. August I must begynne
O tryne and oon, God Lorde, recorde I the
That sensis spille or pointe disjoynt be therynne
Is not my wille; and yet in it is she
Myne ignoraunce. And whi not I but he
That she myschaunce he pricke or nycke it ther
Thi p'uce, mene as mene or nought it be
He rynce if Aust be faust nygh September.

AUGUST.

BOOK THE NINTH.

1.

Nygh Septembɛr kalende atte Austes ende,
Ther feeldes playne, humyde, and lene be,
To gynne plowe is goode to condescende.
And also nowe in coostes of the See
Vyndage araied [arayed] fore is forto se.
In places eke ther it is passyng colde
The vynes unwried be fayne wolde.

Plough at the beginning of September, prepare vineyards, and in cold places the vines would fain be covered.

[N.B.—In verse 5 both forms are in the MS., and in verse 7 "unwried" is written instead of *unwried*.]

De exili & misera vinea.

2.

In Aust eke if the vyne yerde be lene,
And she, thi vyne, a ruthful thing to se,
Thre strik or III of lupynes demene
On iche acre. So let it wrion be.
Whenne it is uppe and hath fertilitee,
Turne it efte in, it doungeth best the vynes.
All other dounge is infectif of wynes.

The best manure for a poor vine is lupine, three or four strikes to an acre. Let it be covered.

De pampinandis & obumbrandis vitibus.

3.

Nowe ther is colde is pampinacion
To overtake a thicke yleved vyne;
And ther is hoote is occupacion
The fervent yre[1] of Phebus to declyne
With obumbracion, if so benygne
And longly be the vyne, is not to werne.[2]
Eke nowe is goode to pulle up segge & ferne.

Prune thick-leaved vines, and, where it is hot, do not forbid to shade a luxuriant vine. Pull up sedge and fern.

[1] hete. [2] vetare.

De urendis pascuis.

4.

Burn the land to destroy bushes and their stock. If the land is covered with dry plants, burn them, and they will grow again more fresh.

Pastures eke in this moone is to brenne
That bussbes, ther thai groweth over hie,
And besy beth the lande to over renne,
This brennyng may thaire stocke & hem destrie.
Eke if the lande be wriehed in herbes drie,
Nowe brenne hem uppe, and efte they wol arise
All glaad arayed newe in fresshest gise.

De herbis in orto.

5.

We have not to sow radish in ragstone or clay, but it loves a moist air.

Nowe rape and neep in places drie is sowe,
As taught is erst, and radissh last this moone
Atte drie is sowe in Wynter forto growe,
In lande solute & fatte it groweth sone,
With ragston or with cley it naath to done,
But gladde is it to loke on dronkyn ayer,
In beddes brode & deepe it wol be faire.

6.

They grow best after a good rain. As soon as it is sown, cover it in. Two or four sextarii suffice for an acre. Dung makes them fungous or spongy: chaff is preferable.

In gravel best after a nobel rayne
Thai growe, and weete hem if thine ayer be drie,
Anoon as it is sowen, wrie it playne.
Two sester in oon acre is to strie;
And III, as other sayen, wol multiplie,
And chaf is better for hem thenne is donnge,
For thai therof wol be right fungous stronge.

7.

Salt-water makes them sweet. Be careful to have seed of the female radish. To have great plants, leave scarcely any leaves on them, and so let them grow.

Saltwater hem: therof thai wol be swete.
Radissh female hath litel bitternesse,
With leves brode, & playne, glad, grene, & meete.
Thaire seede to have as do thi bisinesse.
And forto make hem wexon in greetnesse
Unneth on it a litel croppe me leve,
And sette it so to growe & gret to preve.

8.

The swete of that is bitter forto make
Oon day & nyght the seede in hony stonde,
Outher in meth as longe tyme it take.
Rave, as brassik for vyne as ille is fonde.
Thai so discordeth that in oon poort londe
Wel may thai not; forthi oon utter kepe.
Also this moone is sowing of pasnepe.

To make them sweet let them stand a day and night in honey, or in mead. Rape and cabbage are so inimical to vines, that they would refuse to land in the same port: therefore keep them apart.

De pomis VI *ca*^{m}. *de apibus* VII *ca*^{m}.

9.

Emplasturing eke in this moone is doo.
And sumen nowe wol graffe a perytree
And citurtree in places moist also.
Nowe sharnebodde encombreth the bee.
Pursue on him that slayne anoon he be.
The werkes that in Juyl be lefte undoone
Nowe may thay take an ende in this Aust moone.

Some men now graft pears and citrons. Pursue and kill the sharnbod, or hornet, and do what was left undone in July.

De puteis faciendis.

10.

Now seche and fynde up water in this wyse
Doune lene and lay thi chyn[1] righte to the grounde
Estwarde, and rather thenne the Sonne arise,
And where a subtil myst gynneth to abounde
In dewe upon, ther water may be founde
Ther pitche a mark, and on the lande take yeme[2]
Thayme goode or badde, faire or foule to deme.

Seek for water by leaning your chin to the ground before sun-rise. Pitch upon a mark, and take notice, and judge them good or bad.

11.

The marl hath veynes thynne unsmellyng best;
Sclak sonde lymous & lene, unswete & depe;
Blake erthe humour not moche hath in his chest
Of wynter shoures leide up forto kepe,
For swetly smylleth that lande: clayes wepe
Uncertainly, whoos teres beth right swete.
A man may be right gladde that hem may gete.

Marl has veins of bad smell; loose sand has scanty and muddy water; clays have an uncertain supply of sweet water.

[1] mentum. [2] considera.

12.

Strong gravel and stony land have a certain supply, and where the stone is red, there is abundance, but beware lest it escape through fissures. In flint is cold and wholesome water, in plains hard and tepid.

Sadde sonde gravel, and there eke as beth stonys,
Certain humoure is and in ubertee.
Goode abundance is ther as rody stoon is.
But war: for thai thorough chenes[1] lightly flee.
Amonge flynt stoon atte hilles rootes be
Veynes ynowe, and chillyng colde & seete.
Ther felde hath salte and saad, luke & unsweete.

13.

A good flavour shows they spring from under a mountain; but there are cold springs in plains if the sun is kept off. Withy, reeds, alder, ivy, show there is water.

And if thai savoure wel, thenne thay begynne
Under the mount, eke ere amonge ther be
Welles wel colde in playne ther shades twynne
The Sonne away. Yit signes moo men see
Ther water is, as the fertilitee
Of withi,[2] reede,[3] aller,[4] yvy, or vyne
That ther is water nygh is verrey signe.

14.

Where these grow, dig three feet, broad, and five deep, and put in the ground a vessel upside down. This hole, covered with a hurdle and mould, should remain so till the morrow.

Ther as thai growe, updelve in latitude
Thre foote, and deep v foote into the grounde,
And whenne the Sonne adowne gothe, ther enclude
Of leede or brasse a vessel clene ygrounde
Downwarde the mouthe, upwarde the bottom rounde,
This pitte ywrien with a fleyke and molde
Uppon so dwelle until the morowe sholde.

15.

Take away the hurdle, and if the vessel be damp or moist there is water. An unbaked earthen pot, if there is any water, will be softened.

The next day the fleyke away thou plie,
And se yf this vessel withynne swete,
Or if the dropes therin multiplie,
Withoute doute ther wol be water gete.
A potters potte uneled[5] wol alete[6]
And yf it be leyde therynne the same wyse,
Yf any springe of water ther wol rise.

[1] rimas. [2] salicis. [3] arundo. [4] alnus. [5] non coctum. [6] resolvetur.

16.

Ley ther a flees of woole in like maner,
Yf it conceyve of humoure in oon nyght
That we may wrynge oute of it water clere,
It is recorde of water: eke a light.
In oil by like maner therynne ydight,
Yf it be fonde yqueynte, ther is a veyne
Of water nygh; the nedeth not complayne.

Or a fleece of wool, wringing wet, is a sign, or a lamp if extinguished.

17.

Eke of a fier ther made if smooke ascende
Alle fatty, weet, & cloudy nebulose,
To make a winche al sikour ther descende,
Forto thyne honde wol sprynge or springes ose.[1]
And springes feel into oon may be complose.[2]
In hilles feet towarde Septentrion
Good humour hath multiplicacion.

Or if you make a fire, and the smoke is fat and moist, sink a well with confidence, for springs will ooze, and many may unite in one.

De puteis faciendis.

18.

Goode is bewarre the wynches[3] whenne to delve,
For cley, alum, and brymstoon, otherwhile
Though brynkes stonde and wol not over whelve,
Enfecteth the ayer, and delvers so begile,
That dede thay are inwith a litel while,
But if thay flee: for thi, or thai descende,
A light into the wynche may downe be sende.

Beware of clay, alum, and brimstone, which kill the delvers within a little while unless they fly; therefore, ere they descend, let a light be sent down.

19.

Yf it ne quenche, of perill is ther noon.
Hit quyncheth,—lo! the place is pestilente.
An other way to this is to goone:
On either side a pitte must have descent
Until thi sought licoures libramente.
And ever amonge into the wynche hem thorle,[4]
That wynde away the wicked ayer may hurle.

If it be not quenched there is no danger, and *vice versâ*. Or dig a hole till the water escapes, and bore the well into it that the noxious air may evaporate.

[1] scatere. [2] connexe. [3] puteos. [4] perfores.

20.

Make it eight feet wide and secure it with courses of wood, the walls being of ragstone or flint. A mixture of salt will correct muddiness.

This doon, the sydes make up with structure,
And footes VIII it hold in latitude.
With barres bigge is goode to make it sure;
Or wall it well with ragge or flyntes rude.
In square or round this werk thai may conclude.
If water ther be lymous or enfecte
Admyxtion of salt wol it correcte.

21.

If the brink keep falling in, board it up, and strengthen the boards with transverse planks, lest it close upon thy working men.

And yf thi wynche in digging wol not stande,
But nowe and nowe be fallyng in the brynke,
Peraventure it is so slippyng lande.
Thenne an other crafte thou must be thinke:
Yf bordes holde it oute, it may not synke.
But thai must oute be borne with barres rude,
For doubte if it thi worching men conclude.

De aqua probanda.

22.

Sprinkle it on a clean brass vessel, and if it leave no spot you may maintain it to be good. If, when boiled in a brasen vessel, it leave no sediment at bottom, it is sound.

His water newe is goode a man to preve:
Let springe it on a brason vessel clene,
And yf noo signe of it on the brasse leve,
The droppes here & there appering sene,
That veyne is good prudently to sustene.
Decoct in brasse, yf gravel in the grount
Noone leve is preef that that licour is sount.

23.

Or if food soon boils in it; or if it be clear, without blemish. By piercing the mountain, we may bring a well that stands in high ground to a lower place.

Yf mete in hit wol boile in litel while,
Yf it be cleer appering like the skye,
Withouten wem or signe of thinges vile.
The wynches eke that stonde in hilles hie
To lower stede as welles we may trie.
This must be doon by persyng the mountayne
The water so to lede into the playne.

De aque ductibus.

24.

The water may be ledde by weies three.
In channels, or (in) condites of leede,
Or elles in trowes ymade of tree.
And first in a channel if it be led
In evry hundreth feet downe from the heed
A lite and lite a foote it must avale,
That it have myght so downe the clyf to hale.

Three ways of leading water, viz., channels, conduits, and wooden troughs. In channels it must sink gradually a foot in every 100 feet, that so it may have strength to run down the hill.

25.

And if it happe an hille the water mete,
Let make a lone and through thi licour hale.
Or elles by the side aboute him trete.
And if it sholde affalle into the dale
With piles over that it must avale.
Or make an arche it over on to lede[1]
Or pipes it to conduyt me may lede.[2]

If a hill come in the way, make a lane and force the water through, or let it go round it. Carry it over a valley on piles, or arches, or leaden pipes.

26.

In condites descende into the slade
It may, and on that other side aryse.
But hoolsumest and best is to have made
Trumpes of cley by potters in thaire gise,
And iche of hem II finger thicke assise.
Oon ende ymade so streyne an other sprede,
That iche into other may an hondes brede.

It may descend into the valley in conduits, but wholesomest are clay tubes, one end being made so narrow, the other so wide, that each may go a hand's breadth into the other.

27.

Oil-tempred lyme this joyntes shal scyment,
Thenne ysels[3] myxt with litel water renne
Thorough, deching alle this hoolsom instrument.
The water that goth thorough the leden penne[4]
Is rust-corrupte, unhoolsom; leve it thenne.
And if thi veyne of water be but poore,
The dwellyng-place of it be made the moore.

Cement the joints with lime and oil, or let ashes and water run through. Leaden pipes are unwholesome. Though the vein of water be poor, make a large receptacle.

[1] ducere. [2] plumbare. [3] favilla. [4] condite.

De mensuris & ponderibus fistularum.

28.

1200 lbs. of lead suffice for 1000 ft. of pipes, and in proportion.

The leed condite conteyneth this mesure:
XII C pounde of metal shal suffise
A thousand feet in lengthe of pipes sure.
And so whether the lengthe avale or ryse
The lesse or more of weght for it devise:
As poundes few and footes fewe applie,
So poundes moo to moo feet multiplie.

De onfaco melle.

29.

To make omphacomel: take six pints of half-ripe grapes and two of honey well pounded, and leave it forty days under the beams of the sun.

For comfit that is clept hony-onfake,
Sex sester take of grapes juce half soure,
Two sester hony mightily let brake,
Or stampe, and putte it into this licoure.
Thenne XL^{ti} dayes stonde it every houre
To boile under the bemes of the sonne,
And after kepe it cloose, and it is wonne.

De Horis.

30.

Length of the hours in August.

This Aust and May in houres lengthe are oon.
To XXIII feet next either ende,
And two next hem in feet XIII goon,
And other two to footes IX extende,
And after two the next on VI ascende.
Next after noone, and erst stondyng on IIII is,
And none on III stont up and myddel houre is.

Finis noni libri, et prefacio in decimum librum.

Translator's epilogue.

Thus Aust is spende, O Lorde, alpha and $\hat{\omega}$,
O endlesse ende, O gynnyngles gynnyng,
To make aright until this booke be do
So graunte myght and therwithall connyng,
As myne entente is thyne honoure to spryng,
And jugement; thi pryncis floure on clere
Or cloudy derk or light he must uphinge.
And I to werk am sette atte September.

SEPTEMBER.

BOOK THE TENTH.

De agris pinguibus tertiandis.

1.

Atte Septembr the fatte lande using longe,
Homoure to keep is plowed, and so thrie
It plowed is; the same eke is noo wronge
Rather to doo yf season be not drie.
The playne, humyde, & lene lande espie,
In Aust saide of, nowe plowe it newe ayeine,
And plowed, hoote let kest on it his greyne.

Fat land accustomed to hold its moisture is now ploughed thrice. In a wet season it may be done earlier. Plain, humid, lean land, spoken of in August, is now ploughed again, and immediately planted.

2.

The clyves[1] thynne are ereed nowe & sowe
And nowe nygh equinox. Thi landes dounge,
In hilles thicke, in feldes thynne it throwe.
In wanyng of phebus be thai to flonge;
So may it moost availe and do lest wronge.
And for an acre lande, saithe Columelle,
Carpentes XXIIII is to telle,

Light hills are ploughed and planted towards the equinox. Dung thickly in hills, thinly in plains, at the waning of the moon. Twenty-four carts of dung enough for an acre.

3.

For hilles so; for feldes take XVIII.
And every day as many is to sprede.
And thou that day to plowe up may sustene,
For drede lest the dounge uppe drie and dede.
Alle winter me may dounge also for nede.
Yf dounge in time on lande may not be throwe,
Eke sowe it smal as seede whenne thou wilt sowe.

Dung and plough on the same day, lest the manure dry up. We may dung all the winter; but if it is not done at the right time, sow it like seed.

[1] clivi.

4.

Lay on dung little and often; more on wet land; marl may be spread instead on sandy land, or sand upon clay, for corn or vines. Dung will impair vines.

At ones lite & ofte is goode to dounge,
Weet lande wol more of it than wol the drie;
For lacke of dounge in sondy lande be spronge
Goode marl, and it wol make it multiplie;
And uppon cley the sonde is goode to strie;
That helpeth corne, and maketh vynes feire;
For dounge in vynes wol the vynes peire.

De serendo tritico & adoreo.

5.

In moist, lean, cold, shady land, manage to sow ador (a sort of bread-corn) and wheat at the equinox in serene weather.

This moone in lande uliginose or lene,
And in the landes also that beth colde,
In thicked lande also is to demene,
Whenne day & nyght yliche longe is holde,
Bothe odor (sic) and thi whete in lande to folde.
Whenne ayer is faire, that thay may uppe be spronge,
Er wynter come and wexe a partie stronge.

De remedio humoris & de mensuris.

6.

On salt land spread doves' dung and cypress leaves, and plough it in. Or let good water expel the bad. Four strikes enough for an acre.

Sum lande is wont salt humoure up to throwe
That sleeth the corne. There douves dounge instrie,
And leves of cupresse eke on it sowe,
And eree it ynne. Or thus it remedie:
This fals humour let goode water oute trie.
In mene lande of ador or of whete,
An acre lande to strikes IIII is mete.

7.

Clothe thy hopper (small square field) with a hyæna's skin, and let the seed stand therein a short time. Insects, which destroy the seed, may be kept away with juice of sedum (houseleek).

Thyne hopre cloth hienes skynne, and throwe
Thi seede therin, and stonde it there a stounde,[1]
And, as thai sayen, the better wol it growe.
Yf bestes harme it that beth in the grounde,
Let mynge juce of cedum smal ygrounde
With water, and oon nyght thi seede ther stepe,
And beestes wicke away thus may me kepe.

[1] tempore.

8.

An other juce of wild cucumber useth,
And hath the roote ystamped of the same
With water mixt, and so his seede enfuseth.
Oil dregges fressh of sum men have the name
Of helping from thees beestes worthi blame,
Wherwith thaire landes liketh thai to enoynte
And bathe her plowes therin every joynt.

Others steep the seed in the juice of the wild cucumber, or the root pounded and mixed with water. Some anoint the land and their ploughs with oil-dregs.

De hordeo canterino.

9.

Nowe sowe in smal lande barly canteryne.
V strik an acre hath. Eke nowe or lite
Afore in every lande is kest lupyne.
But sowe it er the coldes angry bite.
It hateth slymy lande and marles white,
And aswel lene it loveth and rubrike.
To sowe oon acre sufficeth x strike.

Sow horse-barley before winter's cold in lean, red soil.

De piso serendo & sisamo.

10.

Late in this moone is pese ysowe in light
Lande and solute; in weet it liketh growe.
With strikes IIII an acre lande in dight.
Sysame in fatte soil and gravel is sowe,
Sex sester in oon acre lande is throwe.
Late in this moone is eke to breke uppe lande
Ther medica shall sowen be to stande.

Sow peas late in the month; four strikes to an acre. Sow also sesame in rich land or gravel, and break up land for clover.

De vicia & Græco fæno & farragine serendis.

11.

Nowe first the fittche is sowen and feyne greek.
Oon acre served is with strikes VII;
Farrage in restyf lande ydounged eek
Is doone, x strike is for oon acre even,
And oute of moolde are colde eke must it heven.
Til May it wol suffice uppon to fede.
But lenger not thenne Marche if it shal sede.

Vetches and fen-greek require seven strikes to the acre. Farrage (matlin) to be sown in stiff land, and it must rise out of the mould ere cold weather. Unless it run to seed, it may be fed upon till May.

De lupino serendo & evertendo.

12.

It will improve poor land to sow lupine.

Also take hede in this Septembər moone,
Where erthes are out of fecunditee
And lene, and nygh this moones Idus sone,
Lupyne into the landes sowen be.
And whenne thay shewe uppe thaire fertilitee,
So turne hem with the plough to putrifie;
And after that thi lande shal multiplie.

De pratis novellis formandis.

13.

Now form new meadows, if you like. Choose those that slope into a valley. Loose land, if watered, will bear grass.

Nowe meedes newe enfourme, if that the like.
Lande dewy fatte so lenyng sumdel playne
In places like a valey, hem thou prike
Where humour nys not longe nər to shor slayne.
Alle other lande of meedes hath disdayne.
Yit lande solute & lene, if it be softe,
Wol bere gresse yf It be watered ofte.

14.

Time to root up trees and herbs, and plough and dung at the waning of the moon.

This tyme is to be stocked every tree
Away with herbes brode, eke root and bough,
And iche impediment oute taken be.
Eke exercise it aftər with the plough
Whenne it of erthe is resolute ynough,
The cloddes broke and piked oute the stonys,
Freshe dounging tyme in wanyng of the moone is.

15.

If cattle tread upon it, they will make it uneven. If moss overgrow it, shave it, and sow hay seeds; and it will not be amiss to scatter ashes to slay the moss.

For any thing noo beest upon it trede,
Uneven it that wolde, it is to drede.
And if olde moos thi medes over lede,
Let shave it clene away in lengthe & brede;
The shaven grounde with sede of hay lete seede.
Eke forto sle this moos is doone noo wronge
Yf askes ofte aboute on it be spronge.

16.

And if thi mede is drossy, barayne, olde,
Let plowe it efte and playne it efte doune lowe.
Eryng is goode for aged meedes holde.
The rape is sowe in hem, eke fitches throwe
Beth ther with hay seede, better forto growe.
Til it be harde unwattred must it be,
Lest alle the werk corrupte humyditee.

If the meadow is drossy and old, plough it again, and level it. Ploughing is good for old meadows. Humidity would spoil all the work.

De vindemia celebranda.

17.

This moone in places warme & nygh the see
Vyndage is hugely to solempnyse;
In places colde arayed fore is he.
The tonnes forto pitche is to devyse:
A tonne of two hundred congys suffise
With poundes xii of pitche, and more or lesse,
After the quantitee therof then gesse.

Preparations to be made for the coming vintage, *e.g.* pitch the casks, 12 lbs. of pitch, more or less, for each cask, according to the size.

18.

Sumen to xx^ti pounde of pitche a pounde
Of wex wol doo, to ese it lest it lepe
In colde; eke wyne to taste and smylle sounde
Fro bitter pitche also thi vynes kepe.[1]
Yf thay be browne and sum eke blake be.
That is a token of maturite.
Upon the grayne in grapes eke take kepe.[2]

Some men add 1 lb. of wax to 20lbs. of pitch, lest it should split. Keep the vines from pitch. A brown and blackish colour is a sign of maturity. Pay attention to the grape-stones.

De panico & milio metendis ac faselo serendo.

19.

Now in sum stede is panyk rope and mylde,
Fasele also is sowen nowe for mete.
Nowe gynnes forto take foules wilde
And other beestes, be thai smale or greet,
By nyght is wrought, and alle to hand ygete,
To exercise atte October kalende,
That joyneth right upon the Idus ende.

In some places panic and millet is now reaped, and phaselus sown. Gins for wild fowl prepared against October.

[1] custodias. [2] attendas.

De papavere, brasica, timo, origano, &c.

20.

Cheese-bowls (poppies) sown now alone or with other seed.
If sown in land which has been burnt they will thrive best.
Sow cabbages to plant out in November, for colewort in winter and spring.

Chesbolles nowe beth sowe in hoote & drie
Allone or other seede with; and it sowe
Ther as thing hath be brent, wol multiplie
Best, as thay sayen; and nowe brasik to growe
For Novembor plauntyng in lande is throwe,
Wherof in Wynter wortes me may have.
And in Veer of the same croppes crave.

21.

Land, wanted in spring for planting, may now be dug three feet deep. Thyme will thrive from plant or seed.
Sow origan at the equinox.

Thi garth, in springing tyme to be sowe,
Thre footes depe may nowe pastyned be;
Atte wanyng moone is dounge in it to throwe.
Nowe tyme, of plaunte or seede, utilitee
Wol do, that loveth lene & nygh the see.
Sowe origon whenne day and nyght is longe
Yliche, and water it till it be spronge.

22.

Sow capers by themselves; for their juice is a foe to other plants: therefore let them not spread. They flourish in summer, and fade at the setting of the Vergilies (Pleiads).

Hit loveth dounge and sharped stony londe.
Nowe cappares ysowen is also,
That by it self is best to make stonde.
Forwhi? hir juce is other herbes foo.
So ditche him in that ferre he may not goo.
In Somor tyme him liketh wel to glade;
That when Virgiles downe gooth gynneth fade.

23.

Gith (or cockle), cresses, dill, radishes, parsnips, cærefolium, lettuce, beet, coriander, rape, and turnip are sown now.

And gith is laste eke in this moone ysowe,
Cresses and dele also in tempre lande,
Or hoote radisshe in drie also wol growe,
Parsnepe and cerfoile also forth may stande
Atte Octobor kalendes kest with hande,
Letuce, and bete, eke coriander seedys,
Nowe rape and neep ysowen goode in dede is.

De pomis scilicet de tuberibus.

24.

Nowe tuberes atte Octobre kalendes,
Or Feberyere, by cornels or slevyng,
The besinesse of settyng ful wel spende is.
Whoos tender youthe applaudeth cherisshinge.
With roote a plaunte up puld and sette wol sprynge,
Oxdounge ennoynte and cleyed in fatte londe
With seefroth upon shelles uppe wol fonde.

Sow tubers from kernels or cuttings. They require care at first. A plant pulled up with a root will grow. Anointed with ox-dung and clay, sea-weed and shells, it will mount up.

25.

Thre greynes sume oute of an appul take,
And sonne ydried sette him III and III,
Oon springe nature of greynes III wol make,
That wette and dolven besily must be,
And oon yere olde hem plaunted is to se.
So wol thaire fruite be swete, in Janyveer
Graffe him in quynce, and eke in Feveryeer.

Some take apple-pips dried in the sun, and plant three together. Nature will make one to spring out of three grains. Grafted on quince after a year in January or February, they will bear sweet fruit.

26.

And graffe it best in plumme[1] and peretree
In Meles Calabrike, and with a rynde,
Or skeppe, or potte, ydounged moolde be
Upholden to the graffe until it finde
Almoost the toppe. The same crafte is kynde
For meles eke. This tubre fruyte men kepe
In mylde or pitched pottes leide to slepe.

It does best in plums, pears, and Calabrian apples in the rind; or let a skip (basket) with dunged earth be placed over it. Tubers may be kept laid to sleep in millet.

De pavimentis & lateribus & de diamo.

27.

Nowe floores me may pave, and brikes make,
As is the crafte described erst in May.
Sycomore wilde a certayne is to take
And boile it so, not with to greet affray.
Two parties of this juce is forto allay
With oon part of hony. Up boile it thenne,
And stere it until hony thicke it renne.

To make *diamoros* take a certain quantity of wild sycamore, boil it gently, and temper with one-third honey, and stir it till it mix.

[1] pruno.

De servandis uvis.

28.

Choose grapes to keep neither too ripe nor too sour, bright as gems, soft and hard to the touch; pull off the corrupted ones; burn the stalks of the clusters in hot pitch, and suspend them in a cool, dry place.

Trie oute the grape unhurt, neither to ripe
Neither to soure, as gemmes luculent,
Of softe and hardde as goodly is to gripe,
Tho puld of that corrupcion hath shent,
The closter tenes[1] in hoote picke be blent.[2]
Suspende hem so in colde hous, drie, obscure,
Ther noo light in may breke, and thai beth sure.

Ce vite cujus fructus humore putrescit.

29.

A vine suffering from moisture should be trimmed only on the sides, the upper branches being left as a protection from the Sun.

A vyne whoos fruite humoure wol putrifie.
Pampyned is to be by every side,
Relicte on hit oonly the croppes hie
Fro Sonnes heete her gemmes oonly to hide.
And thenne rooted wol the grape abyde.
Septembər is with Aprill houres even,
For Phebus like in either gireth heven.

De horis.

30.

The length of the hours in September: 1st and last, 24ft.; 2nd and 10th, 14ft.; 3rd and 9th, 10ft.; 4th and 8th, 7ft.; 5th and 7th, 5ft.; noon, 3ft. (qu. 4). First subtract, then multiply.

Er either ende is XIII and XI
And next her either ende is VII twye,
And thridde is X, and fourthe is fully VII,
And fifte is V, and none is III stonte hie.
Surtrete hem first, and aftər multiplie.
As in Aprille is in sense is saide the same
In other speche, yf I be not to blame.

Finis Septembris; prefacio in Octobrem.

Translator's epilogue.

Septembər is anende. Honoure, empire,
Laude, Ympne, and Bliss ascende (un)to oure Eterne
Almighty Lorde, that wolde us alle enspire
In werk his worde to holde, if galle interne,
Yf synne in oure entente hem nolde externe.
O Jesse floure, so hent and bold us heer
To fle fro synne and derk fire sempiterne,
As me to gynne a werk atte Octobeer.

[1] botryonum tenaces. [2] or brent.

OCTOBER.

BOOK THE ELEVENTH.

De adoreo, & tritico, & hordeo canterino.

1.

Atte October is whete & ador sowe.
Just sowyng of hem is fro x kalende
Of November until vi Idus blowe
Of December, and thenne is it atte ende.
This moone is dounge (is) caried oute on ende.[1]
This moone is sowe eke barly canteryne;
Lande lene, or fatte, or drie, is for it digne.

The regular time for sowing different sorts of wheat is from Oct. 22 to Dec. 8. Sow also horse-barley.

2.

Hit holdeth ther as seedes seldom growe,
And gretly hateth it al dounged londe.
Now fitches, pese and lupynes beth sowe,
Sysame also right, as beforne is fonde,
Sowe at this moones Ide; eke after honde
Fasele in fatte or bareyne lande wol rise,
And strikes iiii oon acre shal suffice.

It flourishes where other seeds will not grow.

De lini semine serendo.

3.

Nowe lynneseede, if the likest, may be sowe;
But sowe it not; it souketh oute the swete
Of every lande; and, if thou wilt it growe,
Sowe it in fattest landes sumdel wete;
VIII strik of it is for oon acre mete.
Eke summen sowe it thicke in lene lande,
And subtile flax ynough theron wol stande.

Linseed sucks out the strength of the land.

[1] diligenter.

De notanda vitium fertilitate.

4.

Mark the fertility of a vine, but one year's growth is not enough as a proof.

Nowe nede is sette a signe on every vyne
That fertile is, scions of it to take
For setting. Columelle oon yeres signe
Reputeth not ynough preef forto make
Of fertillesse; but if it never slake
In yeres foure of bering forth expresse,
This is a preef of craftes gentillesse.

De ponendis vineis vel propagandis.

5.

Late in this month propagate vines in a hot dry air. Cutting and dressing, etc., to be done now in hot, dry, lean land.

Nowe late in lande ther ayer is hoot & drie,
And erthe exile or hilly drie or lene,
Vynes beth best ysette to multiplie.
Settyng, kytting, and pastynyng demene,
Trailing, repairyng, bosshing vyne clene,
As taught is erst, yf lande be drie, exile,
Hoot, gravelly, and gladsom other while.

6.

Where land is of that nature, frosts have no domination.

So holpen is the vyne of winter rayne
Ayaine the landes lene povertee,
So drinketh it that is of drynkes fayne,
That is not wont of frostes vexed be,
For ther as lande is of that qualitee
The frostes na noo dominacion.
Nowe cometh este ablaqucacion.

De ablaqueandis vitibus.

7.

Cut away superfluous roots, and let the vine balance on tiptoe; but cut not the roots too close, lest too many shoot out, or lest they fester.

Afte̊r this moones Ide of Vynes yonge
The rootes voide away be kitte, lest they
Be cause of deth unto the rootes stronge;
And so right on the tiptoo let hem gey[1]
So shal she not for hoote nor colde obey.
But kitte hem not to nygh, lest thei abounde
Three toon for oon, or feestern into a wounde.

[1] librare.

8.

Kitte hem a finger froo, and if ther be
Wynter plesaunt, apert is hem to leve;
And violent yf thou the wynter se
Decembər Idus wrie hem, lest it greve.
For over colde doo douves dounge at eve
Aboute her roote, algour away to dryve.
Eke Columelle hath this yeres fyve.

Cut them an inch from (the stock). In a fine winter leave them apart (uncovered); in a severe one, cover them at the Ides of December. Doves' dung will keep away cold. Columella says do so five years.

De utilitate propagationis, de inserendis arboribus.

9.

In Septembər the propagacion,
In landes suche as tolde is of before,
Is best to sette in occupacion:
For nowe thai maketh rootes lesse and more.
And whi? for branches nowe may thai noo more.
Summen also nowe graffeth vyne and tree;
But that in hattest lande is wont to be.

Now is the time for propagating trees; for they now make roots, not branches. Some men graft vines now in hot land.

De olivetis instituendis & purgandis.

10.

In places nowe that hattest beth and faire,
As erst is saide, make uppe thyne olivete,
And alle that longeth to thaire semynaire.
Of olyvetes tyme is on to swete.
Olives white eke nowe confite hem swete,
As ahal be taught; eke there is warme and drie,
Ablaqueate hem that thai may undrie.[1]

In hot places now make olive-yards, and all that belongs to the seed-bed. It is time for olives to sweat. Now preserve sweet white olives. In dry places ablaqueate them, that they may become moist.

11.

Pulle of ich plaunte, as chargeth Columelle;
Yet thinketh me the saddest ever amonge
Were husbondrie a parcel forto dwelle,
That whenne the damme is feint, the childe be stronge.
In stede of semynary werk, to fonge
On foote and goo: eke atte III yeres holde
Hem goode to dounge; and namely ther is colde.

Contrary to Columella's direction, methinks it is good husbandry to leave a few shoots amongst the strongest to succeed the parent stock and go at once to the olive-yard instead of the seed-bed. Dung them at three years, especially where it is cold.

[1] humere.

12.

Six lbs. of goat's dung for one tree; or let every tree engage a strike of ashes, and let the moss be removed. If boughs are barren, weak, or old, single them out yearly. If they will not fructify, help them thus:

Six pounde of gootes dounge is for oon tree,
Or evry tree a strike of askes gage,
The mosse alway yrased from hem be.
Eke Columelle hem kitteth VIII yere age.
But I saye bareyne, feynt, or in dotage,
Yf bowes be, hem yerly utter trie.
And help hem thus if thay nyl fructifie:

13.

Let a French wimble bore into the pith; thrust in a branch of rugged wild olive, and at once cast oil dregs, or old urine, upon their roots laid bare. Thus a barren tree will bear. It is good to graft them in the wild state.

Unto the pith a ffrenssh wymble in bore,
Threste in a braunche of roggy wilde olyve,
Threste ynne it faste, and to thaire rootes store
Alle naked made oildregges kest as blyve
Or old uryne. In this maner do thrive
A barayne tree to childe; in this courage
Hem forto graffe is goode, as sayen the sage.

Remedium si uva compluta est.

14.

Clean brooks and ditches. If rain has made grapes watery, it is best to get all the must coming from them after the first heat into another vessel. The water will let all sediment remain behind.

Nowe purge upp broke and diche; eke if greet rayne
The grape hath weete, after the formest hete
Of must of hem comyng, as Grekes sayne,
Is best alle into other vessel gete.
The water wol behinde alle heirylete.
This wyne translated thus is save & pure
And waterles. For whi? It hath his cure.

De oles viridi & laurino faciendo.

15.

Take fresh olives, diverse as is their colour, to keep over the evening; spread them, lest they heat. Remove dry rotten berries, strew on them whole, not ground, salt, and put them quickly into new baskets.

Fresshest olyve is taken, so dyvers
As his colour is, and, to dwelle ore eve,
Let brede hem, lest thai hete & be the wers.
Eke everie drie or roton cors remeve,
And rather hool thenne groundon salt let streve
On hem III strike on X strike of olyve,
And into skeppes newe hem haste as blyve.

16.

This savery salt alle nyght so let hem drinke,
And erly sette on werkyng hem the wrynge;
A savery oil ther wol oute of it synk;
But first with water warme is to bespringe
The chanels of this oile and vessellyng.
Lest rancoure oil enfecte, do fler away.
Nowe eke is oil to make of laury bay.

Let them drink up the salt all night, and early set the press at work upon them. First sprinkle with warm water the pipes and vessels of this oil. Keep away fire, lest the oil become rancid.

De herbis in orto serendis & plantandis.

17.

The winter goolde is sowen in this moone,
That loveth weet solute and gravel londe.
In salt lande nygh the see thay springeth sone,
But make hem playne upon to stonde,
Lest rootes bare, if molde fle, be fonde.
And katrefoil, whenne thai beth up yspronge,
Transplaunte hem into lande ydight with dounge.

Endive loves wet and loose gravel. It grows quickly near the sea; but let it stand in a plain, lest, if mould fall, the roots be found bare. Transplant quatrefoil into manured land.

18.

The tasul plaunte is also nowe to sette,
Thre foote ich oon of hem from other stonde.
The rootes cropped first and dounge ywette,
The increment in hem is to be fonde.
In wynter dayes drie uppon thaire londe
Let dounge and askes kest: eke now is sowe
Senvey that wolde in hardest lande be throwe.

Set teasles three feet apart, the roots being first clipped and moistened with dung; they will increase. In winter cast dry dung and ashes on their beds. Sow mustard in hard ground.

19.

Yit every where it maketh plaunte & flour;
And fedd it is to dust; is ofte and weete.
But litel joy hath it of moche humour.
And as for seed in natal soil it fede
Transplauntyng as for meet is better dede
To make hem stronge; if it withinne is grene
For sauce or seede that grayne is to sustene.

It is nourished by dust: it does not like much wet. For seed keep it in its own soil: for meat it is better to transplant it, to make it strong. If it be green inside, it is good for sauce and for seed.

20.

Mallow is kept back by winter from growing long or large. It likes rich moist land and dung. Transplant when it has four or five leaves. The tender plant takes best and grows quickly; that transplanted large is sickly: those not removed have best taste.

This moone is malowe ysowe, and to be longe
The winter latteth it, or greet to thryve.
And gladde is it of fatte lande weet and dounge.
Eke hem transplaunte atte leves IIII or V.
The tender plaunte is take anoon, and blyve
Upgoth, and sekkul beth the greet ysette,
And thay that stille stondeth savereth bette.

21.

A clod or a stone will prevent their growing too fast: they require to be planted thin and often weeded: but pull up the weeds one by one, that none of the roots be moved; by making a knot in the root, they become tender and sweet.

But to fast into croppes lest thai rise
Ley softe a litel clodde on, or a stoon;
Ofte weded rare ysette eke is thaire gise;
But to pulle uppe the weedes oon and oon
That roote of it be meved therby noon.
And yf me make a knotte on everie roote
Thay wol be frogh ynough and tender soote.

22.

Dill, mint, capers, bete, etc., are sown this month.

Nowe dile is sowe in places temporate,
Also the mynte is in this moone ysowe,
And onyons forto sowe eke tyme is atte,
Pasneep, and origon, and Tyme is throwe
In moolde, as nowe Armarik wol growe
Nowe sowe or sette; and bete in landes drie
Is in this moone ysette to multiplie.

23.

Transplant leeks that they may grow to head; and weed it often; and raise it a little, so as to leave a hollow. Basilicon grows quickly if a little vinegar be sprinkled on it.

Nowe leek ysowe in Veer transplaunted be
That it may hede, and ofte aboute it weede
And lifte her plaunte a litel quantitee
So holgh to stande and in the heed to sprede.
Basilicon eke nowe to sowe I rede
That springeth sone if aisel on hem reyne
I mene on hem al light if it me spreyne.

De pomis colendis & pomis condiendis.

24.

Who wol do perveaunce in worldes longe
The palmes forto sette he must have mynde.
Nowe dates bones trie out fatte & yonge
And hem that freshest newe are in thaire kynde
Hem under erthe in moolde and askes wynde.
Aprille or May the plaunte is in to sette.
Hoote land thay love, and often to be wette.

He who would look forward to future ages must plant the palm. Now select date-stones.

25.

Solute or sondy landes thai require,
So that aboute or under hem be do
A certayne of fatte lande as thai desire.
And hem transplaunte oon yere of age or two;
But do this first in Juyn and Juyl also;
Eke delve it ofte, and forto kepe of hete
Ay with and with licoure on hit to trete.

Palms require a certain quantity of rich land; transplant them when they are a year or two old; and to keep off heat, water them every now and then.

26.

Salt water helpeth palme, or of nature
Or made: and yf the tree begynne seke[1]
The dregges olde of wynes wol it cure,
So it unto the bared rootes seke.[2]
The heer do barke away from either cheke
Of everie roote, or make a saly pynne
And in the rootes clifte let drive it ynne.

Natural or artificial salt-water is good for palms, and if the trees begin to sicken, the dregs of old wine will cure them, searching to the roots. Cut off the hair (filaments) of each root, or drive in a pin of willow.

27.

The lande is nought for fruite that palmes growe
Untilled ynne. Pistace is in this moone
Of plauntes sette outher of nuttes sowe.
But men & women sette together sowe
Wol fructifie, and so it is to done.
The man is he that hath under his rynde
Like bones longe stones as mankynde.

Land in which palms grow naturally is not good for fruit. Pistachio nuts grow from plants or kernels; but plant male and female nuts together. The male has a long bony substance under the rind.

[1] ægrotare. [2] quærat.

28.

Others smite out the head of small baskets, and put dunged mould into it, and there plant three nuts; and from each will rise a germ. It is right to transplant it in February.

And other use an other diligence;—
Thay smyteth oute the hede of skeppes smale,
And dounged moolde in it they wol dispense,
And therin doo pistaces III by tale;
And of hem alle up wol ther a stale.[1]
In Feveryere when it is waxen stronge,
If me transplaunte hit not me doth his wronge.

29.

It may be grafted on a terebinth tree in February, or on an almond in March. The cherry does not thrive in heat.

He loveth moiste & hoote & often drinke;
In terebynt in Feveryer is he
Ygraffed, and in Marche as other thinke
He may be graffed in an Almauntree.
Colde ayer and weete lande hath the chiritree.
Thaire fruites wol be smale in places warme,
And hetes that be greet wol eke hem harme,

30.

Cherries grow quickly on hills. Transplant now and in November; but in January, when they have taken root, graft them. Plant them in these three months, and they will grow quickly.

In hilles sette upgooth with merie chere,
And nowe transplaunted beth thaire plauntes wilde,
In Novembor also; but Janyvere,
Whenne thai beth take & gynneth go with childe,
Hem is it goode to graffe in dayes mylde,
Or in this moones thre thaire pomes springe[2]
In moolde, and plauntes faste of it wol springe.[3]

31.

A proof of the increase of the cherry-tree is that the cuttings which have been used for vine-props have grown anon into large trees. In January, November, or October, it is time to graft them; Marcial says in the trunk, I say in the rind.

I preved have encrece of Chiritree.
The yerdes that my vyne I sette unto
Anoon hath growen up an huge tree.
In Janyveer and Novembor also,
And other sayen in Octobor therto,
Ys hem to graffe in trunncke, as Marcial
Saith, I in rynde have founde it goode atte al.

[1] planta. [2] sere. [3] nasci.

32.

And, as he saith, in truncke who wol hem doo
Must pike away the downe of alle the tree,
For many a graff, he saithe, it hath fordoo.
This observaunce is to be kept, saithe he,
In chiritreen, and alle that gummy be:
To graffe hem whenne noo gume upon hem growe,
Or elles whenne it stynteth oute to flowe,

If they are grafted in the trunk, the down must be picked off; otherwise it will ruin the graft. In all gummy trees grafting must take place when there is little or no gum.

33.

In plane, & in himself, in populeer
He graffed is, and in the plowme-tree.
In delves deep he is of mery cheer.
Greet rowme and delvyng often loveth he.
Kitte hem that dote or drie or densed be.
Thay hateth dounge; it dooth hem oute of kynde.
Nowe crafte to have hem stoonles kepe in mynde.

Graft cherries on planes, cherries, or poplars, or plums. They delight in deep holes, much space, and frequent digging. Cut them if they are decayed, dry, or too thick. Dung injures them.

34.

Withouten stoon wel wol thai growe & cheve,
As Marcial saithe, if a tender tree
Me kitte atte footes tweyne, and thenne it cleve
Unto the roote, and with an yron se
The mary raised oute, and closed be
Hit sone ayenie; and binde it, wrappe in dounge
His heede and either half the slitte in longe.

Cherries will grow without stones if you cut a young tree at two feet, cleave it to the root, and see the marrow scraped out with an iron. Close it again, and wrap in dung the head and the two halves along the slit.

35.

And in oon yere uppe heleth it atte ones.
Thenne in it doo graffes that never bere,
Therof wol be chires withouten stoones.
And that the trunkes roteth if thou here
Humoure ytake out of hem it to pere,[1]
By grounde into the stocke it is to bore.
Of auntes harme a crafte is eke therfore.

In one year it heals. Graft on it shoots that have never borne, and cherries without stones will grow on it. If the trunk rots, and moisture flows out of it, you must bore a hole in the stock.

[1] effluere.

86.

Against ants sprinkle on the tree the juice of purslain mixed with vinegar, or winedregs will drive them thence, when the tree flowers; and if the dog-star make them faint and cheerless, pour on their roots at eve a pint of water taken from each of three wells.

Held on the tree the juce of Portulake
Half aisel mixt, and forth thai goth yfere.
Or wyne dregges wol make hem thens slake
As floures gynne; and if Canyculere
So make hem faynt, hoote, & of drury chere,
A sester take atte iche of welles three,
And on thaire rootes atte eve it poured se.

87.

But it must not be done by moonlight. Or the herb, called Symphoriac, is twisted like a crown round the trunk; or make a bed of it near the root. Take cherries sun-dried when they begin to wrinkle. Plant apples.

But let not Echate[1] this crafte espie.
Outher an herbe is, clept symphoriake,
Ylike a crowne aboute her bodie plie;
Or nygh the roote a couche of it thou make.
And chiries in the sonne ydried take
And kepe as thay begynne in ryvullyng.[2]
This moone also the male is sette to sprynge.

38.

The apple is planted in hot soil; quince and service-tree on the 1st of November, and almonds. Pine is also to be sown, and fruits to be kept for preserves, as has already been taught of each.

The male is sette in landes hoote & drie.
At Novembər kalendes quynce ane serve[3]
In semynaire is sette to multiplie.
And of the same an almandtree thay serve.[4]
Nowe pyne is sowe, and pomes forto observe
In condiment is nowe to make afore,
Of iche of hem as erst is taught the lore.

De apibus castrandis.

39.

The bees are again to be deprived of their honey, if they are rich; otherwise, leave the half their goods; if poor it is wicked to rob them. Attend to what is to be said of wine.

Castracion the been have efte this moone,
As said is erst, if thai be riche, and elles
To leve hem halfe thaire goodes is to doone,
And if povert appere in thaire celles,
That robbeth hem wel worthi go to hell is.
Hony and wex as erst is nowe to make.
What shal be saide of wyne is tente to take.

[1] luna. [2] rugas h(ab)ere. [3] sorbus. [4] faciunt.

De vinis pomorum.

40.

That I have redde, and Greekes in thaire faith
Afferme I thinke it here to you declare.
This difference in wine thaire writyng saith
Ther is, that swettest wynes hevy are,
The white a partie salt is not to spare,
The bledder helpeth it, the yolgh coloured
Digestion is greetly by socured.

Greeks say that sweet wines are heavy; white saltish wine is good for the bladder; by yellow wine digestion is assisted.

41.

The stiptik white a stomake that is laxe
Wol helppe enducing coloure that is pale
And lesse of bloode in man therof wol waxe;
From grapes blake a mighty wyne wol hale;
And swete of rede; and swettest from the smale;
And fro the white is drawe a commune wyne,
But condyment is thus to make it fyne.

A white styptic helps laxity, inducing paleness and making little blood. Black grapes make a strong wine, red a sweet. Common wine is from white grapes.

42.

The must decocte to his medietee
Or thridde parte thay caste to thaire wyne.
But Grekes have an other subtiltee:
Of see quyete up taketh thai maryne
Water purest, oon yere thai lete it fyne,
Wherof thai sayen so maade is the nature,
Of bitternesse or salt that it is sure.

To flavour wine, the Greeks add to it must boiled down to a half or third. Another contrivance is to take clean water from the sea when quiet, and let it fine for a year. They say it is thus free from salt and bitterness.

43.

This age alle ille odoure eschaungeth sweete.
The VIIIth part therof in must thay doo;
The vth part of gipse is therto meete.
And after dayes three thai gothe therto,
And mightily thai route it to and fro.
Thus dight, thay sayen that longe thai wol endure,
And in coloure be resplendent & pure.

Its 8th (qu. 80th) part they mix with must, and a 5th (qu. 50th) of gypsum. After three days stir it well, and it will keep long and be brilliant.

44.

Every nine days it should be stirred, especially in a late vintage.

Iche daies IX a wyne is to be moeved,
And namely when ther is a latte vyndage.
Frequent observation will teach what to keep and what to send away. Some plunge three oz. of resin into the barrel to make it keep.
By seyng ofte is what to hold ypreved
And what is goode to send on pilgramage.
Of resyne drie and stamped sumen gage
Three unces into a tonne, and alto meve
It, and it shal endure, as thay byleve.

45.

They know by tasting, whether the must has been damaged by rain, and they boil away the 20th part, and cure it with 100th part of gypsum.

The must that is byrayned thus thai cure :[1]
By taste thay wite yf it berayned be,
The XX part away to boile, her cure[2]
Is first of gipse an hundreth quantitee
Doon with ; and other wol it boiled se
Until the V^the^ parte of it consume,
And after yeres IIII in use assume.

46.

Sour wines are made sweet by two cyathi of barley meal, left in one hour ; and some add dregs of sweet wine, or dry liquorice, and use it after it has been long shaken.

Of wynes soure is taught to make sweet
With barly floure, and not but cruses[3] two,
As for a smalle vessel so moche is meete,
An houre into the wyne let it be doo.
And oon doth dregge of swete wyne therto.
Of glizicide a parte he hath infuse
All drie, and longe yshogged it wol use.

47.

In a few days wine acquires best odour if myrtle-berries dried and ground, or pounded, are allowed to sink in the barrel for ten days ; or keep sweet flowers dried in the shade.

And best odour hath wyne in dayes lite,
The bay of myrte agrest mountaine and drie
Yf that me grynde, or braying al to smyte,
And into a wyne barel downe let hem sie,[4]
And after dayes X theroute of trie.
Or floures sweete of vyne or other tree
In umber dried may reserved be.

[1] sanant. [2] cura. [3] ciati. [4] descendere.

48.

But bray hem smal, & presse hem in a newe
Vessel, and whenne thou wilt, on kades thre
Of wyne a certayne of this floures snewe,
And closed fast uppon the vessel se;
At dayes VI ydroken may it be.
And forto make a wyne to drynke swete
Of saturege or fenel putte in meete.

And pound them small and sprinkle a certain quantity of them on three casks of wine, and close them for six days, or put in a sufficient quantity of savoury or fennel.

49.

Other the fruyte of pynes nuttes two
Wol bake, and in a cloothe into the wyne
Vessel let honge, and cleme it wol therto.
Atte dayes V yserved this wyne is.
To other crafte an ere eke to enclyne is:
Howe vynes yonge as olde shal appere:
Who liketh have that crafte may lerne it here,—

Others bake the fruit of two pine-nuts and let them hang in a cloth in the vine-vessel, and plaster it well over. Give ear to another method how to make young vines appear old.

50.

The soure Almaunde, & wermode, & feyn greeke,
Frote hem yfere asmoche as wol suffice,
The gumme of fructifying pynes eke,
And bray alle aswel as thou canst devyse.
A cruce into a stene of wyne devise:
Confected thus ther wol be wynes greet.
Lest thay enfecte is forther nowe to trete:

Rub together sour almonds, wormwood, and fengreek, and the gum of fruit-bearing pine. Put a cruse of it into a stone of wine: thus they will be made great wines.

51.

Tak aloen & murre & magma with
Saffron, of iche iliche, and thus demene
With brayyng whenne thay made to pouder beth
Let mynge hem with an hony that is clene,
A cruse of this nowe putte in a wyne stene;
And save thay are; and wynes of oon yere
Atte passing age is thus to make appere.

Take equally of aloes, myrrh, saffron-dregs, and when they are pounded to a powder, mix them with pure honey, put a cupful into a stone of wine, and it will make new wine appear old.

52.

One ounce of meliot, three of liquorice, three of Celtic nard, stamp them small with two ounces of hepatic aloes, put into a vessel in the smoke, will make wine appear ancient

An unce of melion, of gliciride
Thre unce, and take asmoche of narde Celtike:
Let stampe hem also smal as may betyde,
With aloes tweyne unces epatike;
Let vessel it, and set it uppe in smyke.[1]
Sex spoonful putte in v sester wyne
Wol make it auntceaunt appere and fyne.

53.

Bean-mash changes dark wine to white; or the white of three eggs; or a mash of African beans.

The wynes browne eschaungeth into white
Yf that me putte in it lomente[2] of bene.
To putte also in oon galon the white
Of eyron III, and shake it in his stene,
The next day al white it wol be clene.
Of Afre[3] pese if thou do to loment,
The same day it serveth thyne entent.

54.

If one burns a vine, black or white, and casts it into wine, it will take the same colour. Into a tun of wine put a strike of this burnt vine for three days.

The vyne also thai sayen hath that nature,
That vynes yf me brenne, or white or blake,
And kest hem into wyne, me may be sure
The wyne coloure after the vynes take,
For white of white, and broune of browne, shal wake.
But therof into a tonne a strike donne be,
That is x stene, and there be dayes three,

55.

Close it and let it remain forty days. To make a mild wine strong, boil the leaf, root, or stalk of wild mallow, and cast it in the wine.

So close it, XL dayes let it rest.
An esy wyne a man to make stronge,
Take leef, or roote, or caule of malowe[4] agrest,
And boyle it, kest it so thyne wyne amonge.
Or gipse, or askes twey cotuls no wronge
Thi wynes doth, III piluls of cupresse
Or leef of boxe an handful thereto gesse.

[1] fumo. [2] lomentum. [3] Afra. [4] althea.

56.

Or ache seede, & askes of sarment
Wherof the flaume hath lefte a core exile,
The body so, not alle the bones, brent;—
Also a man may in oon dayes while
So trete a stordy wyne that it shal smyle,
And of a rough drinker be clere and best.
Now se the crafte is easy and honest.

Or parsley-seed, or ashes of burnt vine-cuttings from which the flame has taken body and strength: and in one day a strong and rough wine may be made light and clear.

57.

Take pepur cornes x and twye as fele
Pistacies, hem with a quantitee
Of wyne to stampe as smal as thou may dele,
And to vi sester wyne comyxt it be,
And route of so that thay togeder fle.
Nowe let hem rest, and clense hem, and to use
Hem right anoone ther wol noo man refuse.

Mix ten peppercorns and twice as many pistachio nuts stamped as small as possible with six pints of wine, and shake well together.

58.

A trouble[1] wyne anoon a man may pure:
Seven curnels of a pyne appul do
In oon sester of wyne that is ympure,
And travaile it a tyme to and fro,
And after suffre it to rest (to) go,
Anoon it wol receyve a puritee:
So clensed thenne & used may it be.

A muddy wine is made clear by putting seven kernels of pine-apple into a pint, and working it well.

59.

Cretenses were ytaught of Apollo,
As it is saide, of aloes epatik
Foure unces, and of squinuant therto
Asmoche, and oon unce of fynest mastic,
Fyne mirre an unce, and of the piste Indik
But half an unce, an unce of mascul thure
Wel smellyng, and an unce of pepur dure,—

Four oz. of hepatic aloes, four oz. of sweet rush, one oz. of pine mastick, one oz. of fine myrrh, half-oz. of Indian spikenard, one oz. of sweet male frankincense, and one oz. of hard pepper:

[1] feculentum.

60.

Beat small and strain, and when your must boils skim off the top carefully. Take gypsum and pulverize it by stamping; strain it and add three Italian pints to ten stones (amphoræ) of this wine thus skimmed.

Bete all this smal, and sarce it smothe atte alle.
And whenne the must boileth scome of the grape
That wol rise and be superficialle,
So take hem that nought oon of hem escape.
Take gipse and it with stamping al to frape
Sarce it, thre sexster Ytalike be do
To stenes x of wyne yscommed so.

61.

But first bring a quarter of this wine into another vessel; then add the gypsum to it and stir it with a fresh green reed; on the third day let four spoonfuls of this powder be added to ten stones of the wine;

But first this wyne forsaide the fourthe part
Into sum oth*r* vessel is to brynge,
Therto this gipse is after to departe,
And with a reede all greene of fressh growinge
Two dayes in his turne it alto flynge,
The thridde day of this wyne in x stene
Let spoones foure of this powder demene;

62.

Then let the fourth that was taken out be added to fill up the cask; stir it till the spices be mixed with the must. Stop it up, leaving only a little breathing-hole to allay their boiling heats.

Thenne unto it the fourthe parte be doo
That fro was take, and so fille up the tonne,
And move it long tyme to and froo
Til alle this spice amonge this must be ronne.
So stoppe it uppe all save from wynde or sonne,
Yit leve a litel hool oute atte to brethe
Thaire heetes estuant forto alethe

63.

Close up this spiracle in forty days, and drink when you like. A naked boy is best to move it. Ashes of vine-cuttings are the best plaster for the casks.

And after xl dayes this spiracle
Is uppe to close, and whenne the list, it drinke.
The taste therof wol fare as a miracle.
But whenne wyne is to move, uppon this thinke,
A naked childe may best uppon it swynke,
Or oon as pure as he. In lynyment
For tonnes best dothe askes of sarment.

64.

Goode stomak wyne and counter pestilence
Thus make: of fynest must in oon me trete,[1]
Or it be atte the state of his fervence,
VIII unce of grounden wermode in a shete
Dependaunt honge, and XL^{ti} dayes swete;
Thenne oute it take; in lomes smaller hent
This must, and use it as wyne pestilent.

For a stomachic wine against pestilence: in a metrete (or kilderkin) of fine must, ere it boil, suspend eight oz. of pounded wormwood in a linen bag (or sheet), and let it stew there forty days; then take it out, and place this must in smaller vessels.

65.

Nowe thai condite her must egestion
That wol with gipse her wynes medicyne.
In light smal wyne withouten question
Two sester gipse ynough is to reclyne,
An hundreth conge wyne to that assigne.
And yf the wyne be sadde and mighty rounde,
Therto shal oon sester of gipse abounde.

Those who medicate their wine with gypsum, flavour it now, after the must has settled. In light wines two pints of gypsum are enough for 100 *congii*, or gallons; in strong wines one.

De rosato sine rosa faciendo.

66.

Nowe is rosate ymade withouten rose:
Take leves green ynough of Citur tree
And in a palmy basket hem dispose,
And into must that yit not fervent be
Depose, and close or faste it closed se.
This taken oute atte XL dayes ende
Kest hony to, and as Rosate it spende.

To make rose-wine without roses, put citron-leaves into a palm-basket; throw them into must not yet boiling; close, and after forty days add honey.

De vinis pomorum; de ynomelle.

67.

Now everie wyne of pomes is to make
As crafte is taught before, iche in his moone.
Of greet and noble vynes nowe let take
Of must asmoche as semeth the to doone.
Atte XX^{ti} dayes ende it (is?) not to soone.
Oute of the pitte after that it is do,
The V^{the} part of hony rough putte to.

Every kind of apple-wine is made now. Take as much must of large vines as you think fit twenty days after it has been lifted from the vat, add the fifth part of honey.

[1] potius metrete.

68.

Not scummed fine, stirred till it become white; see it stirred well with a green reed for forty days, or rather fifty, covered all the while with a cloth; then take up with clean hands all the froth.

Not scomed fyne, wel stamped must it be
Until it white, and moeve it mightily
With reede algrene, and XL dayes se,
Or better L, doon contynuelly;
Aye with a shete, ycoverted clenly;
After this tyme in handes clene uphent
Alle that wol swymme and be superfluent.

69.

Then plaster it up to keep. It is better to keep it in small vessels and transfuse and plaster it in the spring, and put it down in a cellar, or in cold earth or river sand, or make a hole on the spot, and plunge it in. These drinks keep for long ages.

So gipse it uppe, and kepe it for thyne age;
But bette is kepte in pitched loomes smale,
And next atte veer let gipse hem, and forth gage,
And in a celle or colde erthe hem avale,
In floode gravel, or ther thay stonde a dale
Do make, and drenche hem therin: til worldes longe
This drinkes wol abyde, and aye be stronge.

(*De*) *defructo, careno, & sapa.*

70.

Three sorts of wine, viz. defrutum, carenum, and sapa, are made in the same manner. In the first the must is boiled till it thicken. In the second one part out of three is boiled away; in the other one-third alone remains. Mix quinces with sapa, and make the fire of figtree.

Defrut, carene, & sape in oon manere
Of must is made. Defrut of defervyng
Til thicke; carene is boyled nere
From three til two; but sape unto oon lette brynge
Fro three; and alle this crafte mys but boylinge.
But sape is best if quynces therwith be
Decocte, and alle the fier made of figtree.

De passo.

71.

Raisin wine is thus made in Africa before vintage: they put a large quantity of raisins into fine rush baskets, beat them with sticks until they blend with the grapes, and then press them.

Now passe is made, that Affrike useth make,
Afore vyndage; and thus this crafte thai trete.
A multitude of reysons puld thay take
And into risshy frayels rare hem gete,
And mightely with yerdes first hem bete
Until this with the grapes so desolve,
And thenne hem to the presses thay devolve.

72.

Ther pressed oute is all that oute wol passe,[1]
And under kept into sum vessel clene,
And this licoure Affrikes calleth passe.[2]
As hony me may kepe it in a stene,
In stede of whome in metes it demene.
This condyment is esy and jocounde,
Wherof inflacioun shal noon redounde.

When pressed keep it in a jar like honey, instead of which you may use it as a sauce, and it will preserve you from flatulence.

De cidonite.

73.

Take quynces ripe, and pare hem, hewe hem smal
And al for smal; but kest away the core,
For it is nought to this effect atte al.
In hony thenne up boile hem lesse & more
Til it be halvendel that was before.
Do pepur with in boilyng smallest grounde,
This is the first maner;—and this seconde:

Cut quinces very small, throw away the core, boil it in honey till reduced to one-half and mix ground pepper with it.

74.

Another wise is this: take sestres two
Of quince, and oon sester (of) aisel
And half, eke two sester hony therto;
This mynge, and boile it alle togeder wel
Til it be hony fatte & thicke iche dele;
Of pepur and ginger tweyne unces grounde
To pouder smal is therto forto infounde.

Or take two pints of quince and one and a half of vinegar, two of honey; mix till it be all as thick as honey. In this pour two oz. of pepper and ginger ground to powder.

De fermento mustorum servando.

75.

A galon muste from under feet do to
A strike floure of newe wheete, and it let drie
In sonne, and weete it oft & drie it do
Yit efte; the same in smallest loues plie
And drie it harde in sonne; in pottes trie
Now gipse it fast; and use this ferment
For musty brede, whom this wol condyment.

Add to a gallon of must that has been trodden down, a strike of new wheat flour, dry it in the sun, wet it and dry it again: then roll it into small lumps and dry it in the sun, and plaster it up in pots to make new bread whenever you require it.

[1] effluere. [2] passum.

De uvâ passâ Græcâ condiendâ.

76

To make Greek raisins, where the grapes hang good and sweet, they twist the stalks and let them dry in the sun, and afterwards suspend them in the shade, whilst they prepare vessels for them.

The reison greek in this maner thai make:
Thai se where hongeth grapes goode & swete
The stortes softe in handes wol thai take
And writhe hem, and so writhen wol thai lete
Hem henge and drie awhile in sonnes hete,
And after hem in shadowe thai suspende
Her vessel while in dightyng thai contende.

77.

Underneath they place vine-leaves and press down, and add more leaves, and keep them in a dry cold place where there is no smoke. The hours of October agree in feet with those of March.

The leaf of vyne all drie and chillyng colde
Under thai do, and therin grapes presse,
And with thaire handes fast adoon hem folde,
So fille it uppe, and therto leves dresse,
In drie and colde, ther smoke is noon expresse,
Hem kepeth thai. This October upborn
With feet is as in Marche is saide beforne.

De Horis Octobris

78.

The length of the hours in October.

The first and last houre XXV even,
And next the first & last houre is XV,
The thridde houre from the first and last XI
Hath, and the fourthe houre VIII is to sustene.
Next noone on either side on VI demene,
And noone himself stont short on footes V.
And whi? For Phœbus so short made him thrive.

Laus Deo, & continuacio librorum.

Preface to November.

October spende, O sonne, O light superne,
O tryne and oon, lovyng, honoure, empire,
Withouten ende unto thi might eterne,
That shyne and goon aspire
Magre thi foon so list iche houre and gire
His spere aright, that savyng
Sterre is ther noone in alle oure emyspire:
Under whoos sight I gynne on November.

NOVEMBER.

BOOK THE TWELFTH.

De satione tritici, farris, ordei, fabæ et lenticulæ.

1.

Novembre wol with whete & far be sowe
In lawful wise and with solempnitee.
V strike upon oon acre is to strowe.
With barly wol this moone eke sowen be,
And benes unto greet felicitee.
Right fatte or dounged lande thai loveth best,
Or valey ther hilles fattenesse hath rest.

In November sow wheat of two sorts in the accustomed manner, five strikes to an acre; barley also and beans in manured lands or valleys in which the moisture from the hills rests.

2.

And clodde hem large, as wel thai may be wrie.
Eke sumen sayen the benes sation
In places colde is best to fructifie,
On hem if me doo noon occacion:
For cloddes wol thaire germinacion
Obumbre from the colde and wol defende.
Thei peireth lande, but lite & nought amende.

Cover them with large clods. Some say that in sowing beans in a cold place they thrive best if no harrowing is done upon them at all. They (who do harrow) impair the land.

3.

For Columelle affermeth that a felde
For whete is rather proved profitable
That bare is, thenne the felde ther benes yeld
Hath been; and for an a(n)cre fatte is hable
Sex strike to sowe, and lesse is aboundable
In mene lande; but sadde lande wol the bene
In dwelle, and hateth nebulose and lene.

Columella says a field is better for wheat that has been left fallow than one which has produced beans; and that we may sow six strikes to an acre of rich land; less in mediocre land: but the bean likes strong land.

4.

Sow them on the 15th of the moon before sunrise; others say the 14th is better. The Greeks, who know, say that to sprinkle them with capon's blood preserves them from weeds. Steeped two days they grow quickly. It is the custom now to sow flax and pulse.

And whenne the moone is dayes olde xv
And so not repercusse as of the sonne
Sowe hem; but other sayen bette is xiii.
From wedes thai with capon bloode beronne
Beth save, as Grekes sayen, that thei on konne,
Two dayes stept anoon thai wol aryse.
Nowe lyne and puls is sowe as is the gise.

De pratis & de vitibus.

5.

Make up the meadows and plant young vines, and hasten to dig round them, and cover those that are bare, before the Ides, and the layer at three years old may be cut from the vine.

Nowe mede is first to make, as saide is erst;
Nowe vynes sette in places hoote and drie;
Nowe also to provyne is not the werst.
Younge vyne and plauntes umbydelvyng hie,
And also hem that naked beth let wrie.
Eke er then Ide. Iche merges curvature
Of iii yere old kitte from the roote is sure.

De vineâ vetere in jugo vel pergulâ reparandâ.

6.

Trim the roots of strong trailing vines, and cut them at less than five feet altogether from the ground.

From hensforth the vynes that ferre traile
On perches or forkes and over longe
An encombraunce are and of nought availe.
Beholde hem if thaire trunnke be hool & stronge,
Ablaqueate hem, feede hem fatte with donnge,
And kitte hem shortte over the londe not v
Feet longe allyng, and thus make hem to thryve.

7.

Where the rind is greenest puncture with the point of a sharp iron: for according to Columella, matter to repair the vine will thence germinate in spring.

There as the grenest place is of the rynde
The sharppest yren take, and with the pointe
On either side, afore also behinde
So goodly by and by, it is to pointe.
For Columelle affermeth in that jointe
To germyne, and in veer theroute to stare
Mater thi vyne alle newely to repare.

De putandis vitibus & arboribus, ac oleo faciendo.

8.

Putacioun autumnal celebrate
Is nowe in vyne & tree ther nys noo colde.
Olyve is pulde of coloure variate.
Make oil of hem al blake on to beholde.
Olyve and other treen thus best is holde
The croppe to kytte, and save on every side
The bowes profluent for fruyte to abyde.

Autumn pruning is practised where it is not cold. Olive is picked when it is parti-coloured; when it is black, make oil. Best to cut off the tops and leave the side branches.

9.

But where is lande unkept & insolent,
Take from the trunncke al clene until so hie
As beestes may by noon experiment
Attayne, and there let bowes multiplie,
And afterlonge on every side hem plie
Salutyng[1] est & west, & north & south;
Yit alway warre the touche of beestes mouth.

In lonely unguarded places cut all away to the height beasts can reach; there let them bend on every side, but beware of the beast's mouth.

De olivetis ponendis & curandis.

10.

The olyve is nowe there lande is hoote & drie
Ysette, as erst is saide. Wel wot this tree
Encre in litel moiste and places hie.
Wel froted wolde he fatte ydonnged be,
And wagged with wynde of feracitee.
And cure hem as beforne. Nowe baskettes (corbes) fyne
Beth made; in tempre lande eke oil lauryne.

Plant olives in hot dry land. It will increase if well rubbed and manured, and agitated by fruitful winds.

De Allio, Ulpico Cep(ul)lis, & plantis carduorum.

11.

This Moone Ulpike & Garlic is to sowe.
White erthe it wol dolvon withouten donnge.
Make reedes in the borde, and ther bestowe
Hem in the toppe atwene in brede & longe
Fyngers but IIII; eke deepe sette is their wronge;
And weede hem wel, so wol thai wex(en) fele.
But forto hede hem greet trede downe the stele.

For African and common garlic prepare well-dug white earth without dung. Make trenches in the borders, and place in the highest parts four inches apart, not too deep. To have great heads tread down the stalk.

[1] louting fort.

12.

They say that if they are sown and also gathered when the moon is down, they will have no strong smell. Now sow onions, teasle, marjoram, and horse-radish.

So shal the juce into thaire hedes goo.
And whenne the moone is downe also thai telle
Hem if me sowe, and pulle hem uppe also,
Of crueltee noo thing wol in hem smelle.
In chaf or smoke ykept wel wol thai dwelle.
Nowe onyons sowe, and tasul in his place
Lette plaunte; and cunel sowe, eke Armarace.

De persico, pinu, prunis, castaneis, et aliis pomis.

13.

Where it is hot plant peach-stones in well-prepared ground two feet asunder. Transplant them when sprung. Plant them with the point of the stone downward.

Nowe ther is hoote, and elles in Janyveer,
The peches boon in pastyn is to sette.
To sounder hem two footes best it weer.
The plauntes spronge into other places fette;
And sette hem deepe III or II handes mette;
But pitche adowne the pointe intort the grounde.
An other crafte yit other folk have founde.

14.

Others dry the peach-stones, mix with ashes and keep in baskets. I say keep them as you please, they will grow anywhere, But they last longer

The boones to be sette first wol thai drie
A dayes fewe, and thenne in askes moolde
Thay mynge, and it thai into skeppes trïe;
In this thaire dried boones wol thai holde.
I say that men myght kepe hem as thai wolde,
And everywhere also saye I thai sprynge.
Yit sum place hath best & lengest durynge,

15.

in warm air and wet gravel; cold winds will kill them. Dig often and pull out weeds, transplant at two years in short trenches close together.

Ther warme ayer is & gravel landes weete;
For ther is colde and wyndy thai wol die
Yf noo defense awai the coldes bete.
And delve hem ofte, eke herbes bitter trie.
Transplaunte hem two yere olde to multiplie
In delves shortte, and nygh ichoon til other,
That from the strom of hete iche help his brother.

16.

Ablaquiatyng hem in h(ar)vest hie,
Here oon foiles yeve hem as for donnge;
And kytte of every roton thinge or drie.
For grene yf that me kytte of, that is wronge,
That sleeth hem uppe; eke seek if thai be longe
Wynedregges olde in water let infounde;
Yeve hem this drinke, anoon thai wol be sounde.

Trim the roots in autumn and give them their own leaves for dung. It slays them if we cut off green shoots. If they are sick, old wine-dregs in water will cure them.

17.

The Greekes sayen that Peches me may make
Ywriten growe, yf that me first hem sette
And after dayes VII up hem take.
By thenne oute wol a spronke of hem be lette
Upon the shelle, and oute the curnel fette,
And write oute whate the list with cynabare.
To close anoon the boon thereon do care.

Peaches grow with an inscription on them, if taken up seven days after planting, when the shell breaks. Take out the kernel and write what you like with vermilion, and carefully cover up the peach-stone.

18.

Thaire kyndes beth, oon is peche Armenye,
Precox is next, the thridde is duracyne.
But if this tree to sore in sonne drie
Hepe erthe aboute and humoure vespertyne,
Eke thing object the fervoure of declyne.
A serpent skynne doon on this tree men lete
Avaylant be to save it in greet hete.

Their sorts are the Armenian, the Precox, and the cling-stone. If the tree be too sorely sun-dried, heap earth about it. Let anything placed as a protection ward off the heat. Men think a serpent's skin avails to save it.

19.

For frostes nowe do donnge aboute a peche,
Or water, mixt wynedregges, or the best
Of benes boyled water may be leche
To sle the frost; and if wormes unrest
Hem, aske, oildregges mixt, on hem be kest,
Or oxe talgh with the thridde parte aisel,
Her either cast on hem wol slee hem wel.

Against frost use dung or water mixt with oil-dregs, or boiled bean-water as Doctor; if worms disturb, ashes mixt with oil-dregs or beef fat, with one-third vinegar, — either of these will kill them.

20.

If the fruit fall off, drive a pin of fir or birch into the root or trunk; or if it threaten to rot, it is useful to bore a hole in the middle, and put in a willow stake.

The fruite caduke is goodly thus to cure:
Of terebynte or briche into the roote
Or truncke indryve a pynne, and it is sure
For fallyng fruyte; or holdyng forth to rote
The myddel into bore also is boote,
And putte a saly stake in it with crafte;
Fro rotyng and ryving thay be berafte.

21.

Cut the rind low down, and when the sap flows, bind the wound with clay and chaff: and when they flower wet them with goat's milk whilst the sun is thrice going round his course.

Lowe on the truncke as wounde him in the rynde,
A lite humoure whenne oute of it is ronne,
With chaved cley the wounde ayein to bynde.
And whenne thaire flouring time is so begonne,
While thrie aboute his course gireth the sonne,
With sestres thre of gootes mylke hem wete,
And ther wol be the peches swete & greete.

22.

Hang Spanish broom from their boughs, or tie it to them. Graft according to their kind, in cold land in January, in hot land November, and take the grafts low.

Upon thaire bowes Spartea to honge
Is goode for hem, or sparte until hem bynde.
In Janyveer or Feveryere no wronge
Is graffyng hem, but cordyng to thaire kynde
If land be colde; and hoote land if thai fynde
In Novembɛr: but take thaire graffes lowe
And nygh the storcke, for gladdest wol thai growe.

23.

The tops do not take, or do not last. Graft the Armenian and Precox on the palm, the clingstone on almond. Inoculate in April or May where land is hot.

The toppes taketh not, or nought endure.
Graffe in him self, or plumme, or Almandtree,
But Armenye and Precoqua beth sure
In plumme, in Almaunt Duricynes be
Lengest to growe in moost fertilitee,
Aprille and Muy hem wol enoculaire
Ther as the lande is hoote in places faire.

24.

Italiene enoculacion
In thende of May or nygh ther Juyn begynne
In peches saien goode occupacion.
Emplasturing (and) of hem eke is no synne,
And rede oute of the plane ygraffed wynne.
The Duracyne is kept in oxymelle
With dregges myxt wel for to taste and smelle.

Italian inoculation in May or beginning of June bespeaks good occupation: plastering them is also right. Grafted on the plane-tree they come out red.

25.

The bones oute, as figges summen drie
Hem and suspende; eke I have seen, the bonys
Detracte of Duracyne, in hony trie
So kept that gladder tasting never noon is,
Hoote pitche a droppe if into iche (n)avel[1] goone is;
That so thai be coart (coact?) to swymme in sape,
Enclude hem, and alle harme thai shal escape.

The stones being taken out, some dry peaches like figs. I have seen Cling-stone peaches, after the stones were removed, kept in honey, so that none were of better taste, if a drop of pitch be poured in the navel.

26.

Thai sayen the pyne[2] unto all thing under sowe
Is commodious, and his sowing is thus:
His kurnels wol in hoote & drier growe
In October, or November not mys,
In Feveryere or Marche ther colde weet is.
In smal lande nygh the see, amonge the hillys
And stones, wide and fresshe this tree at wille is.

The Pine does good to every thing sown under it. Plant in October or November in dry land; in February or March where wet. It delights in fine land amid hills and stones.

27.

In wyndy moiste encreseth thai right greet.
But with this tree what grounde ever shal growe,
As is for other treen is not to trete.
But plowe it, whete on it as me wolde sowe,
And right as wheet in it the seedes strowe;
And wrie it light, an handbrede it descende,
And let noo beste his tender youthe offende.

They grow large in windy places. But whatever the ground, it is not to be treated like that for other trees, but plough it as if wheat were to be sown in it.

[1] umbilicum. [2] pinus.

28.

Steeping the kernels three days in water helps to make them grow large; transplanting makes them mild. Place the seed under ground in baskets with mould.

Three daies wattering up helpeth eke
To greet encrece, and his translacion
The pynes fruyte wol easy make & meke.
Eke plauntes have this procuracion
Unto thaire greet multiplicacion:
That first is doone the seede with moolde & dounge
In skeppes under lande to rere up yonge.

29.

Remove the weakest that the strongest may grow faster. After three years the baskets being burst, they shall strike down. Put on them alternate flakes of dung and mould.

Whenne thai come up the smallest fro thai do
So that the saddest faster may ascende:
Atte III yere olde, this skeppes broken fro,
In delves large adowne shal thai descende.
And dounge asmoche as moolde aboute hem spende;
A flake of this, a flake of that thai make,
So hath a kake of moolde of dounge a kake.

30.

See that the top-root, one and straight, be removed whole to its extremity. Cutting helps them to flourish, so that we shall see them grow twice as high as we expect.

But see wel that the chief roote oon directe
Be hool translate unto his summyte
Withouten hurte and in no wise enfecte.
Putacion so helpeth hem to thee
That two so high ascende hem shal me se
As me wol wene; and thaire nuttes abide
Wol on the tree, and ripe until this tide.

31.

Pull them before they split asunder. Plum-stones steeped grow more cheerily.

But pulle hem rather then thai flete atwynne.
Thaire nuttes must be clensed forto kepe.
Newe erthen pottes summen kepe hem ynne,
So thai in erthe & with thaire shelles slepe.
Nowe plommes boon to sowe is two hande depe
In lande subact; the same in Feveryere.
First stept in lye up goth with gladder chere.

32.

His plaunte is sette uptake in Janyveer
As from the codde, and nygh the moones ende.
Or plaunte hem nygh the Ide of Feveryeer.
The rootes wel in donnging umbywende.
In fatte lande moist thay joyfulliche ascende.
And ther is warme eke hugely thai bold,
Yit not for thi thay may endure in colde.

The plant is taken from the stem in the end of January or middle of February. Surround the roots with dung. Where it is warm they grow bravely, but yet they can stand the cold.

33.

Ther cleyi landes are & lapidose,
With dounge is goode to help hem & excuse
Lest thaire fruite falle and be vermyculose.
The plauntes from the rootes eke refuse
Not up to pulle; eke plauntes faire excuse
To stande unpuld, that thai be not to seke.[1]
And hele in this maner thi prunes seek:[2]

Where it is clayey dung them and give no cause for their falling wormeaten. Cut off all the suckers from the root, but leave the best unpulled. Heal your sick plums thus:

34.

Oildregges water tempered evenly
Let kest on hem, or oxe uryne alone,
Or olde bryne admixt unevenly
With water parties two, or of an oone[3]
Askes, and rathest of sarment be doone
On hem, and if caduk thaire fruites be
Dryve in the roote of Oliastre tree.

Cast on them oil-dregs mixt equally with water, or old brine with two parts water, or ashes from an oven, and especially loppings.

35.

Rubrik and taar[4] wormes & anntes sleth;
Doon esy on for harmyng of the tree,
Lest medicyne eschaunge into the deth.
Ydolven ofte and wet holpen thai be.
Thai graffed are in Marche extremyte
In truncke or rynde; hem graffeth also summe
In Janyveer er thenne thay wepe gumme.

Red ochre and tar kill worms; put on lightly, not to harm the tree. Some graft in January before they weep gum.

[1] querendæ. [2] languidas. [3] fumo. [4] pix liquida.

36.

Plums are grafted on almonds, plums, apples, and peaches. Some dry them on hurdles, and gather selected ones in sea water or boiling dregs, and dry them in the sun or lukewarm oven.

In Almaunt, in himself, in male, in peche,
Ys graffed plumme; and plommes summen drie,
And hem on fleykes kepe; and other teche
Whenne see water or dregges boiling frie
The plommes fresshe collect ther into trie.
Hem taken uppe so drieth thai in sonne,
Or in an oven luke, and thai beth wonne

37.

The chestnut will grow from self-sown plants, or from seed. In two years it will be sick. Choose out good strong ones.

Chasten[1] wol uppe of plauntes that alone
Upgrowe, or of his seedes multiplie.
The plaunte in yeres two wol gynne grone
For seke, and peraventure he wol die.
Freshe, ripe, and grete of hem to sette oute trie.
In Novembor hem sette, and up thai crepe.
And thus to sowe in Feveryere hem kepe.

38.

Dry them in heaps and cover with river sand for twenty days. When that is done place them in water, where the sick swim, and the healthy sink. Again put the good ones under gravel, and try them thus three times.

Drie hem in shade, and hem togeder hepe,
With floode gravel let diligence hem wrie,
And xxx dayes under that hem kepe:
Thenne, doone of that, hem into water trie.
Ther swymmeth seeke; and hool adowne wol hie.
Ayaine the goode under gravel be do,
And tried efte and thries preve hem so.

39.

You may plant them quite securely. Some keep them in gravel; but they do not like sandy land. Black earth is suitable, and carbuncle, and ragstone well broken.

Hem that remain al sekur maist thou sowe.
Sumen in gravel hem closeth, and so kepe.
In lande solute and softe uppe wol thai growe
But as of gravel lande no thing thai kepe.[2]
In sandy lande thai stande if that it wepe
Black erthe is apte, and londe carbunculyne,
And ragstoon all to rapte is for hem digne.

[1] castanea. [2] optant.

40.

Thai growe unneth in sadde lande or rubrike,
And for noothing the cley thai may not use,
The colde estate of heven wele thai like.
Aparty warme also thai not refuse,
Nor clyves ther humoure is not excluse.
Thai loveth derk septentrion beholde,
And best in pastynated lande thai holde.

They scarcely grow in strong or red land, or clay. They like a cold climate, but do not object to one partly warm, or to hills if there be moisture: they love a northern aspect, and do best in well-prepared land.

41.

Pastyne it deep a foote and half, or plowe
It by and by, and wel with dounge it fede,
And therin do thi chastens forto growe
A foote depe the crafte is hem to seede.
Sette uppe a stick upon hem the to lede.
And sette in everie stede or III or V;
But footes IV asonder hem to thryve.

Dig one and a half foot deep, or plough here and there; feed well with dung; put in your chestnuts one foot deep, three or four in each hole, and four feet apart.

42.

Transplantyng hem is best atte yeres two.
So gutteryng the water from hem shelve;
If water stande on hem thai beth fordo.
Also this tree may plecheđ be him selve.
Eke besily the yonge it is to delve.
In Marche and Septembȳr putacion
To chastens is incrementacion.

Transplant in two years, make gutters to keep off the water, which would destroy them. The chestnut may be propagated by suckers. Pruning is growth to them.

43.

Thai graffed beth in rynde, as I have preved,
In Marche and in Aprille, and right wel do.
Inoculing also in hem hath cheved.
In saly if me graffe hem forth thai go.
And ripeth late and tasteth not but so.
Chasteynes kest in flakes me may kepe,
Or under sande asonder leyde to slepe.

Graft them in March. Inoculating is also successful. Grafted on willows they have an indifferent flavour. Keep them in wicker baskets, or in sand laid asunder.

44.

Others keep them in earthen pots, or dry holes, or beechen baskets, or they fold barley-chaff round them, or we may use thick baskets of sedge and cover them up.

And other hem in erthen pottes doo,
And delveth hem in places that beth drie.
In beechen baskettes men save also
This fruite, so thai with cley be stanche ywrie.
Or smallest barly chaf aboute hem plie,
Or baskettes of segges me may use,
So thai be thicke, and save hem ther recluse.

45.

The wild pear is now to be planted for grafting; the citron, olive, pomegranate, service, medlar, carob, mulberry, cherry, fig, almond, and walnut are to be renewed.

This moone in places (drie) and regions colde
The piry wilde is sette ygraffed to be,
Citur, (and) Olyve, eke Pomgarnat to holde
The Serve, and Meddleler, and Silique tree,
The Molbury, the Chery, and Fig-tree,
Almandes, and Juglande in semynaire,
As crafte is taught beforne, is to repaire.

De mundandis & muniendis apium castris.

46.

The bee picks some honey from tamarisk, etc., which should be left for their winter store. Cleanse their hives now, for it would harm them to move them in winter.

Atte gynnyng of this moone of thamarike
And other floures wilde useth the bee
Hony, though it be smal, sumdel to pike;
Thaire winter stoor is reson that it be.
Now clensed alle thaire houses is to se;
For wynter moeving like is hem to harme.
But do this in a faire day and a warme.

47.

Have them swept with a wing, pinion, or fether of a fowl where the hand cannot enter; stop every chink that is found, and spread a covering of broom over them.

Let sweepe hem with a wynge and with a penne,
Or fether of a foul there as an honde
May not come to; pike all the filthes thenne;[1]
Stoppe every cheve aboute her houses fonde
With cleyed dounge; and over ther thai stonde
A tegument of brom or such extende
Hem fro tempest and coldes to defende.

[1] inde.

Remedium vitibus quæ sine fruge luxuriant.

48.

In places glade and warme if vyne abounde
In leef, and have of fruite but povertee,
Now kitte hem short and thai wol be feconde.
In colde lande this in Feryere doone be;
And if thai amende not, yheped se
Askes or floode gravel aboute her roote,
That summen stoones dryve into for boote.

If vines abound in leaf, and have little fruit, cut them close, and they will be fruitful. If this do not succeed, heap ashes or river sand about the roots. Some drive stones into them.

Remedium sterili viti.

49.

The same place and tyme a bareyne vyne
Is thus to cure: his storke is first to cleve,
And ther enclude a stoone; eke olde uryne
Let cotuls IIII aboute it helde at eve,
And alle the moulde aboute it to remeve,
That this licoure the rootes to descende,
Eke ley to lande and dounge, and thai wol mende.

To cure a barren vine, cleave the stalk and put a stone in it. Throw four pints of old urine upon it, and remove the earth from it, that the moisture may descend to the roots: then put to it earth and dung.

. . . . . .

N.B.—Here several Stanzas have been torn out, and the following cannot be numbered.

For browsty[1] oil white wex is to resolve
In fynest oil, and therin throwe it so:
Hoot salt ygrounde is on it to dissolve
And in a vessel wried alle be do.
So wol it mende odoure and taste also.
In erthe ich oil to kepe is his nature,
Whom salt, or fire, or water hoote may pure.

To cure rancid oil melt white wax in fine oil, and hot ground salt, and cover all up. Oil should be kept in earthenware, its nature is to be purified by salt, or fire, or hot water.

[1] rancid.

De condiensis olivis.

This month olives are made into preserves: there are several kinds. The light (or swimming) olive is preserved by sprinkling on alternate flakes of olives pennyroyal, honey, and a little salt. Or put thereon a layer of olive and fennel cuttings, or birch, or dill.

This moone is made olyve in condyment;
That is dyvers: Oon olyve columbarę
Ther flaketh first olyve as fundament;
And after that the pulioles are;
A flake on that hony and saltes rare,
Or flake olyve and fenel graffes be
Theron or birche, or dile, or olif tree.

. . . . . .

N.B.—Another chasm.

So are they kept only eight days. Unbruised olive is placed in brine, which is fined in forty days. If you want it sweet add two parts of syrup, one of vinegar; if sour, one part syrup, two vinegar.

So beth thai oonly daies VIII endured.
Olyve unhurt in barme[1] of oil is do,
That after XL dayes up is pured.
And swetter for to have it, do therto
Two parties sape and aisel oon also.
To have it sharpe, of aysel tweyne infounde
And oon of sape, as may the sharpe abounde.

A pint of raisin wine, a double handful of cinder-ashes, a quantity of old wine, bruised cypress leaves: mix all this and steep it, make a crust upon it, and fill up to the brim.

A sester passe, a[2] yespon alto grounde
Of cyner, of olde vyne a quantitee
Foil of cupresse a parte in it contounde.[3]
Let mynge all this; olyves nowe let se,
Suche as unhurt beth taken from the tree,
Doon in and dreynt, a cruste upon it make,
And fille it to the brinke until it take.

[1] muria. [2] quantum manus utraque comprehendere possit. [3] contunde.

The Publications for 1870, *are* :—

40. ENGLISH GILDS, their Statutes and Customs, 1389 A.D. Edited by the late TOULMIN SMITH, Esq., and Miss LUCY TOULMIN SMITH, with a Preliminary Essay, in 5 parts, on 'The History and Development of Gilds, and The Origin of Trades-Unions,' by LUJO BRENTANO, Doctor Juris Utriusque et Philosophiæ. 21*s.*
41. WILLIAM LAUDER'S MINOR POEMS. Edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, Esq. 3*s.*
42. BERNARDUS DE CURA REI FAMULIARIS, with some Early Scottish Prophecies, &c. From a MS. KK. 1. 5, in the Cambridge Univer. Library. Ed. by J. R. LUMBY, M.A. 2*s.*
43. RATIS RAVING, and other Moral and Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse. Edited from the Camb. Univ. MS. KK. 1. 5, by the Rev. J. R. LUMBY, M.A. 3*s.*

The Publications for 1871 *are* :—

44. THE ALLITERATIVE ROMANCE OF JOSEPH OF ARIMATHIE, or THE HOLY GRAIL; a fragment from the Vernon MS.; with Wynkyn de Worde's and Pynson's (A.D. 1526 and 1520) Lives of Joseph; edited by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. 5*s.*
45. KING ALFRED'S WEST-SAXON VERSION OF GREGORY'S PASTORAL CARE, edited from 2 MSS. with an English translation, and the Latin original, by HENRY SWEET, Esq., of Balliol College, Oxford. Part I. 10*s.*
46. LEGENDS OF THE HOLY ROOD, SYMBOLS OF THE PASSION AND CROSS POEMS, in Old English of the 11th, 14th, and 15th centuries. Edited from MSS. by the Rev. RICHARD MORRIS, LL.D. 10*s.*
47. SIR DAVID LYNDESAY'S WORKS. Part V., containing his Minor Poems, edited by JAMES A. H. MURRAY, Esq., with a critical Essay by Prof. NICHOL, of Glasgow. 3*s.*
48. THE TIMES' WHISTLE, and other Poems, by R.C., 1616, ed. by J. M. COWPER, Esq. 6*s.*

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1867 *are* :—

I. WILLIAM OF PALERNE; or, WILLIAM AND THE WERWOLF. Re-edited from the unique MS. in King's College, Cambridge, by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. 13*s.*
II. EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION, with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. ELLIS, F.R.S. Part I. 10*s.*

The Publications for 1868 *are* :—

III. CAXTON'S BOOK OF CURTESYE, in Three Versions: 1, from the unique printed copy in the Cambridge University Library; 2, from the Oriel MS. 79; 3, from the Balliol MS. 354. Edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, Esq., M.A. 5*s.*
IV. HAVELOK THE DANE. Re-edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A., with the sanction and aid of the original editor, Sir FREDERICK MADDEN. 10*s.*
V. CHAUCER'S BOETHIUS. Edited from the two best MSS. by R. MORRIS, Esq. 12*s.*
VI. CHEVELERE ASSIGNE. Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. GIBBS, Esq. 3*s.*

The Publications for 1869 *are* :—

VII. EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION, with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. ELLIS, F.R.S. Part II. 10*s.*
VIII. QUEENE ELIZABETHES ACHADEMY, A BOOK OF PRECEDENCE, &c. Edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, Esq., with Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. ROSSETTI, Esq., and E. OSWALD, Esq. 13*s.*
IX. AWDELEY'S FRATERNITYE OF VACABONDES, HARMAN'S CAVEAT, etc. Edited by E. VILES, Esq., and F. J. FURNIVALL, Esq. 7*s.* 6*d.*

The Publications for 1870 *are* :—

X. ANDREW BOORDE'S INTRODUCTION OF KNOWLEDGE, 1547, and DYETARY OF HEALTH, 1542; with BARNES IN THE DEFENCE OF THE BERDE, 1542-3. Edited, with a life of BOORDE, and an account of his Works, by F. J. FURNIVALL, M.A. 18*s.*
XI. BABBOUR'S BRUCE, Part I. Edited from the MSS. and early printed editions, by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. 12*s.*

The Publications for 1871 *are* :—

XII. ENGLAND IN HENRY VIII.'S TIME: a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole and Lupset, mainly on the Condition of England, written by THOMAS STARKEY, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Edited by J. M. COWPER, Esq., with an Introduction by the Rev. Prof. BREWER, Calendarer of the State Papers of Henry VIII. Part II. 12*s.* (Part I. *Starkey's Life and Letters*, is in preparation.)
XIII. A SUPPLICACYON OF THE BEGGERS, by SIMON FISH, 1528-9 A.D., ed. by F. J. FURNIVALL, M.A.; with A SUPPLICATION TO OUR MOSTE SOUERAIGNE LORDE; A SUPPLICATION OF THE POORE COMMONS; and THE DECAYE OF ENGLAND BY THE GREAT MULTITUDE OF SHEEP, ed. by J. M. COWPER, Esq. 6*s.*
XIV. EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION, with especial reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. ELLIS, Esq., F.R.S. Part III. 10*s.*

The publications of *The Early English Text Society* are divided into Four Classes. I. Arthur and other Romances. II. Works illustrating our Dialects and the History of our Language, including a Series of re-editions of our early Dictionaries. III. Biblical Translations and Religious Treatises. IV. Miscellaneous. (The *Extra Series*, which commenced in 1867, is intended for re-editions.)

Early English Text Society.

The Subscription is £1 1*s.* a year [and £1 1*s.* (Large Paper, £2 12*s.* 6*d.*) additional for the EXTRA SERIES], due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid either to the Society's Account at the Union Bank of London, 14, Argyll Place, Regent Street, W., or by post-office order (made payable at the Chief Office, London) to the Hon. Sec., GEORGE JOACHIM, Esq., St. Andrew House, Change Alley, London, E.C. The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists.

The Publications for 1872 *are :—*

49. AN OLD ENGLISH MISCELLANY, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, Religious Poems of the 13th Century, edited from the MSS. by the Rev. R. MORRIS, LL.D. 10*s.*
50. KING ALFRED'S WEST-SAXON VERSION OF GREGORY'S PASTORAL CARE, edited from 2 MSS., with an English Translation, by HENRY SWEET, Esq. Part II. 10*s.*
51. THE LIFLADE OF ST. JULIANA, 2 versions, with translations; edited from the MSS. A.D. 1230, by the Rev. O. COCKAYNE and E. BROCK. 2*s.*
52. PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE, edited from the unique MS. of ab. 1420 A.D. in Colchester Castle, by the Rev. BARTON LODGE, M.A. Part I. 10*s.*

The Publications for 1873 *will probably be :—*

OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES, Series II., edited from the MS. in Trinity College, Cambridge, by the Rev. R. MORRIS, LL.D. [*Nearly all printed.*
PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.), edited from the unique MS. in Colchester Castle, by the Rev. BARTON LODGE, M.A. Part II.
VISION OF PIERS PLOWMAN, Text C, edited by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. [*In the Press.*
THE GEST HISTORIALE OF THE DESTRUCTION OF TROY, translated from GUIDO DE COLONNA. To be edited from the unique MS. in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, by the Rev. G. A. PANTON and D. DONALDSON, Esq. Part II. [*In the Press.*
THE LAY FOLK'S MASS-BOOK, edited from the MSS. by the Rev. T. F. SIMMONS, Canon of York. [*In the Press.*
MERLIN. Part IV., containing Preface, Index, and Glossary. Edited by H. B. WHEATLEY, Esq.
THE GAWAINE POEMS, edited by the Rev. R. MORRIS, LL.D.
SIR GENERIDES, a Romance, ab. 1430 A.D., edited from the unique MS. in Trinity College, Cambridge, by W. ALDIS WRIGHT, Esq., M.A., Trinity College, Cambridge.

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1872 *are :—*

XV. ROBERT CROWLEY'S THIRTY-ONE EPIGRAMS, VOYCE OF THE LAST TRUMPET, WAY TO WEALTH, etc., 1550-1 A.D., edited by J. M. COWPER, Esq. 12*s.*
XVI. CHAUCER'S TREATISE ON THE ASTROLABE. Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. 6*s.*
XVII. THE COMPLAYNT OF SCOTLAND, 1549 A.D., edited by J. A. H. MURRAY, Esq. 12*s.*

The Publications for 1873 *will probably be :—*

BARBOUR'S BRUCE, Part II., edited from the MSS. and early printed editions by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. [*In the Press.*
THE MYROURE OF OUR LADY, 1530, edited by the Rev. J. H. BLUNT, M.A. [*At Press.*
LONELICH'S SAINT GRAAL, edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, Esq., M.A. Part I. [*At Press.*

REPRINTING FUND.

Additional Subscribers' names are wanted for the Texts of 1865 and 1866.

A few copies are left of No. 17, Extracts from Piers Plowman, 1*s.*; No. 20, Hampole's Treatises, 2*s.*; No. 23, Ayenbite, 10*s.* 6*d.*

The Society's Report, with Lists of Texts to be published in future years, etc., etc., can be had on application to the Hon. Secretary, GEORGE JOACHIM, Esq., St. Andrew House, Change Alley, E.C.

LONDON: N. TRÜBNER & CO., 8 & 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.
DUBLIN: WILLIAM McGEE, 18, NASSAU STREET.
EDINBURGH: T. G. STEVENSON, 22, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET.
GLASGOW: HUGH HOPKINS, ROYAL BANK PLACE.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., UNTER DEN LINDEN, 11.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

61·A

Early English Text Society.

Palladius

On Husbondrie.

FROM THE UNIQUE MS. OF ABOUT 1420 A.D.
IN COLCHESTER CASTLE.

PART II.

EDITED BY
SIDNEY J. H. HERRTAGE, B.A.,
EDITOR OF TUSSER'S "FIVE HUNDRED POINTS OF GOOD HUSBANDRY."

LONDON:
PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY, BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.
MDCCCLXXIX.
Price Five Shillings.

Early English Text Society.

COMMITTEE OF MANAGEMENT:

DIRECTOR: FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, ESQ.

TREASURER: HENRY B. WHEATLEY, ESQ.

HON. SEC.: W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Stroud Green, Finsbury Park, London, N.

J. MEADOWS COWPER, ESQ.
ALEXANDER J. ELLIS, ESQ.
H. HUCKS GIBBS, ESQ.
REV. J. RAWSON LUMBY.
REV. Prof. J. E. B. MAYOR.
Rev. Dr. RICHARD MORRIS.
DR. J. A. H. MURRAY.
EDWARD B. PEACOCK, ESQ.
REV. PROF. W. W. SKEAT.
HENRY SWEET, Esq.
W. ALDIS WRIGHT, ESQ.
PROF. J. ZUPITZA.

(With power to add Workers to their number.)

BANKERS:

THE UNION BANK OF LONDON, 2, Princes Street, E.C.

The Publications for 1866 (except Nos. 20 and 21) are out of print. Subscribers who desire the issue for 1866 should send their guineas at once to the Hon. Secretary in order that other Texts for 1866 may be sent to press.

The Publications for 1864 (*one guinea*) *are :—*

1. EARLY ENGLISH ALLITERATIVE POEMS, ab. 1360 A.D. ed. R. Morris. 10s.
2. ARTHUR, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 4s.
3. LAUDER ON THE DEWTIE OF KYNGIS, &c., 1556, ed. F. Hall. 4s.
4. SIR GAWAYNE AND THE GREEN KNIGHT, ab. 1360, ed. R. Morris. 10s.

The Publications for 1865 (*one guinea less*—No .11 *out of print*) *are :—*

5. HUME'S ORTHOGRAPHIE AND CONGRUITIE OF THE BRITAN TONGUE, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s.
6. LANCELOT OF THE LAIK, ab. 1500, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 8s.
7. GENESIS AND EXODUS, ab. 1250, ed. R. Morris. 2s. 6d.
8. MORTE ARTHURE, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock. 7s.
9. THYNNE ON CHAUCER'S WORKS, ab. 1598, ed. Dr. Kingsley.
10. MERLIN, ab. 1440, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 2s. 6d.
11. LYNDESAY'S MONARCHIE, &c., 1552, Part I., ed. F. Hall.
12. WRIGHT'S CHASTE WIFE, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s.

The Publications for 1866 (*two guineas : reprinting*) *are :—*

13. SEINTE MARHERETE, 1200-1350, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
14. KYNG HORN, FLORIS AND BLANCHEFLOUR, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby.
15. POLITICAL, RELIGIOUS, AND LOVE POEMS, ed. F. J. Furnivall.
16. THE BOOK OF QUINTE ESSENCE, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall.
17. PARALLEL EXTRACTS FROM 29 MSS. OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.
18. HALI MEIDENHAD, ab. 1290, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
19. LYNDESAY'S MONARCHIE, &c., Part II., ed. F. Hall.
20. HAMPOLE'S ENGLISH PROSE TREATISES, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry.
21. MERLIN, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s.
22. PARTENAY OR LUSIGNEN, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.
23. DAN MICHEL'S AYENBITE OF INWYT, 1340, ed. R. Morris. 10s. 6d.

The Publications for 1867 (*one guinea, less* Nos. 24, 26, *out of print*) *are :—*

24. HYMNS TO THE VIRGIN AND CHRIST; THE PARLIAMENT OF DEVILS, &c., ab. 1400, F. J. Furnivall. 3s.
25. THE STACIONS OF ROME, THE PILGRIMS' SEA-VOYAGE, WITH CLENE MAYDENHOD, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s.
26. RELIGIOUS PIECES IN PROSE AND VERSE, from R. Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440), ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 2s.
27. LEVINS'S MANIPULUS VOCABULORUM, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 12s.
28. WILLIAM'S VISION OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN, 1362 A.D. Part I. The Earliest or Vernon Text; Text A. ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s.
29. EARLY ENGLISH HOMILIES (ab. 1220-30 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part I. Edited by R. Morris. 7s.
30. PIERCE THE PLOUGHMANS CREDE, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 2s.

The Publications for 1868 (*one guinea*) *are :—*

31. MYRC'S DUTIES OF A PARISH PRIEST, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. E. Peacock. 4s.
32. THE BABEES BOOK, URBANITATIS, THE BOKES OF NORTURE OF JOHN RUSSELL AND HUGH RHODES, THE BOKES OF KERUYNG, CURTASYE, AND DEMEANOUR, &c. with some French and Latin Poems on like subjects, ed. from Harleian and other MSS. by F. J. Furnivall. 15s.
33. THE KNIGHT DE LA TOUR LANDRY (from French of A.D. 1372), ab. 1440 A.D. A Father's Book for his Daughters, ed. from Harl. MS. 1764 and Caxton's version, by Thomas Wright. 8s.
34. EARLY ENGLISH HOMILIES (before 1300 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part II., ed. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s.
35. LYNDESAY'S WORKS, Part III.: The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum, ed. F. Hall. 2s.

The Publications for 1869 (*one guinea*) *are :—*

36. MERLIN, Part III. Edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq.; with an Essay on Arthurian Localities, by J. S. Stuart Glennie, Esq. 12s.
37. Sir DAVID LYNDESAY'S WORKS, Part IV., containing Ane Satyre of the Three Estaits. Edited by F. Hall, Esq. 4s.
38. WILLIAM'S VISION OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN, Part II. Text B. Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. 6d.
39. THE ALLITERATIVE ROMANCE OF THE DESTRUCTION OF TROY, translated from Guido de Colonna. Edited from the unique MS. in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the Rev. G. A. Panton. Part I. 10s. 6d.

NOTES.

1/4. Gesner considers this to be a taunt aimed at Columella, though he gives no more occasion for it than Palladius himself; and the latter by his remark in the next line seems to be conscious that he is open to this retort.

4/8. "Us is to write," and 43/1165, "us to were honest is," are instances of the old dative: and so "the was saide"=it was said to thee, 81/570; and 96/1001, "is hem to stoppe"=they must stop: but "me moost enforme," 1/2, and "The floure me with the roos is not to take," 80/528, are different: in these latter instances *me* may be the nominative, like the French *on*.

2/23. "hole" should have been printed *hoole*. Qy. whether we are not wrong in writing *wholesome*, as if from *walg*, and not *holesom* from A.S. "hæl."

4/74. *To take*, probably "take to pieces," *subigis*; or it may be the *to* frequently redundant before the imperative.

4/80. ataste alore="judicio saporis explores"; but which is the verb, and which the adverb, it does not seem easy to determine.

4/94. The metre seems to require that *Thater* should here be written in full "the water."

5/117. Sic in MS., but *Cloroes* is more probably the right reading.

6/125. *obeye unto*, as in Chaucer, "to Nature obey," representing the Latin dative.

6/152. This redundant *as* is frequent in Chaucer, e.g. *Knight's Tale*, "As keep me from the vengans of thilk yre." See *infrà*, 9/226, etc.

7/160. Sic in MS., but *selve* is more probable.

7/168. *synne* represents the old corrupt reading *vitium*, instead of *vicinus*.

8/199. *to thair above*=to an improved condition. See Professor Child, 'On Certain Peculiar Phrases in Gower and Chaucer,' in Ellis's *Early English Pronunciation*, Part I. This remarkable expression occurs also in Robert Manning of Brunne's Chronicle, Part I. Vol. I. p. 253 of Mr. Furnivall's edition:—

> "Knyghtes, he seide, mykel I ȝow love,
> I have ȝow holpen to ȝoure above,
> And more y wolde yff y hadde ought."

9/227. So in MS., but "is" should be *it*.

9/230. Palladius says that virgin chastity, *i.e.* Minerva, is "promynent," *i.e.* patron, *presul*, of the olive; the translator has reversed the order.

10/254. *That manner molde*; so 27/723, *all manner puls*, like Chaucer's "No maner wight," in Prologue to Canterbury Tales, and elsewhere.

12/306. Sic in MS.: there is doubtless an omission of *South*, the original having "præcipue quæ ab Austro vel Occidente."

14/373. *Spongia* in original is a kind of stone. *Vide* Pliny.

15/383. The translator seems to have mistaken *tectorium* of the original=a kind of rough-cast, for *tectum*.

15/400. It will be observed that *tough* is made to rime with *yo*, as in Robert of Brunne's Chron. I. 357/10,218, *loughes* (lochs) rymes with *trowes* (trows, boats). There also *tow* (tough, A.S. *toh*) rymes with *drow* (drew), 452/13,038. In the Midland dialect, and standard speech, the final guttural was no doubt silent.

16/423. The comma should be at "foule"; and the meaning is *excused* (by themselves on the plea) lest they should lack water, or sea-fowl.

18/463. Chaucer uses the singular "gre" for a *step*; but I do not know another instance of the plural form *grece*.

20/544. The translator has inserted this line *proprio motu* in derision of these absurd superstitions.

25/659. This remarkable stanza is for the most part due to the translator. Palladius's account of the Pheasant in the original has been much applauded.

26/712. There is nothing in the Latin about this laughter; and it is not easy to see what gave rise to it.

27/728. *This is no nay*, is a phrase of Chaucer's.

29/790. *diche* here seems to be superfluous; and for the first *thi* one would be inclined to substitute *the*; but see *infrà*, 30/815.

30/818. So in MS., but *thennes* seems required.

31/837. It is *shouell* in MS., and so I ought to have given it, as Mr. Skeat reminds me.

31/840. *for dyveres deres*=against divers injuries.

33/892. Democritus of Abdera wrote a book called *Georgicon*, which is referred to by all the Latin writers *de re Rustica*.

36/980. There is nothing in the original corresponding with

"aboute a quyk calf gridde": the translator probably mistook the meaning of *viticulæ*.

37/1021. *fold*. We get the meaning of this word, 88/770, where it is explained by "ornus." I have omitted to mention that these explanatory words are all in the MS. inserted by the translator between the lines: they are by no means always the same words as are used in the original. I do not find this name for the ash in the Dictionaries or Glossaries.

38/1035. So in MS., but *gutteres* is required.

39/1053. *into stonde*, i.e. to stand in.

40/1085. *The celles suspensures*, in original "cellarum suspensuras," *i.e.* the arching, or vaulted work on which the Roman baths were built.

43. In the Latin distich at the end of this page Mr. Skeat saw at a glance that I had mistaken *unus* for *imus*. It is in fact meant to rime with *primus*, and to signify *last*. It is to little purpose to say that Horace would have written *summus*, not *imus*, vide Hor. Epist. 1. 1. I had taken *unus* in connexion, not with "liber," but with the subject of the next line. I take this opportunity of thanking Mr. Skeat for this and several other services rendered me in his review in the *Academy*.

44/15. Barnaby Googe says of these balks: "The good husband must trie whether it be well plowed or no, & not onely trust your eyes, which (the balks being covered with mould) may easily be deceived, but trie it with your hand (which is a certainer proofe) by thrusting downe a rod into the furrow, which if it pierce alike in every place, it sheweth that the ground is well plowed. If it be shallow in one place & deepe in another, it declares the ground to be evil handled in the plowing."

46/67. =so much will grow to thee.

46/77. In this, and other places, where the metre requires a monosyllable, one would have expected *forwe*. See next line.

47/78. A full stop is required at *wyse*.

48/114. "Dissensseth," so written in the MS., and it is evidently, as required by the context, a verb in the imperative: but as the Latin is *discuties*, I suspect "dissensseth" to be a mistake of the copyist for *discusseth*.

50/172. It would seem as if the pronunciation of this word varied with the spelling, and the same with *tough* and *ynough*, with which it is often made to rime. Compare the rimes of this stanza with those of stanza 4, p. 45: *plowe* there rimes with *growe*, and "tough,"

"ynough," and "plough" are meant to correspond with each other in sound, I fancy according to the modern pronunciation of "tough"; and so in 85/672. "Ynowe," like "plowe," often occurs with the other sound, *e.g.* 52/231; but then we have "lough" (72/304, and 50/184) meaning *low*, and most probably with the same sound as "low": so that it is not easy to come to a satisfactory conclusion on the matter.

50/184. The side-note, notwithstanding the gap in the printing, has said all that was intended; "and," however, should have had its first letter, and *low* should have been given, without the (?), as the explanation of "lough," not *longh*.

52/231. It is strange that our word *very* should have established itself as almost the sole representative of the intensive adverb. Our Early English was much more copious in this respect; and "right" and *ful* were often employed with good effect in this service: *right* occurs twice in this line, and in other places, where the substitution of *very* would be no improvement. In 172/42, where it seems used to signify excess of *badness*, it may be a little perplexing. In such phrases as "right by" (6/149), and "right as thou went" (36/968), it conveys a meaning of *local* exactness. In 45/49 the adverb "forth right" relates to *time*, and signifies *immediately*.

55/303. Gargilius Martial is several times quoted by Palladius as a writer on Agriculture, but little is known about him with certainty. There was an author of this name contemporary with Alexander Severus, whom Vopiscus speaks of as a second-rate writer; but whether he is the same person with the Martial in the text it is not possible to determine.

56/344. The meaning seems to be "the walnut is to be planted sideways, one of its sides downwards, the point, or thinnest end, looking towards the north."

56/352. This represents the old reading *una* instead of *ima*.

57/371. The two misprints in the word "copron," which I have noticed in the *Corrigenda*, have sadly disfigured it.

58/399. So in MS. for *er*, i.e. ere, before.

60/443. Notice "an other," like *altera*=the second.

60/442-448. These hours are the divisions of the Roman day from sunrise to sunset. The sixth hour is always midday. The calculation is only for the first day of each month. The feet represent the length of the shadow of the gnomon of the Roman sundials when struck by the rays of the sun. Gesner and Schneider, in their respective editions of Palladius, have produced at length a learned dissertation of Aldus

on the subject, to which we refer the reader who may desire a thorough investigation of the questions involved.

61/12. The translator seems to speak of the same land as thin and fat at the same time: in the original it is "solo tenui et resoluto, *vel* etiam pingui."

63/527. The old reading was *fecundas* for "infecundas."

64/86. The Aminean vine has its name from an old town of Campania. Pliny says the bees gave their name to the Apianean.

66/153. There is a space left in the MS. for a word before "bèsinesse"; probably the word omitted is "better."

67/167. *leves* in MS. is a manifest error of the transcriber.

67/187. Mago, a Carthaginian writer on Agriculture, of uncertain age, was translated into Greek, and is frequently quoted by Pliny and Columella, as well as by Palladius.

67/188. I have proposed to expunge the *d* from "yerdes" as a manifest error of the MS.

68/191. In the original it is *putrefient;* therefore there can be no doubt that *purifie* should give place to *putrifie*. The semicolon should have been placed after "rootes" in the next line, and not at the end of this.

69/236. This line labours under some defect, but I cannot say what it is.

72/318. I propose the substitution of *to* for "the," in deference to the original "formandam esse."

73/346. So in MS., but *of* seems to be required before "graffynges."

75/397. "her either" here, and "Ereither," 32/880, evidently represent the A.S. *Heora æghwæther;* but in these places the meaning seems rather to be *both of them together*, than *either of them* separately.

76/431. The original has here *in* the Pastine, or land prepared for vines; and two lines above the "tables brinkes," or extremities of the beds, are spoken of as *in* the vineyard at the *Decumanus limes;* for the vineyards were laid out with all the precision and order of a fixed camp.

76/433. "an handful" seems a strange measure of length here, and in 119/429. In the original it is *palmus*=a handsbreadth, as in 80/536, or *manubrii crassitudine*. In Old English it was called a *shaftman:* thus, in Barnaby Googe, 78*a*, we read "not exceeding a foot in length, nor a shaftman in shortness." *Vide* Halliwell. Bailey is more accurate, as becomes a lexicographer, and calls it "Shaftment."

76/437. A verb is wanting in the MS., perhaps *oley* after "hedes."

81/577. *i.e.* "lete to plannte it"=have it planted. The "to" is unusual.

82/600. "bere a belle." This proverbial expression occurs in Chaucer (*Troilus*, iii. 199):—

"And let see which of you shal beare the belle
To speake of love aright."

83/612. It would help the metre to read *cleyi*, i.e. clayey.

84/645. "roote" in this line, though explained by "radicem," is not the accusative, but the nominative to "is sowe" in next line. The first "sowe" I think is a verb active, and that *is* has found its way into the text by an error of the copyist.

84/656. "synk." It is not easy to recognize the French *cinq* under this grotesque form; but it seems to have been at one time the current spelling of the word Anglicized: thus in Lydgate's "Order of Fools," edited by Mr. Furnivall in *Queene Elizabethes Achademy*, 81/51, we read: "whos chaunce gothe neither yn synke or syse."

85/668. "goo too." This expression, of such frequent occurrence in the Authorized Version of the Scriptures, answers nearly to the Latin interjection *Heus*. We meet with it also in Spenser, *e.g.* F. Q. 5/43, Book I.:—

"Goe to, then, O thou far-renowned sonne
Of great Apollo."

89/795. So in MS., but *olofte*, as in 40/1088, seems certainly required.

90/829. I and the translator's scribe have made sad havoc of this line between us. I am responsible for the omission of the verb "trede" before "hem": he has inserted an unnecessary "and"; and in the next line he has written "peres" instead of "pure."

92/877. I have no doubt it should have been "populer," as in 93/900.

93/907. So in MS., as in other places, for "seyen"=seen.

98/1049. The "pynappultree" is the common pine, on which cones or apples grow.

99/1074. "thaire," in this place and many others, is the adverb *there*, i.e. *where*.

100/1088. *i.e.* over and above six consume or sell. *Vide suprà* 1069.

100/1092. So in MS., instead of "wage."

100/1096. The meaning is, "let a basket made of palm-leaves strain this wine." The punctuation is wrong.

101/1140. *ὀπὸν Κυρηναϊκὸν*. The first meaning of *Opium* was only vegetable juice.

103/1172. *Sarmentes* (*scions*). Both words are in the MS.; the second is unnecessary.

106/52. I suspect some error in this line. In the original it is: "nec in sabulone solum, sed in arena quoque proveniunt."

108/128. So in MS. for *dounged*.

110/169. "armorace" or "arborace." The translator is not always so particular about the right spelling.

110/175. This, with several ejaculations of a similar character, is due entirely to the translator.

111/191. There is a redundant word, probably "flatte."

111/217. =That will not be denied, but flourish in all weathers.

113/247. I have remarked already on the care of the translator to show that the words which he makes to rime together have a difference of meaning. It is sometimes very slight, but he is at great pains to point out that there *is* a difference. This stanza is a good example: the word "ferme" occurs no less than three times at the end of lines; and there are Latin words placed above to mark the difference of meaning. Unhappily, the explanation of the word in the second instance of its use is not very legibly written, and there is nothing in the original answering to it. It looks like *ad firmam*, but it is more probably *affirmare*, or some other part of the verb; perhaps *adfirmandum*. After saying that it was trouble to no purpose to break the plants off, instead of pulling them up, after the first year, he adds, "therefore, set it down as a thing to affirm ('to ferme') that places which before were fruitful 'close themselves,' and become unfruitful by so doing, by reason of the roots which cumber the ground."

113/266. *all to braye*, written as three words. In other places "alleto" is made one word; but I do not remember an instance in which either *to* or *alto* is joined with the verb.

114/275. "sette" is not in the MS., but is evidently necessary: "is" is a misprint for "in."

114/291. What is the herb here called Blite, *Lat.* Blitum, is not very clear, perhaps Spinach.

114/294. *Wordes* of the MS. should probably be *worldes*, i.e. worlds in the sense of *ages;* as we say "world without end." So I had written, but Mr. Skeat remarks that *wordes* and *wordes* occur so often for *worlds*, that they may be considered as only different forms of the same word. There still remains, however, its peculiar signification here.

116/342. The word here rendered "togh," and in 118/395, "tenes," is in the original *tenacibus*, and means *stalks*.

116/351. I have put the syllable "up" in brackets as redundant.

118/412. This means "some omit the boiling."

120/446. *Hem* seems to be wanted before "hie."

120/454, 467. It is to be noticed that these remarks are not in the original, but insertions due to the translator. There have been many such, of which no notice is given.

121/470. "There" refers to Sardinia, and this line should be in a parenthesis; the next lines to the end of the stanza describe the "oothinge worthie memorie" which "Marcial saugh in Sardyne."

121/472. "after harme." It may not be easy to trace the descent of this word, but I have little doubt that it represents, through some channel, the German *nachamen*, to imitate. The *r* seems to present an objection to this; but we have seen our translator writing "armonaike" (23/605) for *ammoniac*.

121/489. "clere" in this line should probably have been "clese," *i.e.* close.

122/501. "Is far to fetch," therefore is slow in coming.

125/593. The author has told us what *caprifying* "is to signifie"; but, as his text is very uncertain, the translator is to be excused if he is not very intelligible. There is nothing in the original about "a tree made like a sawe"; but the green fruit of the wild figtree is to be suspended on the tree to be ripened, with a thread run through it like *serta*, garlands, not *serra*. Pliny tells us that this was in order that a kind of gnat, which was bred in the *caprificus*, might be induced to suck out the moisture of the figtree, and so hasten its maturity.

127/641. Two syllables are wanting in MS. to complete the sense and the metre, probably "leste wynde."

127/644. There should have been a stop at the end of line 643, and again at nought, the sense being: "it is (necessary) to refuse more or less than a year, as nought," *i.e.* good for nothing.

130/722. Sic in MS.

133/800. Mr. Skeat refers me to Dr. Morris's note on Chaucer (Clarendon Press Selections) for the meaning of "steep eyes"; but in the original it is "magni." Perhaps I ought to have explained it *projecting*.

134/839. I cannot account for the omission of this line. The gap must have been conspicuous enough in the proof, but some how or other it escaped my notice. It is perfectly legible in the MS. as follows:

"That thai may mylk her foles abundance."

141/46. "craffes" in the MS., but it should no doubt be "graffes."

142/68. We need not be surprised at the wrong done to the quantity of the word *σέλινον*.

144/107. So in MS., but I suspect it should be *fervent*, not "infervent," and that the words "is sette," or some equivalent expression, have been omitted.

144/118. To agree with the original this "by" ought to mean *against*; but whether the translator so intended it is at least doubtful: his words seem rather to signify "approaching the fat rather than the lean;" whereas the original is "proximam tenui atque jejunæ." It is hardly necessary to say that *by* does sometimes mean *against*, as in 1 Cor. iv. 4.

144/125. "Nowe" of the MS. apparently should be *noo*, i.e. no, none.

148/219. These prologues and epilogues afford some very curious specimens of in-riming. Here every line is made to rime in itself as well as with its neighbour. The sense is not always rendered the clearer by this process. It looks as if "doon is," in line 220, is meant to be a plural form of the gerund, i.e. *agenda*. "Jesse floure," in the next line, calls to mind the Jesse-trees of ancient art, on which our Lord's genealogy was depicted. In 224 I have put "s" in brackets as evidently an error of the MS. "Of floures flour" is Chaucer's expression in the prologue to his "Legend of Good Women," which seems to have been in the mind of the translator whilst writing this epilogue. There is a word omitted in the MS. in l. 225, probably *cloudes*, or *worldes*. Chaucer in the forecited prologue has, "That in this derke world me wynt."

151/61. See under Peculiar Order of Words in "Grammatical Notices," *suprd*, page xx.

153/129. The last word in this line, which ought to mean "mix," or something equivalent, is not completed in the MS.; the second syllable is wanting.

154/151. "and" seems wanting in the MS. before "yet."

157/218. "That" of the MS. should probably be "Take" at the beginning of this line.

157/225. The hours which are here represented by the technical names of the division of the day in A.S. times, in the original are simply described by their number, as 1st, 2nd, 3rd, etc. In the side-note I have made one agree with the other.

157/232. The same in-riming is observable in this epilogue, the meaning of which is tolerably clear. I ought to have printed *drope* in l. 237.

159/26. This picture of the wheat-field bending to greet and express thanks for its ripeness is due entirely to the translator.

159/27. From this knowledge of French husbandry, it has been concluded, perhaps too hastily, that our Palladius must be the

"Facundus juvenis Gallorum nuper ab arvis
Missus"

mentioned by Rutilius, as related in our preface. With respect to the cart, Barnaby Googe's account is: "Palladius teacheth, besides the labour of men, a shorter way to be done with an oxe, that shall in short time cut downe all that groweth, which was woont to be used in Fraunce. The devise was a low kind of Carre with a couple of wheeles, and the front armed with sharpe sickles, which forced by the beast through the corne did cut downe all before it. This tricke might be used in levell and champion countries; but with us it would make but ill-favoured worke."

160/74. There is nothing in the original to decide the meaning of these French words: but as *ache*, parsley, has been mentioned before, p. 142, they are most likely *comme devant*, as Mr. Furnivall has kindly pointed out to me, to whose advice, guidance, and encouragement, whenever I have consulted him, I am greatly indebted.

162/125. "multiplice" of the MS. should be "multiplie," to rime with "drie" in the next line.

163/143. It is to be observed here that a difference is made between noon and midday by the translator. In the original we have only the fifth and sixth hour: *i.e.* eleven and twelve o'clock.

163/148. This epilogue is free from in-riming, and presents no especial difficulty: "umne" in the first line should have been "ymne" =hymn.

167/90. This is Chaucer's phrase: he calls Constance, in the *Man of Lawe's Tale*, "the sely innocent." Spenser speaks of "a silly lambe" becoming "the innocent prey" of a lyon in F. Q., b. 1, c. 6.

168/129. There is in the MS. a faint tail to the end of *well*, which may be meant for a *y*.

170/162. The in-riming of this epilogue is most extraordinary; and in addition to the final rimes, every two lines are made to rime together in the middle. The latter part is very obscure, and the misprints make bad worse. In l. 168 it should of course be *Prince*, and *I* should be inserted before the first "mene." For "she mine ignorance" compare 171/9. "faust nygh" in line 169 I take it to be =*hard by*, as in Spenser, F. Q. 1, 12, 25, "Fast before the king"; and in F. Q. 2, 2, 37, "Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sansloy."

172/42. The translator has mistaken the meaning, if "fungous

stronge" are epithets of praise; but perhaps he meant the contrary, and referred "thereof" to *dounge*, not to *chaf*.

173/54. This notion of the rape and the cabbage refusing to land at the same port is due to the translator.

178. Here again observe the lines riming in the middle as well as at the end. In 213 "make" is Chaucer's word for writing poetry, adopted from the Greek ποιητής. In 216 "the Prince" occurs again. I do not clearly see to whom *he* refers in l. 217.

179/11. In the original it is plainly "cum minuitur Luna." The translator probably wrote, or meant to write, *Phœbe*.

179/17. So in MS., but "As" seems necessary instead of "And."

180/43. *Sic*; but there is in MS. a flourish, which may indicate an *e*. I have no doubt that Mr. Skeat is right about "Hopre"=a seed-basket, in the Latin *modium*; but for "cloth," or "clothe," we have *vestieris*. I had mistaken *hoppit* for *Hopper*, a word used twice by Chaucer in the Miller's Tale, ll. 924 and 927.

183/126. This line, printed just as in the MS., is evidently out of its place. It ought to have come before l. 124.

186/211. In this epilogue we again have the double rimes and the same sentiment, but in language more easily intelligible. I have bracketed the syllable "un" as unnecessary.

187/5. I have put the superfluous "is" in brackets. "on ende" at the close of the line is carefully explained to mean *diligently*, to justify the rime with "atte end" in the line before. The phrase generally means *completely*.

188/46. It is difficult to follow the translator here. I see nothing in the original about balancing on tiptoe, or three toes growing for one.

190/96. The word which looks like *heiry* is probably *heivy*, or some form of "heavy." It should have been printed separately from *lete*, which I take here in the intransitive sense of *stopping*, or sinking. The Latin is "propter naturæ gravitatem remanens aqua subsidet, et translatum vinum pure servabitur, relicto quicquid se ex illi ex imbre miscuerit."

191/116. There is space left in the MS. for a word before "playne."

191/128. The MS. is here manifestly faulty. One would expect it to be "And *feede* (i.e. food) it is to dust it ofte and weede." In the original we have "sarculari debet assidue, ut respergatur pulvere, quo fovetur." In what follows the translator had the old reading *nimis* instead of *minus*, which makes all the difference.

196/266. Castration of bees. The translator would seem to have read "de apibus castrandis" instead of "de alvearibus castrandis."

196/271. This benevolence towards the bees is expressed in the original without the unceremonious severity upon those who deprive them of their stores.

197. There is surely a mistake in the MS. in the heading of this section, which intimates that all these wines are made of the larger fruits, such as apples or pomes. Barnaby Googe shall tell what these are. He says, "*Pomum*, generally spoken, is to be understood of all that the Greekes comprehended in the word ὄπωρα, as peaches, quinces, and peares, whereunto the Lawyer agreeth."

197/296. In the original it is eightieth here, and fiftieth in the next line, which the metre seems to require, to say nothing of the wine.

198/305. This is rather a free translation of *utrum vendenda sit.*

198/308. The translator must have had another reading before him, or else he has strangely mistaken the meaning of *diuretica.*

199/334. *ydroken* looks like a slip of the pen for *ydronken.* The Latin word is *aperies*, and perhaps this sense may be got out of A.S. *dreogan*, German *drüken.*

200/358. This plant, the *Italian clover*, should have been written *melilot* quasi *melle lotus. Gliciride*, or rather *glycyrize*, sweet root, is the liquorice.

200/369. A syllable is wanting; perhaps *and* before "clene."

201/404. I have at a venture supplied a syllable in brackets.

202/418. In the MS. the three last words are written separately. Modern editors incline to unite the three together. In similar expressions we may have had the prefix *te* joined to the verb or participle; and frequently *alto* written as one word; but in no case, as far as I remember, are the three words amalgamated.

203/443. me trete, divided in the MS., is the Greek μετρητὴς.

205/513. I have added a syllable in brackets to help the metre.

205/519. The feet spoken of are, of course, those that trod out the wine.

205/525. *Musty* bread has not a very attractive sound to our notions; but the Romans used the term to signify *new, fresh*, and *good*, of apples, cheeses, honey, and even books. A *musty* book would hardly be considered now-a-days one to be desired.

206/547. It will of course have been observed that all these epilogues are in the stanza of eight lines, and that they have, for the most part, been very carelessly copied by the translator's scribe. Chaucer,

probably, would not have had milder words for him than he bestowed upon his own immortal "Adam Scrivener." This stanza is provokingly full of omissions, which it is impossible to supply. The translator's freak this time is to make both the last and antepenult syllables rime: thus, "light superne" with "might eterne," "honoure, empire," with "houre and gire;" but the fourth and sixth lines limp terribly for want of their proper feet. Here again I fail to see distinctly who it is saving whose brightness there is no star in our hemisphere.

207/14. I have referred "Thei" to the harrowers; I fancy, however, from what follows, that it belongs rather to the beans. In v. 18 the MS. has the superfluous "n," which I have bracketed.

208/23. That is before sunrise: for after the full moon, sun and moon are both above the horizon at the same time.

209/69. Another redundant word.

209/76. I have here supplied the syllable in brackets.

213/165. The MS. inserts this unnecessary "and."

213/173. The initial letter of "navel," omitted in the MS., is evidently wanted, and "coart" in the next line must be a slip of the pen.

218/309. I have supplied *drie* from the Latin, and two lines below I have marked a redundancy of the MS. The brackets in every case indicate a proposed departure from the MS., whether by insertion or suppression.

220, last line but one: *dreynt*. Spenser, F. Q., also uses "drent" for *drowned*. *E.g.* in 2, 6, 49, where Archimago calls to Pyrochles in the *Idle Lake*:

> "What flames," quoth he, "when I thee present see
> In danger rather to be drent than brent?"

The rest of November and the whole of December have been torn out of the MS., and destroyed. I question whether the fourteenth book, "de Insitionibus," was ever done by the same hand. Probably if he had translated it, he would have done it in prose.

GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

A, And, 34/915.
Ablaqueacion, Lat. (see side-note), 44/1.
Aboundable, abundant, 207/19.
Abounde, be abundant, 203/255.
Above seems used as a substantive, superior condition, 8/199.
Abrood, broadwise, across, 158/5.
Abroode, across, 125/586.
Adell, much, a deal, 19/502.
Admyssure, Lat. pairing of horses, 136/875.
Adolent, grown up, 105/30.
Advail, advantage, 78/497.
Adorate, Adorify, sweet smelling, 110/180.
Ador, Lat. a fine wheat, 180/41.
Afere, frighten, 131/750.
Afer, afar, 150/47.
Affray, commotion, 185/186.
Afterharme, to imitate (note), 121/472.
Afterlonges, lengthways, 66/139.
Agoo, *ad.* agoing,
Agrest, Lat. wild, 198/324.
Aisel, vinegar, 169/134.
Alete, to melt, be softened, 174/103.
Alethe, *vide* Alete, allay, 202/434.
Alfor, alto, thoroughly, 205/506.
Alight, lighted, kindled, 147/208.
Alite, a little, lightly, 23/621.
Allyng, A.S. *eallunga*, entirely, 208/42.
Als, else, besides, 35/948.
Amydwarde, towards the middle, 126/631.
Amende, correct, 6/139.
Amonge, at times, 174/86.
Amorwe, on the next day, torn leaf, sub finem.
An, one, 150/40.
Anende, anent, opposite, 40/1094.
Anende, to finish, 158/9.
Anende, diligently, 109/138.
Anyghtes, *adv.* in night time, 173/379.
Anoie, annoy, 108/131.
Anoon, anon, presently, 10/263.
Aparty, not apart, but somewhat, sumdel, 83/629, 85/679.
Apert, Lat. open, uncovered, 189/151.
Appeire, Fr. to deteriorate, impair, 62/41.
Appeson, appease, 120/418.
Ar, ere, before, 50/173.
Are, ere, before, 155/184, 181/75.
Arew, in a row, 25/678.
Arm-greete, as big as the arm, 75/412.
As with adjective or adverb, intensive, like *quam*, Lat., but often redundant with imperative, 16/429.
Ascaunce, a slope, 150/39.
Aslepe, sleepy, as said of ripe fruit, 59/429.
Askes, ashes, 22/592.
Aslake, *v.* remove, 38/1041.
Aspy, aspie, espy, 145/160.
Assise, to place, 16/431.
Assise, to adjust, to measure or weigh, 177/180.

Assure, *verb neut.* as in Chaucer's "Troilus," 1358, rely upon, 9/214.
Assure, "In resting thai assure," *i.e.* they are sure to rest, 146/185.
Asswithe, quickly, 126/623.
Astate, state, estate, 98/1036.
Astite, quickly, soon, 16/409.
Ataste alore, learn by the taste, 16/404.
Athide, cover, A.S. *thydan*, 35/955.
Atte alle, altogether, quite, 202/414.
Atteones, once only, 94/927.
Atteroppes, spiders, 138/945.
Atwynne, between, 15/396.
Atwynne, apart, 66/134.
Auntceaunt, ancient, 200/364.
Avale, to go down, descend, 177/167, 178/193.
Avance, advance, improve, 42/1144.
Avaylant, availing, 211/126.
Avisily, carefully, 4/73, 73/357.
Avowe, vow, 42/1145.
Avyse, attend to, cure, 140/14.
Axe, ask, 44/2, etc., etc.
Ayenie, again, 140/1, 195/237.
Aysell, vinegar, 93/904.

Bake, Bak, back, 39/1068, 42/1156.
Balk, to leave land unplowed, 8/184.
Balke, *s.* land so left, 44/15.
Barme, sauce, preserve, 220/9.
Bay, berry, globule, 61/198.
Begoon, adorned, covered. gold begoon, overspread with gold, as woe-begone, full of woe, *vide* Coleridge's "Glossary," 23/630.
Begripe, grip, contain, 54/279.
Berafte, snatched, saved, 212/140.
Berayned, rained upon, 198/310.
Bernetes represents the old corrupt reading for "Vervacta," fallows ploughed in spring, 105/48.
Besily, busily, anxiously, 23/612.
Bete, beat, to make (a fire), 19/501.
Bethought, thoughtful, 40/1080.
Bette, better, 113/270.
Betwet, *qu.* bewet? wetted, 45/26.
Bey, buy, 11/281.
Bicornes, Lat. pitchforks, 42/1161.
Bifornys, *pr.* anterior, in front, 159/43.
Bigge, rich, strong, *vide* Morris's Specimens E.E., 41/1130.
Bipedal, Lat. two feet long, 155/185.
Blichenyng, mildew, blight, 31/827.
Blyve, quickly, 21/521.
Blyve, as blyve, as quick as possible, 60/445.
Bolde, to make bold, embolden, 105/24, 151/77.
Bold, *v. intrans.*, become strong, 215/223.
Bole, bull, 41/1133.
Bonchief, opposite to mischief, 5/115.
Boon, bones, or stones, or pips of fruit, 144/110.
Boote, A.S. benefit, 9/238.
Borde, border, or bed, 109/150.
Bosshing, making bushy, 188/33.
Boteler, butler, 86/696.
Bragot, a British liquor, 90/812.
Brawnes, muscles, 129/575.
Bray, bruise, 111/195.
Brede, broad, breadth, 18/466, 47/85.
Brede, bread, 34/911.
Brede, make broad, spread out, 190/101.
Breres, briars, 42/1160.
Breses, locusts, 24/654.
Briche, brick, 212/135.
Broke, brook, 190/92.
Brolles, heads, brows, 43/1166.

Browsty, rancid, mouldy, 219/15.
Brustles, bristles, 27/724.
Brymme, brim, *subare*, *vide* Albert Way's *Prompt.*, 98/1051, 99/1070.
Bryning, Brenning, burning, 9/224, 127/665, 153/117.
Burgyne, to bud, 53/307, 74/376.
But, unless, 35/949, 94/934.
But, boot, benefit, 113/269.
But if, unless, 137/910, etc.
Buxom, obedient, 6/126.
By, towards, against, 1/7.
By & by, frequently, 208/46.
By, hard by, close (compare "Right by," 6/149), 108/119.
By dene, altogether, wholly, *vide* Stratmann's O.E. Dict., 8/184.
Bygrounde, to the bottom, completely, 41/1132.
Byraine, *v.* shower, 35/952.
Byrayned, rained upon, 198/307.
Byspreyntt, sprinkled, 106/70, 168/111.
Bystrowed, strewed, 92/889.
Bywette, Bewette, wetted, 65/125, etc.

Caduc, Lat. ready to fall, mellow, 89/785.
Caire, to go, to creep, perhaps an error of the transcriber, for *carie*, riming with *necessarie*, 143/88.
Calcatory, wine-press, 17/461.
Callum, Lat. any hard substance, 125/599.
Calvair, Lat. skull, 36/984.
Caniculer, Dog-star, hounde, 164/13.
Cannibe, crooked, applied to knife, suggests inquiry, 62/1157.
Caprify, to ripen figs (see note), 125/892.
Carbunculine, consisting of carbuncles, or stone coal, 216/272.
Carene, *vide* side-note, 204/484.
Carenaynes, Lat. *carenarias*, boilers, 168/130.
Cast, determine, 9/234.
Caul, Lat. stalks, 200/381.
Caule, Lat. stalks, 165/39.
Cause, to cast or shed teeth, 135/862, 135/864.
Cave, upon (does not seem to correspond very intelligibly with the Lat. "in quem frumenta transfusa refrigerentur"), 37/996.
Certayne, a certain quantity, 185/185.
Chappe, crack, split, 116/339.
Chare, chair, car, 35/957.
Charge, dispute, 28/744.
Chasten, a chestnut, 216/253.
Chaufe, Fr. warm, 40/1088.
Chaule, jaw, jowl, here the front of a cart, 159/34.
Chaunging, *subs.* a change, 71/63.
Chave, to cover or mix with chaff, 108/119.
Chese, chuse, 11/281.
Chene, chink, 17/441.
Chere, countenance, 196/250.
Chesbolles, poppies, 184/134.
Cheve, achieve, 50/168.
Cheved, succeeded, 217/297.
Chich, to chuck as a hen, *vide* Bailey, 25/661.
Childe, *v.* to bear, 190/90.
Chyne, chyning, a chink or crack, 41/1116.
Chyne, *v.* to crack, 156/199.
Clave, Lat. a large truncheon, 119/415.
Cleche, to grasp at, clutch, 145/158.
Cleen, claws, hoofs, 68/5.
Cleme, daub, smear, A.S. *clæmian*, 39/1078.
Cleme, to plaster up, 199/339.
Clenliche, cleanly, 115/311.
Clere (qy. clese ?), to close, 121/489.
Clese, close, enclose, 27/721.

Cleve, Lat. *clivus*, declivity, 50/167.
Clock, to cluck as a hen, 25/660.
Clonge, withered, A.S. *clingan*, 55/339.
Cloos, close confinement, 169/141.
Cloothe, a cloth, 199/338.
Clorded, contracted, 137/919.
Closter, cluster, 186/194.
Clype, clip, 43/1164.
Coact, Lat. compelled, 213/174.
Coärted, Lat. kept close, confined, 101/1131, 213/174.
Cocurs, leggings, *cothurus*, *vide* Albert Way's *Prompt.*, 43/1167.
Codde, the stock of a tree, Lat. *codex*, 144/119.
Coffyns, boxes, 128/672.
Coloquynt, colocinth, coloquintida, bitter apple, 34/913.
Columbine, dove-coloured, 14/372.
Colver-hous, A.S. pigeon-house, 21/554.
Commysure, Lat. joint, 141/42.
Complayne, to suffer hardships, or perhaps make level, 158/14.
Complose, Lat. knocked together, 175/167.
Comprehende, Lat. take, strike, as plants, 141/46.
Comyn, moderately, commonly, 142/55.
Condite, Lat. *condire*, to flavour, to season, 203/449.
Condyment, *v.* to flavour, 205/525.
Condyte, Lat. stored, or preserved, 157/222.
Confray, to rub together, 111/196.
Congius, six sextarii, 169/109.
Congys, the Roman *congii*, 183/117.
Connyng, skill, 97/1015.
Contende, hasten, 206/532.
Cool, colewort, cabbage, 32/879.
Coors, corse, body, 4/85.
Cordyng, according, agreeing, 156/214, 157/224, etc.
Cornel, corner, 13/326.
Cornels, kernels, 185/163.
Corser, Fr. horsedealer, *vide* Halliwell, 135/846.
Cote, pigstye, 99/1081.
Cotul, Lat. a measure containing about a pint, 200/383.
Counter, counteract, 63/66.
Courage, Fr. heart, mind, spirit, 190/90.
Couthe, could=*couth*, *cúð notus*, 39/167. Stratmann's Dict. 109.
Covert, to cover, 6/146, 15/385.
Crafte, *v.* to make skilfully, 16/428, but see Stratmann.
Crece, increase, 9/227.
Crese, crush, 142/77.
Crodded, curded, 154/141.
Crofte, small field or garden, 89/796.
Croppe, to cut off the top, 143/92.
Croppes, tops of branches, 96/990.
Crucke, bend, twist, 51/210.
Crudde, curd, or rennet, 154/142.
Crueltee, harshness, foulness, 210/81.
Cuculle, Lat. hood, 43/1116.
Cure, care, 84/655.
Curiage, a herb, 37/1016.
Cyment, cement, 17/449.
Cynarbare, cinnabar, vermilion, 211/118.
Cyner, cinder-ash, 220/16.

Dalk, a hollow, 125/608.
Deche, *v.* cover, Germ. *decken*, 41/1124.
Dechyng, covering, 175/185.
Dede, die, 28/752.
Defaicte, defeat, 3/44.
Defervyng, boiling down, 204/485.
Defie, to steep, digest, 102/1160.
Defrut, a kind of wine, 204/484.
Dele, divide, distribute, 66/150, 201/395.
Delf, a trench, 144/117.
Delves, trenches, 44/6, 52/239.
Deme, to judge, 4/83, 163/151.

Demene, manage, arrange, 5/95, 19/497,
Dene, ten, 22/587.
Depart, *v. trans.* separate, part, 29/779.
Dependent, hanging, 99/1060.
Dere, dear, 11/279.
Dere, injury, 31/840.
Dere, *v.* to injure, 31/840.
Desolve, dissolve, reduce to a pulp, 204/496.
Detracte, Lat. extracted, 213/171.
Devise, Lat. *divisus*, being divided or distributed, 199/348.
Devolve, roll down, remove, 204/497.
Devyse, Fr. to order, arrange, advise, 61/21, etc.
Digne, Lat. worthy, 187/7.
Disclude, disclose, 152/84.
Discuss, Lat. *divide*, *vide* Corrigenda.
Dispense, to excuse, not to require, 157/235.
Distempre, to put out of health, 11/273.
Distreyne, subdue, 16/415.
Disyoynt, destroy, put out of place, 32/273, 170/164.
Divyne, guess, doubt, 75/410.
Do, make, 21/561.
Do fro, withdraw, subtract, 214/197.
Dolve, delved, dug, 125/582.
Dolven, dug, 14/353.
Doo, make, place, *e.g.* "Doo the rootes to," place on the roots, 16/417, 116/356.
Doom, judgment, 20/525.
Doone of that, done with that, had enough of it, 216/263.
Dote, decay, 28/752.
Do to, do with, add (do fro, subtract, 214/197), 200/370, 205/510.
Dover, a hole, vide *Pr. Parv.*, 127/654.
Draff, refuse, lees of wine, 22/580.
Dragmes, drachms, 169/145.
Drenche, to drown, plunge, 204/482.
Dresse, Fr. prepare, 79/501.
Drestes, A.S. dregs, 35/944.
Dreynt, drained, drenched, strained, pressed, 220/20.
Drie, thirst, 132/777.
Dripe, drop, put down, A.S. *dripan*, 54/277.
Drope, drop or stain, 157/237.
Drove, herd, 134/826.
Drury, dreary, sad, 196/250.
Dwyne, dwindle, 63/75.

Echate, Hecate, the moon, 22/526.
Eche, add, 41/1122.
Eddres, adders, 38/1036.
Edifie, build, 14/364.
Eere, ear of corn, 158/16.
Effloure, to cease flowering, 64/82.
Efte, again, or after, 16/416.
Efte and tries, a second and third time, 216/266.
Eftsones, again, 62/27.
Egestion, Lat. the issue or production of the new wine, or its removal from the vats, 204/449.
Egge, edge, 16/411.
Eghen, eyes, 23/604.
Eitheres, either, 30/808.
Either, both, 186/203.
Eke, also, 38/1049, etc.
Eke, destroy, *vid.* Halliwell, 23/608.
Elebre, hellebore, 38/1044.
Elles, else, 38/1031, 60/488.
Elleveth, eleventh, 60/448.
Elonge as the liketh, make as long as you like, 47/80.
Elonge, to keep long, 126/631.
Enable, become able, 134/834.
Enarme, embrace, protect, 19/502.
Enaye, annoy, 50/163.
Encluse, inclosed, 113/261.
Enclyne, to bend, 159/126.
Encre, increase, 209/66.

Encrisped, curly, 154/139.
Ende, on ende, diligently, diligenter in MS., 187/5.
Endure, harden, 90/816.
Endured, kept, Lat. *custodiri*, 220/8.
Endwell, dwell in, 17/437.
Ene, only, 45/44.
Eneye, to inoculate, 166/53.
Enfecte, affect, injure, 155/177.
Enfecte, become infected or tainted, 199/350.
Englame, to stick, 26/692.
Enlyne, anoint, 152/105.
Enmyne, *v.* sink or dig, 28/768.
Ennoyes, *adj.* annoying, 126/612.
Enoculer, to inoculate, 166/53.
Enrounde, surrounded, 22/590.
Enter, between, Lat. *inter*, 77/455.
Entere, an intimate, favourite, 11/289.
Enterspace, intermediate space, 47/88.
Epatike, Lat. *hepatic*, relating to the liver, 200/361.
Ere amonge, ever amonge, ever and anon, 174/86, 175/132.
Ere, an ear, "Enclyne an ere," 199/341.
Eree, *v.* to plough, to ear, 61/10.
Eree, ever, 62/40.
Ereither, either of them (or rather the two together, *vide* Note, 397/75), 32/880.
Erthen, sooner than, before, 208/34.
Erthes, ploughings, from *eree*, q. v. 106/68.
Eschewe, *adj.* Fr. odious, 20/528, 125/586.
Eschewe, *v.* shun, 21/553.
Estivons, Lat. summery, 124/580.
Estuant, Lat. raging, boiling, 202/304.
Esy, agreeable to the taste, 203/503.
Even, to level, 150/39.
Ever amonge, every now and then, 105/29.
Excluse, Lat. excluded, 217/278.
Excodication, see side-note, 44/3.
Exile, Lat. poor, weak, thin, 201/387.
Exon, oxen, 19/513.
Expert, experienced, 120/454.
Expresse, open, clear, manifest, experienced, 66/154, 188/27.
Externe, *v.* alienate, 186/218.
Eyles, eyeless, 81/564.
Eyron, eggs, 22/582.
Eyther, *conj.* either, 2/25.

Fande, tried, attempted, 80/551.
Far, Lat. a kind of corn, 207/1.
Fare, to go, to be, to fare, 102/437.
Faust, fast, *i.e.* faust nygh, hard by, near, 170/169.
Faute, failure, 129/699.
Fayne, desirous, 188/38
Fecundare, fruitful, 36/985.
Feel, many, 92/869.
Feestern, to fester, 188/49.
Feetly, actively, carefully, 169/142.
Feint, *v.* to make faint, 100/1090.
Feire, fair, also to go, 125/550.
Felawe, fellow, 80/553.
Fele, A.S. many, 41/1109, etc.
Fenestell, Lat. window, 20/546.
Fer or ferre, far, 18/471.
Fer of, to be afraid of, 48/130.
Ferdfull, terrible, 130/704.
Fere, frighten, 159/44.
Fere, *v.* to remove, 36/1036.
Ferme, first, 113/547.
Ferment, Lat. leaven, 205/524.
Ferne, to cover with fern, 13/338.
Fers, fierce, 111/206.
Fervence, boiling heat, 203/444.
Feste, feast, entertainment, 153/106.
Fette, fetched, brought, 76/437, 111/192.
Fette, remove, 210/88.

Feture, breeding, 131/731.
Feverer, February, 50/178.
Firthe, fourth, 126/621.
Flappe, to beat, "To all to flappe," to beat much, 156/194.
Flete, *v.* flit, part, 214/211.
Flette, flat, a floor, 18/474.
Flevme, phlegm, 168/125.
Fleyke, basket, hurdles, wattles, 11/275, 92/881, 216/248.
Flonge, flung; to flonge, flung on, 179/11.
Foil, leaf, 145/144.
Fold, wrapped, folded, 144/127.
Folde, bend, 81/557, 88/774.
Fonde, strive, try to go, 185/168.
Fonde, found, 187/11.
Fonge, to lay hold, 189/76.
Fonne, catch, be caught, 33/910.
Foolde, mountain-ash tree, 27/1021, 88/774.
Foote, to found, to establish, 12/318.
Foothoote, speed (with foothoote, immediately), see Warton, 52/228.
For, in many places, against, 19/512.
Fordoo, destroy, 168/112.
Fore, for, 62/25.
Forfare, fare ill, 138/931.
Forferde, greatly afraid, 109/160.
Forkes, Lat. *furcas*, props used in building, 20/922.
Forme, first, 60/447.
Formest, first, foremost, 72/317, 190/93.
Forneis warde, towards the furnace, 40/1086.
Forthi, therefore, for this, 22/582.
Fortunate, *v. act.* to make fortunate, 7/180.
Forwe, furrow, 150/36, etc.
Forwepe, waste by weeping, 102/1149.
Forycide, requite, 12/311.
Foule, fowl, 22/627.
Founde, try, endeavour, 42/1137.
Frame, blend, 42/1138.
Frape, Fr. *frappe*, beaten, pounded, 203/418.
Frayels, frails, light baskets, 204/494.
Fresshe, to make freshe, 11/291.
Frete, eat (forfreaten, eaten away), 73/331
Frigiditee, cold or cool place, 108/124.
Frough, crisp, brittle, short to the taste, 84/662, 85/671, etc.
Frote, rub, 16/433, 25/683.
Frottes, probably a mistake of the MS. for froftes, frosts, 55/302.
Fundament, foundation, 12/316.
Fungous, spongy, 172/42, but *vide* Note.

Gage, Fr. measure, 119/427.
Gage, to engage, claim, 190/79.
Garth, garden, 29/778.
Gaseyn, marsh, Fr. *gazon*, 2/36.
Gedroken, *see* Ydroken, 199/334.
Geet, jet, 129/471.
Gentil, generous, thoroughbred, 86/71, 132/779.
Gentillesse, Fr. good birth, 188/28,
Germyne, to bud, 208/48.
Geson, rare, 106/65. *See* Stratmann's Dictionary.
Gesse, guess, or do by guess, 200/385.
Gestes, guests, 21/574.
Gey (qy. Wey), weigh, balance, 188/46.
Gire, gird, protect, 13/327.
Gireth, Lat. encircles, 186/203.
Gisily, ingeniously (from gise, a method), 75/409.
Gladde, cheerful, sunny, of land, 44/8.
Glade, gladden, 84/648.
Gliry, glutinous, 16/412.
Glocke, to shake violently, 168/131.

Glose, fondle, 132/758.
Goldes, marigolds, 110/174.
Gomes, gums, 58/389, 135/863.
Gouldes, endive, 26/702.
Grave, to dig, bury, 150/45.
Grece, steps, 18/863.
Gree, degree, 121/471.
Greet, grit, 15/405.
Greithe, *v.* prepare, 128/689.
Grene, a gren, a snare, 110/164.
Grete to make great, 52/241; grow great, 97/1025, 149/6.
Grete, to greet, salute, 159/25.
Greves, groves, 49/149.
Greyne, grain or pips, 89/805.
Greythed, prepared; in the original *paratæ*, see Morris's Specimens, 62/35.
Grobbe, to grub, or dig up, 164/6.
Grobbes, grubs, 160/63.
Groissyng, explained by *stridens*, 14/357, perhaps the French *grossir*, gritty, 3/59.
Gross, Lat. a green fig, 126/633.
Grount, ground, bottom, 176/154.
Gurgolions, weevils, 18/485.

Hafte, spear-handle; it is also a rough measure called haft-man; *vide* Ray, 115/311.
Halde, poured, 101/1115.
Hale, to drag, 132/771.
Hale, *v. intrans.* pour, hail, 197/284.
Half, part, side, 37/1002. (So in Sir J. Mandeville, "O griffon is more strong than VIIII lyons such as been of this half.")
Half, side, every half, on all sides, 154/144.
Halvendele, half-part, 41/1123.
Happe, chance, 86/710.
Happe, Fr. fasten, 68/214.
Haras, Lat. stables, pigsties, etc. Here it seems to represent the French *haras*, studs, 134/820.
Hardes, shells, husks, 169/135.
Hardneese, Lat. *duramenta*, the hard wood of vines, 69/240.
Harme, *vide* after, 21/472.
Haunt, practise, follow, O. Fr. *hanter*, 61/196.
"He" is used in a peculiar manner, like the Greek τις, 105/52.
Hede, grow to head, 192/156.
Heedles, headless, 32/881.
Heer, here, or rather *higher*, "supra hæc podia," 39/1058.
Heer, hair, 193/180.
Hegge, hedge, 59/438.
Helde, A.S. to pour, 41/1132.
Heldes, slopes, 165/22.
Hele, heal, 22/597.
Hele, healthy, hale, 3/46.
Heled, covered, 20/524.
Helthes, health, 12/301.
Hent, to catch or throw, 42/1151.
Hente or hende, kind, gracious, 186/216.
Her, their, 11/291, etc.
Herde, *adj.* hard, 41/1122.
Herde, *sub.* tow, 41/1122.
Her on, here on, 317/383.
Here oon, their own, 211/107.
Herre, higher, 77/445.
Hervest, autumn, 10/260, 113/252, etc.
Hery, hairy, 78/874.
Hete, promise, 94/936.
Heven, *intrans.* to rise, 181/75.
Hewe, hue, colour, 99/1063.
Hie, hasten, 99/1076, 208/32.
Hie, high, 209/58.
Hinge, hang, 148/223.
Hocked, hooked, 42/1154.
Hockes, caterpillars, 32/882.
Hode, cover as with a hood, 86/717.
Hokes, hooks, bills, 42/1159.
Hoketh, curved into a hook, 111/202.
Holgh, hollow, 70/757.
Holsum, wholesome, 2/34.

Home, closely, thoroughly, 147/192.
Honge, hang, 114/285.
Hoote, hotly, quickly, 179/7.
Hopre, seed basket, or measure, 186/43.
Hoole, whole, wholesome, sound, 42/77.
Horne, hoof, 133/795.
Howe, to hew down, 151/60.
Huls, to reap hastily, *cum strepitu metere*, 160/56.
Husbonde, husbandman, 40/1080, 43/1168, 75/593.
Hutte, clod, 60/188.

Iche, each, 114/291.
Idus, Lat. 13th or 15th day of Roman months reckoned from the Nones, 45/29.
Iliche, equality, 7/167.
Immyn, free from, 157/237.
Implayne, plaster, 18/479.
Incrementacion, means of increase, 217/294.
Indistinctly, without distinction, 98/1064.
Inflacioun, flatulence, 205/504.
Insolent, Lat. unaccustomed, 209/57.
Instinct, instigated, 167/104.
Intort, towards, 56/344.
Inwith, within, 101/1133.

Jape, trick, deceit, 100/1104.
Joyfulliche, joyfully, 215/222.

Kades, Lat. *cadus*, casks, 199/331.
Kalendes, Lat. the first day of the Roman month, 62/29.
Kake, cake, 214/203.
Kark, to care, 129/701.
Katrefoil, i.e. *quatrefeuille*, having four leaves, 191/118.
Kepe, *sub.* care, taketh keep, cavete, 58/406, 104/6.
Kepe, *v.* to care, "No thing thai kepe," *nil curant*, 216/270.
Kerve, carve, cut, 72/308.
Kirf, cutting, 8/190.
Kirtils, coats, 16/417.
Kitte, kytte, to cut, "to doone to kitte," to have cut, 151/67.
Konne, know, 208/26.
Ky, cow, 166/65.
Kyen, cows, 130/707.
Kynde, kind or nature, 65/123, 163/132, etc.
Kytte, cut, 6/127.

Laak, fault, lack, 136/895.
Laier, *vide* Leir, from A.S. *leger*.
Lamber, lambron, lambs, 145/155.
Langh, long, 38/1033.
Lappe, *v.* to wrap, 57/373.
Lappe, lop, loppings, 150/45.
Laste, late, 184/155, etc.
Latte, late, 198/303.
Lattest, latest, last, 14/364.
Latteth, makes late, 192/133.
Leche, leach, doctor, 211/129.
Lede, cover with lead, 177/175.
Lede, to lade or load; overlede, oppress, 182/101.
Leef, desirable, 129/687.
Leendes, loins, 129/683.
Lefte, dear, beloved, 142/55.
Legge, to lay, 22/583.
Leide, laid, 129/683.
Leir, lair, place. So Barnaby Goodge (p. 17, B.), says "a good Husbond must consider what crop is best for every layer," 3/52.
Lemes, lights, *vide* Way's Notes, Prompt. Parv., 157/229.
Lene, make lean, macerate, 90/810.
Lene, leanness, 140/14.
Lere, learn, 3/45.
Lerned, taught, 144/128.
Lese, lose, destroy, 35/948, 87/737.
Lese, to select, gather, 165/48.

Leson, loosen, 71/292.
Lest, lost, 77/462.
Lesure, injury, 87/733, 134/825.
Lete make, let make, to have made, 12/310.
Lethe, mitigate, regulate, adjust, 159/45.
Lette, hinder, 45/39.
Leve, to grow to leaf, 71/276.
Leve, A.S. to remain, 176/150.
Lever, preferable, rather, more desirable, 38/1046.
Levy, leafy, 121/486.
Leys, fallows, novales, see Tusser on January, "Ley lands or lease, Break up if you please," 46/76.
Leyt, lightning, 70/272.
Lief, leave, 72/315.
Lift, left, 130/718.
Lifte, lively, 133/793.
Ligge, lie, 109/157.
Like, likely, 156/199.
Like, mild, 45/32.
Liking, aspect, favour, 3/46.
Likyng, pleasing thing, dainty, 132/699.
List, listen, attend, 159/145.
Lite, little, 26/689, 31/836.
Lithe, kind, 61/8.
Loith, for *leith*, lays it down, 25/661.
Loken, locked, 163/153.
Loment, Lat. a mash, a mess, 200/366.
Lomes or Loomes, A.S. vessels, 203/447, 204/478.
Lone, lane, passage, 177/170.
Longe, owing to, "On the soil it is longe," *i.e.* it is owing to the soil, 61/194.
Longe-woo, lung-woe, consumption, 3/50.
Longes, lungs, 3/49.
Longeth, belongeth, 189/66.
Longh, rich, *vide* lough, 50/184.
Lorne, lost, 25/663.
Loues, loaves, cakes, 205/522.
Lough, low, 72/304.
Loure, to look dull, or ill, 144/121.
Louting, bending, bowing, 209/62.
Luke, lukewarm, tepid, 131/731.
Luys, lice, 23/608.
Lyarde, grey-coloured horse, 133/806.
Lygge, to lie, *vide* Ligge.
Lymous, Lat. muddy, 176/139.
Lyne, flax, 208/28.
Lynyment, Lat. a substance to smear casks with, 202/440.
Lysardes, lizards, 39/1056.
Lyst, *imp.* the lyste, you please, 17/466, etc.

Maath, maketh, 120/457.
Magma, Lat. dregs, Crocomagma, dregs of saffron, 199/351.
Magre, Fr. *malgre*, in spite of, mauger, 206/551.
Make, timber, 59/437.
Mal, *v.* to hammer, 44/17, 122/517.
Male, apple, 216/246, etc.
Malthes, cements, stuccos, Lat. 41/115.
Malves, mallows, 147/206.
Margh, marrow, 21/479.
Mary, marrow, 195/236.
Mascul, male, 201/412.
Mater, matter, material, 208/49.
Matier, Lat. *materia*, wood, 70/282.
Mayne, vigour, main, 36/870.
Me. This is not always the personal pronoun, but seems to be an abbreviation of "men," and corresponds to the French *on*. Thus, in the first stanza, "What mon me moost enforme," what man is to be instructed, or one has to inform, and so on. See Stratmann's Dict. voce *man*.
Meath, mead, 54/282, 90/812.
Meddel, to mix, 118/413.
Mede, meadow, 208/29.

Medessyng, medicine, 29/799.
Medietee, half, 208/34.
Medled, mixed, 27/596.
Meene, less, minor, 64/81.
Meete, sufficient quantity, 199/336.
Melch, *adj.* full of milk, 99/1080.
Mele, apple, and any tree bearing fruit of that kind, *vide* Barnaby Googe, 91/838, etc.
Mele, tablemele, bed by bed, tabulatim, 66/148. See Stratmann's Dict. in voce *mèl.*
Melincoly, ill-temper, 136/883.
Melle, to mix, 92/868.
Mene, middle, intermediate, 4/79.
Mene, centre, Fr. *moyen*, 75/389.
Menge, *or* mynge, mix, 13/350.
Merge, Lat. a layer, 208/34.
Mervaille, Fr. marvellous, like wonder, 143/96.
Messe, moss, 86/708.
Mete, meat, 86/708.
Mete, measure, 75/406.
Mete, *adj.* moderate, 49/158,
Metrete, *Μετρητης*, a measure of about twelve gallons, 203/443.
Mette, measure, 86/708.
Mewe, aviary, 20/526, 125/583.
Mirt, myrtle, 21/568.
Mo, moo, more, 42/1152, etc.
Molde, moldewarp, mole, 34/924, 108/130.
Molsh, soft, 49/141.
Molton, melted, liquid, 54/281.
Mon, man, 1/2.
Mone, month, 45/29.
Moost, must, 78/849.
Morter, Lat. *mortarium*, a hole in the ground, like a mortar, 108/116.
Mose, to cover with moss, 74/365.
Mougthes, moths, 138/945.
Mousdon, dun-coloured, like a mouse, 133/812.
Moushered, dun-haired, 136/893.
Munyte, Lat. fortified, 157/223.
Must, new wine, *passim.*
Musty, made with must or leaven, 205/525.
Myddyng, dunghill, 28/750.
Myght, strength, 39/1068.
Mylde, millet, 21/556.
Mylge, dig round, molsh, 74/365.
Myliair, Lat. a vessel with pipes for supplying a bath, 40/1093.
Myne, mineral, 14/374.
Myne, dig, as in undermine, 73/34.
Mynge, mix, 13/350.
Mynt, money, 99/1069.
Myres, *gen.* of mire, miry, marshy, 35/966.
Myrous, wonderful, 117/858.
Myscheve, fare ill, 23/614.
Myslike, displease, 122/515.
Myttens, gloves, mittens, 43/1167.
Myxe, a damson, 98/1032.

Nal, nail, 51/199.
Namely, especially, 12/306.
Nare, are not, 136/888.
Nasse, was not, 136/886.
Nath, hath not, 7/176.
Neet, bull, 19/506.
Nelde, needle, 22/662.
Ner, nor or never, 135/860.
Nere, never, 154/154.
Neute, newt, eft, 92/865.
Nolde, would not, 186/215.
Nones, fifth or seventh day of Roman month, reckoned from the Calends, 98/131.
Noothing, nothing, "for noothing," on no account, 217/275.
Norice, nurse, 24/646.
Nors, nurse, 105/35.
Nought, useless (nought atte al, altogether worthless), 205/507, etc.
Nowe, no, *nullus*, 144/155.
Nowe and nowe, immediately, 178/189.
Noyous, noisome, annoying, 18/485. So Spenser, F. Q. 1, 11, 50, "noyous night."

Nygh, to approach, 9/226.
Nyghtertale, night-time, 33/910. So in Chaucer's Prologue to C. T. v. 97.
Nyl, will not, 53/246.
Nys, is not, 77/450, 204/488.

Object, *part.* placed in the way, 131/743, 211/124.
Observed, kept, preserved, 116/332.
Obumbre, Lat. shade, 207/13.
Occasion, Lat. harrowing, 207/11.
Offed, divided into cakes, *offas*, 26/687.
Olde, old age, waning, eld, 59/439.
Olofte, above, 40/1080.
Ones, once, 25/672.
Ones, "atte ones," at one time, 180/22.
Onys, once, 98/1033.
Oo, one, or 1½ *sesquipedalibus*, 96/994.
Oon, one, 18/469, 116/833.
Oone, oven, 215/235.
Or, ere, before, 6/138.
Or, o'er, *i.e.* over, 38/1032.
Or long, overlong, 14/59. So in Hampole's *Pricke of Conscience*.
Ose, ooze, 175/116.
Oste, oven, kiln for malt, 17/457.
Other, otherwise, else, 26/687.
Other, outher, or, else, 26/687, 110/174.
Otherwhiles, time after time, occasionally, year after year, 166/65.
Ough, ought, anything, 3/53.
Oures, hours, 168/131.
Outetake, except, 28/758.
Oute-trie, to choose out, 216/257.
Outher, either, 36/976.
Outseeth, project, or look outwards, 135/868.
Outtrie, choose out, 19/514.
Outwith, without, beyond, 12/317.
Over-colde, excessive cold, 189/54.
Overflame, spread over, 42/1139.
Overheled, covered over, 44/15.
Overward, across, 66/139.
Overwhelve, overwhelm, as in Chaucer, 29/781.
Overwrie, cover over, 113/260.
Owe, ought, 149/5. *Vide* Corrigenda.
Owen, own, *suus*, 25/674.

Palmy, made of palm-leaves, 203/458.
Pane, pain, malady, 52/879.
Parcel, a part, 189/73.
Parget, plaster of a wall, 16/414.
Partie, part, a partie, partly, 197/278.
Parties, parts, 27/725.
Pastyne, Lat. well-prepared ground, 210/86.
Pastynyng, Lat. preparing ground for vines, 29/772.
Pedifeet, tendrils, little feet, 117/375.
Pere, *intrans.* to pour, 195/243.
Peire, Lat. perish, 95/964.
Peire, impair, 180/28.
Pellet, a pelliole or skin, 154/144.
Penne, pen, pipe, 177/186.
Pensel, pencil, or brush, 146/165.
Perflable, Lat. pervious to the wind, 37/1002.
Pese, pea, 181/64.
Peson, peas, 106/68.
Petifet, Lat. *pediculos*, small stalks, 93/902.
Picke, pitch, 186/194.
Picoys, pickaxe, 42/1153.
Pik, pitch, 157/223.
Pike, 186/194.
Piles, pillars, 40/1089.
Pilgramage, pilgrimage, 198/305.
Pipe, large cask, 57/382.
Pipes, veins, 58/389.
Piste, spikenard, 201/411.

Pitch, to place, 127/657.
Pitche, cover with pitche, 89/795.
Pitchelonges, headlong, 150/42.
Plage, Lat. wound, 75/396.
Pleche, plash, interlace, 73/330. See Shakespear, *Much Ado*, "thick pleached."
Plie, fold, spread, apply, 55/306.
P'ymnent occurs in 9/231, and 11/278. It is evidently an abbreviation, intended perhaps for *prominent*, used substantively for a president, or foreman. In each case it is the same word in the original, viz. *præsul*.
Poche, bag, 118/408.
Pointe, *v.* to prick, 208/46.
Poire, poor, 61/3.
Pole, pool, 17/442.
Pomly, spotted, dapple (as in Chaucer, Prologue to C. T., 616), 133/809.
Ponne, pan, 33/909.
Portulake, Lat. *purculain*, 23/603, 196/246.
Pose, lay down, assert, 11/285.
Potage-ware, potherbs, 160/57.
Potte, a hole, Lat. *puteus*, 17/564.
Poury, Fr. *pourri*, corrupt, 3/39.
Povert, poverty, 296/270.
Powder-caste, covered with dust or fine earth, *pulveratæ*, 164/12.
Prasocoride, Gk. a kind of moth, 35/953.
Priekker, rider, 135/845.
Prike, to race, ride, 135/858.
Prike, search for, select, 182/87.
Procuracion, Lat. care, attention, 214/193.
Profluent, Lat. spreading, 209/56.
Prophaned, revealed, made public, 31/147.
Propurtee, property, peculiarity, 165/23.
Provyne, to prepare the vine, 208/31.
Prow, profit, advantage, 98/1040.
Pryk, a pointed instrument, a skewer, 11/214.
Pugges, refuse of corn (see Halliwell), 99/1079.
Pulle, *v.* to stagnate with pools, 4/89.
Pulles, pools, 38/1032.
Punyk, Carthaginian, *punicum malum*, pomegranate, 95/951.
Pure, pour, 55/327.
Pusk, Lat. *posca*, wine and vinegar, 121/526.
Putacioun, Lat. pruning, 209/50.
Puttes, pots, 53/253.
Pyjon, pigeon, 184/145.
Pynne, pain, injury, 37/1006.
Pypyned, furnished with pips, 63/72.

Quenche, *ob. int.* to be extinguished, 175/127.
Querne, mill, 31/831.
Quod, said, 76/420.
Quysht, quist, couscot, Stratmann's Dictionary, "avis palustris," 28/758.
Quyte, *v.* quit, acquit, requite, 8/185.

Radish, root, 32/876.
Raf, rubbish, 31/827.
Rain-beronne, overrun by rain, 160/73.
Ramal, old wood, 71/292. Lat. *rami inutiles*. See Halliwell, under Ramel-wood.
Rancoure, rancidity, 191/111.
Rapte, Lat. seized, crushed, 216/273.
Rathe, early, to rathe, too soon; rathest, soonest, 45/39, 67/151.
Rather thenne, sooner than, 173/66.
Raught, reached, developed, stretched, A.S. *ræcan*, 129/682.
Raves or rabes, rapes, 110/170.
Rebel, rebellious, 131/756.

Reclude, shut, 39/1069, 218/1308.
Rede, to advise, 57/370, 192/159.
Redes, ridges, 112/219, 209/73.
Reke, rush, hasten, 8/194.
Relent, loosened, 137/908.
Remewe, remove, 29/777, 54/280.
Rene, rank, row, reign, domain, *rêne*, Dr. Stratmann takes to be O.Dutch *rên* (*reen*), Dan. Swed. *rên* (*reen*), O.Fr. *rein* f., M. H. Germ. *rein* m. limes, which in Yorkshire is *rain*, 3/61, 7/159. So in Spenser, F. Q. 6, 2, 9, "In all this forest and wild woody raine."
Repe, a handful or sheaf, 163/135.
Repercusse, Lat. reflected, driven back, 208/23.
Repman, reaper, 158/18.
Repose, put back, 56/334.
Repreve, reproof, 49/151. The old reading was "reprobatur." Gesner's "approbatur."
Restyf, restive, stiff, 181/73.
Revire, revive, *revivere*, 53/259.
Rewe, row, turn, 71/290.
Rewe, have pity, rue, 137/911.
Reyne, rain, 77/442.
Rigges, ridges, 42/1151.
Right by, close by, near, 105/27.
Risshy, rushy, made of rushes, 204/494.
Robell, rubble, 13/340.
Rody, ruddy, red, 159/25.
Roggy, rough, rugged, 180/86.
Rong, rank, uliginous, 50/169.
Rope, reaped, 183/127.
Rote, rot, 28/750.
Route of, Fr. drive off in confusion, mix all of a heap, 201/397.
Rovyng, roofing, 15/383.
Rowe, rough, 150/31.
Rowe, to cut in rows, 160/54.
Rowne, scream, or roar like the wind, 154/156.
Rucul, the animal, cankerworm, 32/355.
Rucul, the plant, rocket, 31/353.
Ruge, Lat. wrinkle, 20/704.
Rule, line, row, 123/156.
Runcle, wrinkled, 129/679.
Russet, brown, 31/830.
Ryving, splitting, 212/140.
Ryvullynge, wrinkling, 196/258.

Sadd, *v.* to sadden, 14/378.
Sadde, firm, steady, 8/193.
Saluting, bowing, bending, *vide* Louting, 209/62.
Saly, sallow, willow, 212/139.
Sape, Lat. a kind of new wine, 102/1143.
Sarce, to strain, 202/414.
Sation, Lat. sowing, 207/9.
Saufly, safely, 18/483.
Saunez, Fr. *sans*, without, 101/1122.
Save, safe, 36/973.
Save of, safe from, 36/982.
Savelles, Fr. *sable*, sands, 14/353.
Saver, smell, 28/751.
Sayne, seyne, say, 35/346-7.
Scalls, scab, 154/138.
Scars, sparingly, 124/557.
Scathe, detriment, harm, 40/1106, 41/1115.
Sclak (qu. slack), loose, crumbling, 173/72.
Scobes, Lat. sawdust, 93/901.
Scole, school, discipline, 44/14.
Scopes, Lat. bundles, 84/643.
Score, to shear, to cut, 153/119.
Scorf, scurf, dandruff, 154/138.
Scorne, cutting, sharpness, 151/50, 154/147.
Scrapes, scrapers, 125/849.
Scriple, scruple, 59/418.
Scyment, cement, 156/190.
Sede, to plant, 151/71.
Sedness, saving, 10/256.
Seeforth, seaweed, 116/335.
Seek, sick, 211/110.
Seekle, sickly, 107/99.
Sek or seek, sick, 25/665, 94/939.

Seetes, seats, 49/1094.
Seeth, boil, seethe, 17/445, 10/256.
Segges, sedges, 17/445, 20/525.
Sekirly, surely, 31/843.
Sekkul, sickly, 192/139.
Sekur, secure, confident, 175/115, 216/267.
Selde or seelde, seldom, 94/922.
Sely, simple, weak, harmless, 167/190.
Semycicle, half, 169/148.
Sene, look, examine, 16/410.
Senowy, sinewy, 129/684.
Senvey, mustard, 169/149.
Seriol, Lat. a small cask, 118/393.
Sete, suitable, pleasant, sweet, 59/420, 120/457.
Seth, since, 27/735.
Sevum, Lat. tallow, 42/1141.
Sewe, follow, pursue, 21/474, 146/181.
Sewe, pursuit, 146/184.
Sextar, Lat. *sextarius*, a pint, 58/146.
Shalkes, chalk, 94/927.
Share, sharp, rough, A.S. *scearp*, 137/900.
Sharnebodde, sharnbug, beetle, 173/60. Mr. Furnivall refers me to the E.E.T.S. ed. of *Ayenbite of Inwyt*, p. 61, "þet byeþ þe ssarnboddes þet beuleþ (=fly from) þe floures, and louieþ þet dong." Also Gower's "Like to the sharnebudes kynde." In the Eastern Counties *boud*= weevil; *boud*, Lat. *malo*.
Shent, ruined, 8/189.
Shog, to shake, 198/322.
Shor, short, soon, 182/88.
Side or syde, wide, vast, 98/1052.
Sie, sink, descend, 198/326.
Sith, A.S. afterwards, 111/215.
Sithe, times, 141/28.
Skeppes, baskets, 190/105.
Skewed, piebald, variegated, skewbald, spotted, 26/703.
Slade, valley, 177/176.
Slake, to pour gently, 145/146; to slacken, fall off, retire, 158/56.
Sle, slay, 34/912.
Sleek, a kind of earth like coal, *carbunculus* 49/152.
Slen, to slay, 77/453.
Slevying, a slip of a vine or cutting, 67/162, 185/164.
Sloute, to slit, perhaps *slonte*, 104/12.
Slygh, ingenious, 145/162. So in Chaucer's *Troilus*.
Slyke, sleek, 26/689.
Smeke, smoke, 160/69.
Smert, smart, 35/940.
Smolder, *sub.* smoke, 34/929.
Smyke, smoke, 200/362.
Smylle, smell, 183/122.
Snewe, to snow, to scatter, 199/332.
So so after *but*, indifferently, 217/294.
Soconde, assistance, 37/1019.
Socoure, afford succour, 36/978.
Solar, Lat. *solarium*, summer apartment, 155/176.
Sonder, separate, 94/145.
Soote, A.S. sweet, 77/446, 192/147.
Soote, sooty, black, 94/942.
Sore, severely ("to sore," too decidedly, 211/122), 106/74.
Sough, sewer, "locus pro fimo boum," 19/515.
Souke, suck, 187/16.
Sowne, sound, 147/194. So in Spenser, F. Q. 1, 41.
Splatte, to press down flat, 48/123.
Splay, display, spread, 23/625, 83/683.
Spende, *v.* to expend, to consume, 99/1069.
Spende, *part.* consumed, used (not sold, *vide* 167/100), 123/540.
Spild, ruined, 118/402.
Spille, failure, 170/164.
Spir, sprout, 98/1034.
Spreyne, sprinkle, 192/161.

Spring, spryng, sprinkle, scatter, spread in 32/876, "springeth their radishes," *i.e.* sprinkle their root, 24/649, etc.
Sprongen, risen, 74/377.
Spronke, shoot, sprout, 211/116.
Squorges, scourges, *flagella*, vine cuttings, 65/113.
Stale, stalk, plant, 194/194.
Stalons, stallion-horses, 132/779.
Stalons, bulbs, onions, 113/267, 126/635.
Stampe, to bruise or press down in any way, 218/305.
Stanche, closely, staunchly, 208/315.
Stanry, stony, probably an error in the MS., 86/701.
Staphisagre, *staphis agria*, wild vine, 32/596.
Stede, a place, 8/204, 141/40.
Steine, stone, jar, amphora, 102/1165.
Steke, to stick, to be crowded, 150/32.
Stele, stalk, but *vide* Stile, 209/77.
Stene or stone, Lat. *amphora*, about nine gallons, 116/334.
Stept, steeped, 214/217.
Stere, to stir, 158/12.
Stering, stirring, loose, said of ground, 49/141; active, said of mules, 135/852.
Sterve, die, Ger. *sterben*, 34/931.
Stewe, fishpond, 28/769.
Steyth, steady, 136/892. See *stith* in Stratmann's Dict.
Stile, wood, 88/770.
Stocke, to root up, 150/46, 182/92.
Stonde, Lat. *cupa*, a cask, 39/1051.
Stont, stop, make to stand, 102/1167.
Stonte, an hour, Ger. *stunde*, 186/207.
Stortes, stalks, 118/387, 206/528.
Stounde, a short time, Ger. *stunde*, 180/44.
Straite, straightway, immediately, 153/121.
Strange, strong, 4/88.
Stre, straw, 6/146.
Streine, narrow, strait, 177/181.
Streite, narrow, 41/1100.
Strength, *v.* strengthen, 69/239.
Streve, shave, cut, also strew, 101/1127, 190/103.
Streyne, to stretch, 70/268.
Strom, stream, 210/105.
Stry, strie, to strew, to scatter, 61/10, 128/670.
Stulpes, posts, 39/105.
Stynte, forbear, 1/7.
Subact, Lat. subdued, well-worked, 214/216.
Sue, sewe, follow, pursue, 125/585.
Succedent, a follower, 101/1125.
Sumdele, some portion, somewhat, 10/252.
Summyter, summit, top, 111/240.
Sure of, safe from, 197/294.
Surtray, Fr. to strain, 100/1097.
Surtreet, Fr. to withdraw, subtract, 120/460.
Swage, assuage, 136/883.
Swelle, to make to swell, 110/188.
Swerde, sword, 153/119.
Swerde, sward, 3/58.
Sweete, sweat, 18/486, 59/424.
Swete, level, 49/146.
Swethed, swathed, bound, 149/19.
Swon, swineherd, 100/1086.
Swynke, labour, 202/439.
Syde, vast, 129/679.
Syngrene, houseleek, 31/853.
Synk, Fr. five, *vide* side-note, 84/656.
Sysame, sesame, a kind of wheat, 181/67.

Table-mele, in beds, bed by bed, *tabulatim*, 66/148.
Tables, garden beds, 30/810.
Tabulette, small tablets, 156/195.

Take, lay hold as a plant does, 49/153.
Tale, account, number, 194/193.
Talgh, tallow, 17/444.
Talions, Lat. *talea*, truncheons, 96/991.
Talpes, Lat. moles, 24/931.
Targe, delay, 99/1075.
Targyng, tarrying, delay, 86/720.
Te, 34/934. In the MS. *te* seems an error for *the*, and so I have printed it.
Teetc, Lat. covered. "Do be tecte," make to be covered, 155/180.
Tempur, temperate, 52/534.
Tende, tendency, 166/60.
Tendron, Fr. young shoot, tendril, 88/774.
Tened, excited, A.S. *téon*, 130/725.
Tenes, stalks, tendrils, 118/395.
Tente, heed, attention, 196/273.
Tere, to tear, 102/1150.
Tere, to draw, 102/1152.
Teye, tie, 131/752.
Thair, there, or where, 68/191, etc.
That, "the," as in Chaucer, "that oon," and in next line, "that other," 74/359, etc.
Thater, the water, 4/94.
The or thee, succeed, prosper, 97/1012, 111/216.
Thenne, thence, 218/325.
There, Thereas, where, *e.g.* "there as thowe thou casteth dwell," where you resolve to live, 9/234.
Thereto, in addition, besides (but in 46/67, so much, *catenus*), 199/339.
Thewes, tempers, 129/695.
Theye, the eye, 161/87.
Thilles, shafts of a cart, 159/38.
Thinke, I think fit, 197/275.
Thitherwarde, witherward, in the direction in which, 146/177.
Thitherwarde, in that direction, 146/180.
Tho, Thoo, then, 65/109.
Thonke, to thank, 159/26.
Thoo, those, 68/194.
Thorgh, through, (go) through, 151/36,
Thorle or Thurle, bore, perforate, A.S. *thirlian*, 34/925, 111/198.
Thoste, A.S. dung, 39/1077, 116/348.
Threste, thrust, 190/86.
Thriddendele, a third part, 14/478.
Thrie, thrice, 35/959, 179/2.
Thrive do, make thrive, 190/89.
Throut, Theroute, thereout, outside, 33/896, 117/399.
Thyne, thin, 200/382.
Tibertine, brought from Tibur, or Tivoli, 14/378.
Til, to; intil, into, 152/80, 163/138.
Tile, till, 81/567.
Tilette, small tile, cube, or tessera, 156/195.
Tobreke, break to pieces, 159/16.
Tobrent, burnt up, 104/21.
Tofore, before, 152/88.
Togoon, *v.* go to, *adire*, 27/740.
To grounde, ground to pieces, 42/1135.
Togh, *i.e.* tough, stalk, or tow, 116/342.
Tole, tool, 43/1164.
To-shake, shake to pieces, 52/240, 100/1095.
To, too, *e.g.* to sore, too sore, too decidedly, 152/88.
To take, take to pieces, 4/74.
Toon, toes, 188/49.
Tort, towards, 107/82.
Toshake, shake well, 163/128.
Towe, instrument, 159/36.
Travaille, Fr. to work, 201/403.
Tre, three, 142/72.
Tree, wood; rule of tree, wooden rule or frame 153/120.
Treen, *adj.* made of trees, 137/916. So Spenser, F. Q. 2, 39.
Trete of, use, dispose of, 87/741.

Triclyne, Lat. *triclinium*, dining-room, 15/391.
Trie, choose, see Try.
Triste, trust, 69/224.
Trouble, *adj.* Fr. dark, muddy, disturbed, 201/400.
Trowe, believe, trust, 76/425.
Trowe, trough, 137/916.
Trowes, troughs, 127/164.
Trumpes, trumpets, tubes, 177/179.
Trunke, to truncate, 107/86.
Try, Fr. to select, pull out, 130/707.
Trymenstre, three-monthly, 61/10.
Tway, two, 169/161.
Tweyne, two, 25/672.
Twie, twice, 35/959.
Two, twice, 214/208.
Twyble, axe, 42/1153.
Twye, twice, 35/957.
Twyk, tweak, pull, 150/26.
Tymber, *v.* to build with wood, 13/335.
Tynnen, made of tin, 152/99.

Uch, each, 17/450.
Uchoon, each one, 51/191.
Umbe, around, 162/106.
Umbigoon, surrounded, 51/197.
Umber, Lat. *umbra*, shade, 198/329.
Umbidelve, dig round, 115/327.
Umbiyonge, surround, 51/214.
Umbiwette, watered all round, 85/675.
Umbywende, go round, 214/221.
Umvironne, surrounded, 13/824, 119/437.
Unces, ounces, 102/1158.
Uncomber, cease to cumber, 154/51.
Unconnyngly, unskilfully, 107/87.
Understande, persuaded or minded, 68/196.
Undrie, become wet, 189/70.
Undure, unhard, *i.e.* soft, crumbled, 103/1174.
Uned, made one, 128/680.
Uneled, unbaked, A.S. *ælan*, 174/103.
Unese, to make uneasy, 81/562.
Uneven, *v.* to make rough, 182/100.
Unleest, not least, 18/487.
Unlene, unlean, *i.e.* fat. 5/96.
Unneth, scarcely, 97/1004, etc.
Unolde, young, 104/9.
Unrest, *v. trans.* disturb, 211/130.
Unresteth, disturbs, 155/114.
Unscomed, unscummed, 168/128.
Unthryue, thrive not, 122/507.
Until, unto, 101/1138.
Unwynk, open, 105/25.
Upon, *adv.* up; as closed upon, closed up (compare 37/996), 193/353.
Upsette, raise up, 15/395.
Upshette, shot up, thrown up, 36/993.
Upsodowne, upside down, 11/275.
Ure, *sub.* use, custom, 9/215.
Ure, *v.* to be accustomed, 91/845.
Usyng, wearing, 184/223.
Utter, out, 126/614.
Utter, outwards. "Utter trie," choose out, 54/294.
Utter, out, away; utterdoon, removed, taken away, 144/120.

Vaporositee, Lat. vapour, occurs on a fragment of a torn leaf at the end of the book.
Veer, the spring, 113/251, etc.
Verrey, true, 179/91.
Vessel, to put into a vessel, to pot, 200/362.
Vives, wives, 25/669.
Voide, depart, 13/936.
Voide, remove, clear, 88/762.
Voide, superfluous, 150/23.
Vulturnus, Lat. N.E. wind, 6/144.

Wag, to shake, 209/68.
Wage, payment, produce, 143/82.
Wake, watch, 44/11.
Wanteth, faileth, 88/752.
War, beware of, 9/213.
Ware, lot, collection, 28/756.

Wary, to curse, A.S. *werigan*, 20/530.
Way, Ger. *Weg*, away, 70/278.
Wede, garment, 31/330.
Weethe, to twist, bind, 128/676.
Wegge, wedge, 53/246.
Weiveth, waives, forbears, 135/846, 20/530.
Wellesay, *interj.* alas! well a day! 167/91.
Welner, well near, wellnigh, 52/235.
Wem, spot, stain, 176/157.
Wende, let it go, or be moved, 149/13.
Wending, end of furrow, 44/12; id quod, went, 44/20, 47/26. See a most interesting note in Horne Tooke's *Diversions of Purley*, vol. ii. p. 374, Taylor's ed.
Wende, weened, thought, 148/219.
Wene, deem, ween, 11/280.
Went, space dug, 47/96.
Wermode, wormwood, 199/334.
Werne, warn, forbid, 170/20.
Wers, worse, 190/101.
Weeshe, wash, dirty water, 40/1105.
Wexed, *i.e.* waxed, grown, enlarged, 67/181.
While, *sub.* time, 164/3, 201/389.
Wick, evil, wickedness, 36/973.
Wide, to widen, set apart, 94/925.
Wimble, a gimlet, 190/85.
Winche, tank, 16/426, 93/894.
Wirche, to work, as in Chaucer, 10/259.
Wist, direct, bend, 40/1103.
Wist, known, *scitum*, 40/1104.
Wite, defend, 20/546.
Wite, know, 31/842.
With, therewith, *passim*, 90/829.
With, therewith, at same time, 149/10, etc.; with and with, every now and then, 26/711, 193/175.
Withi, withy, willow, 75/412.
Withouten, without, 29/789.
Wlonk, rich, A.S. *wlon*, 77/449. See Stratmann's Dict. 571.
Wode, Woode, mad, 6/133.
Wombe, stomach, 3/53.
Wonde, wand, a stick, 123/537.
Wonder, *adj.* See Wounder.
Wonder, *adv.* 14/378.
Wones, apartments, 13/331.
Wonte, *v. neut.* want, fail, 26/700.
Wonte, *sub.* deficiency, 26/701.
Worching, working, 15/398.
Worlde (see Note on 114/294), a vast quantity, a world, 159/28; also time, an age, 193/162, 204/482.
Wortes, cabbage, 35/952.
Wough or Wowe, wall, 29/785.
Wounder, wonderful, 143/99.
Wride, spread abroad, A.S. *wridan*, to flourish, 51/207.
Wrie, to cover, 6/143.
Wrie, to twist or bend the root of awry, 13/347.
Writhe, bend, 65/118.
Wronge, crooked, twisted, awry, oblique, 115/312.
Wrote, rot, 30/803.
Wrote, collect, heap, 77/445
Wrynge, press, 19/495, 118/408.
Wylous, willows, 92/878.
Wynche, tank, 16/426.
Wyne-tree, vine, 151/57.
Wynne, *sub.* gain, 61/5.
Wynne, *v.* to gain, 61/4.
Wynne, to gain one's way, 142/75.
Wyse, lead, 47/708.

Yates, gates, 35/964.
Ye, yea, 7/161.
Yeme, to care, to attend, 163/154.
Ydroken, error of MS. for ydronken, see Note.
Yerde, twig or rod, *virga*, 125/596.
Yerdes, twigs, *virgas*, 194/212.
Yespon, a double handful, Scotticè Gowpen, 220/15. Ray calls it an Essex word.

Yette, yet, 142/57.
Yeve, give, 24/644.
Yfere, together, 13/320, 72/319.
Yford, intended. For yfonde, intended for, 94/940.
Yfretted, decked out, furnished. A.S. *frætan*, 130/705. See Morris's Alliterative Poems, p. 339.
Ygone, gone; umbygone about, surrounded, 29/788.
Yhed, hidden, 121/487.
Yheped, heaped up, 219/334.
Yliche, alike, 94/940.
Ymmote, Lat. *immoveas*, apply, 108/109.
Ymne, hymn, 163/148.
Ympe, plant, 66/142.
Yo, A.S. clay, plaster, 15/402.
Yole, pour, 16/431.
Yolgh, yellow, 22/579.
Yonge, *subj.* let go, 127/641.
Yorne, often, 17/447.
Yqueinte, quenched, 175/111.
Yre, iron, 153/121.
Yre, rage, 106/54, 153/123.
Yronles, without iron tools, 85/685.
Ysels, ashes, 177/185.
Yshrad, shredded, cleared of the husks, 169/139.
Yshogged, shaken, 198/322.
Yspronge, sprinkled, 33/907.
Ythied, having its thigh, 69/226.
Ytilde, tilted, set (a trap), 110/164.
Ywesh, washed, 28/762.
Ywrie, covered, 33/895, 128/167.

RYME INDEX.

Rymes apparently not identical, or not authorised by grammarians' rules, are marked with a star (*).

-a

Comminia, *prop. n.*
  Pausia, *prop. n.* 77/456
Pausia, *prop. n.*
  Comminia, *prop. n.* 77/458

-aak

blaak, *adj. sing.*
  laak, *obj.* 136/895
  taak, *imper.* 136/894
laak, *obj.*
  blaak, *adj. sing.* 136/892
  taak, *imper.* 136/894
taak, *imper.*
  blaak, *adj. sing.* 136/892
  laak, *obj.* 136/895

-aaste (*see* **-aste**)

haaste, *inf.*
  waste, *inf.* 91/841

-able

able, *a. sing.*
  notable, *a. sing.* 17/460
  profitable, *a. sing.* 14/352, 84/638
  profitable, *adj. pl.* 132/783
  stable, *obl.* 17/457, 132/780
  unable, *a. sing.* 9/222
  unprofitable, *a. pl.* 9/219
  unvariable, *a. sing.* 14/354
able, *a. pl.*
  profitable, *a. sing.* 66/149, 93/900
  table, *obl.* 66/151, 93/898
aboundable, *adj. sing.*
  hable, *adj. sing.* 207/18
  profitable, *adj. sing.* 207/16
dampnable, *a. sing.*
  profitable, *a. sing.* 8/182
hable, *adj. sing.*
  aboundable, *adj. sing.* 207/19
  profitable, *adj. sing.* 207/16
notable, *a. sing.*
  able, *a. sing.* 17/459
  stable, *obl.* 17/457
perflable, *a. sing.*
  profitable, *a. pl.* 37/1004
profitable, *a. sing.*
  able, *a. sing.* 14/355, 84/640
  able, *a. pl.* 66/152, 93/901
  aboundable, *adj. sing.* 207/19
  dampnable, *a. sing.* 8/181
  hable, *adj. sing.* 207/18
  table, *obl.* 66/151, 93/898
  unvariable, *a. sing.* 14/354
profitable, *a. pl.*
  able, *adj. sing.* 132/782
  perflable, *a. sing.* 37/1002
  spectable, *adj. pl.* 128/672
  stable, *obl.* 132/780
spectable, *adj. pl.*
  profitable, *adj. pl.* 128/673
stable, *obl.*
  able, *a. sing.* 17/459, 132/782
  notable, *a. sing.* 17/460
  profitable, *adj. pl.* 132/783
table, *obl.*
  able, *a. pl.* 66/152, 93/901
  profitable, *a. sing.* 66/149, 93/900

unable, *a. sing.*
able, *a. sing.* 9/221
unprofitable, *a. pl.* 9/219
unprofitable, *a. pl.*
able *a. sing.* 9/221
unable, *a. sing.* 9/222
unvariable, *a. sing.*
able, *a. sing.* 14/355
profitable, *a. sing.* 14/352

-ace

Armarace, *obj.*
place, *obl.* 210/83
armorace, *nom.*
place, *obl.* 110/171
difface, *inf.*
place, *obl.* 66/142
space, *obl.* 66/145
place, *obl.*
Armarace, *obj.* 210/84
armorace, *nom.* 110/169
difface, *inf.* 66/144
space, *obl.* 59/440, 66/145
trace, *inf.* 146/183
space, *obl.*
difface, *inf.* 66/144
place, *obl.* 59/441, 66/142
trace, *imper.* 48/118
trace, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 157/234
trace, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
space, *obl.* 157/232
trace, *imper.*
space, *obl.* 48/119
trace, *inf.*
place, *obl.* 146/182

-acle

spiracle, *nom.*
miracle, *nom.* 202/437
miracle, *nom.*
spiracle, *nom.* 202/435

-adde

hadde, *pp.*
sadde, *adj. sing.* 136/891
sadde, *adj. sing.* (A.S. *sæd*)
hadde, *pp.* 136/893

-ade

blade, *obj.*
glade, *inf.* 85/676
spade, *obl.* 85/677
fade, *inf.*
glade, *inf.* 184/153
glade, *a. pl.*
made, *pp.* 73/346
glade, *inf.*
blade, *obj.* 85/674
fade, *inf.* 184/154
made, *pp.* 41/1112, 66/156
slade, *obl.* 66/159
spade, *obl.* 85/677
made, *pp.*
glade, *inf.* 41/1113, 66/158
glade, *a. pl.* 73/344
slade, *obl.* 66/159, 177/176
slade, *obl.*
glade, *inf.* 66/158
made, *pp.* 66/156, 177/178
spade, *obl.*
blade, *obj.* 85/674
glade, *inf.* 85/676

-af (*see* **-affe**)

chaf, *obj.*
raf, *obj.* 31/827
raf, *obj.*
chaf, *obj.* 31/829
saf, *a. pl.*
*graffe, *inf.* 95/948

-affe (*see* **-af**)

graffe, *inf.*
graffe, *obj.* 58/395
*saf, *a. pl.* 95/946
graffe, *obj.*
graffe, *inf.* 58/393

-afte (*see* **-efte**)

berafte, *pp.*
crafte, *obl.* 212/139
crafte, *obl.*
berafte, *pp.* 212/140

crafte, *obj.*
*lefte, *pp.*[1] 75/403
shafte, *obj.* 75/404
shafte, *obj.*
crafte, *obj.* 75/401
*lefte, *pp.*[1] 75/403

age

Avage, *nom. sing.*
age, *obl.* 143/83
wage, *obl.* 143/83
age, *obl.*
Avage, *nom. sing.* 143/80
citriage, *obl.* 147/199
courage, *obl.* 147/202
dotage, *obl.* 91/861, 190/82
gage, *inf.* 204/479
gage, *nom. sing.* 135/862
gage, *imper.* 119/427, 190/79
wage, *obl.* 143/82
age, *obj.*
mariage, *obl.* 105/27
citriage, *obl.*
age, *obl.* 147/201
courage, *obl.* 147/202
courage, *obl.*
citriage, *obl.* 147/199
age, *obl.* 147/201
sage, *adj. pl.* 190/91
dotage, *obl.*
age, *obl.* 91/860, 190/81
gage, *imper.* 190/79
gage, *imper.*
age, *obl.* 119/426, 190/81
dotage, *obl.* 190/82
tillage, *obl.* 8/207
vindage, *obj.* 8/205
gage, *inf.*
age, *obl.* 204/487
gage, *nom. sing.*
age, *obl.* 135/861
gage, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
pilgramage, *obl.* 198/305
vyndage, *nom. sing.* 198/303
mariage, *obl.*
age, *obj.* 105/28
pilgramage, *obl.*
gage, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 198/306
vyndage, *nom. sing.* 198/303
rage, *obl.*
swage, *inf.* 136/883
sage, *adj. pl.*
courage, *obl.* 190/90
swage, *inf.*
rage, *obl.* 136/882
tillage, *obl.*
gage, *imper.* 8/208
vindage, *obj.* 8/205
usage, *obl.*
vindage, *obl.* 6/134
vindage, *obj.*
gage, *imper.* 8/208
tillage, *obl.* 8/207
vindage, *obl.*
usage, *obl.* 6/136
*wages, *obl.* 100/1092
vyndage, *nom. sing.*
gage, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 198/306
pilgramage, *obl.* 198/305
vyndage, *obl.*
*wages, *nom. pl.* 100/1092[2]
wage, *obl.*
age, *obl.* 143/83
Avage, *nom. sing.* 143/80

-ages (*see* **-age**)

wages, *obl.*
*vyndage, *obl.* 100/1091

-ai, -ay (*see* **-aie** and **-ey**)

affray, *obl.*
allay, *inf.* 185/187
array, *obj.* 236/27

[1] Strictly *lefte* should be the perfect tense; *loved* or *left* the perfect participle.

[2] On this ryme, irrespective of the flexion, compare *stenes, elene*, 1750, 1776; *seche, leches*, 1550; *confessours, socour*, 1842; *jornées, seise*, 220, etc., in the *Kindheit Jesu*, from MS. Laud, 108, in Dr. Horstmann's *Altenglische Legenden*, 1875, p. xliii.

May, *obl.* 185/184
splay, *inf.* 23/625
allay, *inf.*
affray, *obl.* 185/186
May, *obl.* 185/184
alway, *adv.*
haliday, *obj.* 7/176
May, *obl.* 157/224
may, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 67/176
array, *nom.*
assay, *imper.* 12/317
clay, *obl.* 12/319
array, *obj.*
affray, *obj.* 23/628
splay, *inf.* 32/625
assay, *imper.*
array, *nom.* 12/320
clay, *obl.* 12/319
away, *adv.*
bay, *obl.* 191/112
withnay, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1151
ay, *adv.*
May, *obl.* 148/226
bay, *obj.*
may, *v.* 2 *pl. pres.* 51/203
bay, *obl.*
away, *adv.* 191/111
bray, *imper.*
confray, *imper.* 111/196
clay, *obl.*
array, *nom.* 12/320
assay, *imper.* 12/317
confray, *imper.*
bray, *imper.* 111/195
day, *obl.*
nay, *adv.* 27/728
splay, *inf.* 83/633
tway, *adj. pl.* 169/161
haliday, *obj.*
alway, *adv.* 7/178
hay, *obl.*
say, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 26/704
thay, *pron.* 26/705
May, *obl.*
affray, *obl.* 185/186
allay, *inf.* 185/187
alway, *adv.* 157/223
ay, *adv. pl.* 148/224
may, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 160/52
may, *v.* 2 *pl. pres.*
bay, *obj.* 51/202
may, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*
*awaie, *prep.* 36/988
may, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
alway, *adv.* 67/178
May, *obl.* 160/50
nay, *adv.*
day, *obl.* 27/727
say, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
hay, *obl.* 26/702
thay, *pron.* 26/705
splay, *inf.*
affray, *obj.* 23/628
array, *obj.* 23/627
day, *obl.* 83/631
thai, *pron.*
twey, *adj. pl.* 50/169
thay, *pron.*
hay, *obl.* 26/702
say, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 26/704
tway, *num. adj.*
day, *obl.* 169/160
withnay, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
away, *adv.* 102/1149

-aie, -aye (*see* -ay)

awaie, *prep.*
may, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 36/990
braye, *inf.*
slaye, *pp.* 113/265
slaye, *pp.*
braye, *inf.* 113/266
enaye,[1] 3 *subj. pres.*
*trie, *imper.* 50/165
*die, 3 *subj. pres.* 50/166

-aier, -ayer (*see* -aire and -eire)

aier, *nom.*
laier, *obl.* 91/847

[1] Perhaps miswritten for *denaye*, and that for *denye*, which gives a perfect ryme.

ayer, *nom.*
*feire, *a. pl.* 86/705
*feire, *adv.* 114/296
*leire, *nom.* 86/704, 114/299
ayer, *obl.*
*faire, *adj. sing.* 172/35
laier, *obl.*
aier, *nom.* 91/846

-aies, -ayes (*see* -ayis)

arayes, *nom. pl.*
daies, *nom. pl.* 27/730
play is, 27/733
baies, *nom. pl.*
*day is, 81/567
bayes, *obl.*
dayes, *obl.* 59/416
daies, *obl.* 100/1096
surtray is, 100/1097
daies, *nom. pl.*
arayes, *nom. pl.* 27/732
bayes, *nom. pl.* 100/1094
*nay is, 45/38
*play is, 27/733
*surtray is, 100/1097
dayes, *obl.*
bayes, *obl.* 59/414
delaies *obj.* 65/122
delaies, *obj.*
dayes, *obl.* 65/120

-ayis, -ay is

ay is
dayis, *nom. pl.* 153/111
bay is
bay is, 58/407, 58/409
dayis, *nom. pl.*
ay is, 153/112
nay is
daies, *nom. pl.* 45/36
playis
arayes, *nom. pl.* 27/732
daies, *nom. pl.* 27/730
surtray is
bayes, *nom. pl.* 100/1094
daies, *nom. pl.* 100/1096

-ail

advail, *nom.*
tail, *obj.* 78/496
tail, *obj.*
advail, *nom.* 78/497

-aile

advaile, *inf.*
traile, *inf.* 70/246
availe, *inf.*
travaille, *inf.* 31/846
availe, *obl.*
traile, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 208/36
traile, *inf.*
advaile, *inf.* 70/248
traile, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
availe, *obl.* 208/38

aile is (*see* ayles)

availe is
snayles, *nom. pl.* 31/852

-ayles (*see* aile is)

snayles, *nom. pl.*
availe is, 31/850

-aileth

availeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
faileth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 45/34
faileth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
availeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 45/35

-aille

assaille, *inf.*
travaille, *v.* 3 *sing.* 4/94
availle, *nom. sing.*
travaille, *nom. sing.* 87/735
availle, *inf.*
travaille, *nom. sing.* 46/66
countervaille, *inf.*
travaille, *obl.* 9/223
travaille, *nom.*
availle, *nom.* 87/734
availle, *inf.* 46/64

travaille, *obl.*
countervaille, *inf.* 9/224
travaille, *v.* 3 *sing.*
assaille, *inf.* 4/92
travaille, *inf.*
availle, *inf.* 31/846

-ayne (*see* **-eyne**)

agayne, *adv.*
mayne, *nom.* 36/969
complayne, *inf.*
*veyne, *nom. sing.* 175/111
complayne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
strayne, *imper.* 158/13
disdayne, *obj.*
playne, *adv.* 182/86
slayne, *pp.* 182/88
fayne, *adj. sing.*
rayne, *obl.* 188/36
grayne, *obl.*
implayne, *inf.* 18/479
playne, *adv.* 137/914
sayne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 18/489
implayne, *inf.*
grayne, *obl.* 18/477
mayne, *nom.*
agayne, *adv.* 36/967
mountayne, *obj.*
playne, *obl.* 176/161
playne, *adv.*
disdayne, *obj.* 182/89
grayne, *obl.* 137/912
rayne, *obl.* 172/36
slayne, *pp.* 182/88
playne, *obl.*
mountayne, *obj.* 176/160
trayne, *imper.* 38/1032
rayne, *nom. sing.*
sayne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 190/94
rayne, *obj.*
slayne, *pp.* 64/87
rayne, *obl.*
fayne, *adj. sing.* 188/38
playne, *adv.* 172/38
sayne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
grayne, *obl.* 18/490
rayne, *nom. sing.* 190/92
slayne, *pp.*
disdayne, *obj.* 182/89
playne, *adv.* 182/86
rayne, *obj.* 64/85
strayne, *imper.*
complayne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 158/14
trayne, *imper.*
playne, *obl.* 38/1030

-ayne is (*see* **-anys**)

yslayne is,
*planys, *obl.* 94/919
*tranys, *obj.* 94/921

aire (*see* **-aier, -arie, -eire**)

aire, *obj.*
faire, *a. sing.* 2/24
aire, *obl.*
faire, *a. pl.* 3/55
columbaire, *obj.*
paire, *nom.* 20/537
repaire, *inf.* 20/536
dispaire, *obl.*
eire, *obl.* 39/1070
enoculaire, *inf.*
faire, *adj. pl.* 212/161
faire, *a. pl.*
aire, *obl.* 3/56
enoculaire, *inf.* 212/160
semynaire, *obl.* 189/66
faire, *a. sing.*
aire, *obj.* 2/22
*ayer, *obl.* 172/34
paire, *nom.*
columbaire, *obj.* 20/534
repaire, *inf.* 20/536
repaire, *inf.* resort
columbaire, *obj.* 20/534
paire, *nom.* 20/537
repaire, *inf.* renew (see *repare*[1] under *are*)
semynaire, *obl.* 218/314

[1] On *ay a* ryming, see those rymes of *slayne* (with *-ane*) altered to *slane* in Prof. Zupitza's *Guy of Warwick*, 2nd or 15th century version, E.E.T.S. MS. about 1450.

semynaire, *obl.*
faire, *adj. pl.* 189/64
repaire, *inf.* renew, 218/315

-aith

faith, *obl.*
saith, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 197/276
saith, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.*
faith, *obl.* 197/274

ake

ake, *v.pl.*
overtake, *pp.* 3/51
awake, 3 *pl. pres.* 3/54
ammonyake, *nom.*
take, *inf.* 41/1127
armonyake, *obl.*
portulake, *obl.* 23/603
aslake, *imper.*
make, *inf.* 38/1041
take, *inf.* 38/1038
aslake, *inf.*
shake, *inf.* 132/768
take, *imper.* 132/766
asslake, *inf.*
make, *imper.* 63/75
take, *inf.* 63/72
awake, *imper.*
make, *inf.* 69/240
take, *imper.* 69/242
awake, 3 *pl. pres.*
ake, *v. pl.* 3/53
overtake, *pp.* 3/51
rake, *obl.* 113/260
bake, *obl.*
take, *inf.* 42/1158
betake, *imper.*
take, *imper.* 24/641
undertake, *inf.* 24/642
blake, *adj. pl.*
make, *inf.* 166/77
take, *imper.* 130/712
take, *inf.* 200/375
undertake, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 130/713
wake, *inf.* 200/376
blake, *adj. sing.*
undertake, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 133/809
take, *imper.* 130/712
blake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
take, *pp.* 82/602
brake, *inf.*
hony-onfake, *obj.* 178/197
forsake, *imper.*
make, *inf.* 28/761
outake, *imper.* 28/758
shake, *inf.* 163/128
take, *imper.* 38/1049
take, *inf.* 163/130
forsake, *inf.*
take, *pp.* 127/643
forsake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
slake, *inf.* 77/453
take, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 77/450
hony-onfake, *obj.*
brake, *inf.* 178/199
kake, *obj.*
make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 214/202
lake, *obj.*
make, *imper.* 26/700
make, *imper.*
aslake, *inf.* 63/74
lake, *obj.* 26/701
shake, *inf.* 58/410
shake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 141/23
slake, *imper.* 145/146
stake, *obl.* 72/312
symphoriake, *obj.* 196/254
shake, *inf.* 52/240
take, *imper.* 58/408, 72/313, 145/143, 196/257
take, *inf.* 13/349, 17/462, 63/72
take, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 90/815
take, *subj.* 229/371
make, *inf.*
aslake, *imper.* 38/1040
awake, *imper.* 69/243
blake, *adj. pl.* 166/76
forsake, *imper.* 28/760
make, *inf.* 82/593
outake, *imper.* 28/758
outetake, *pp.* 56/332

shake, *inf.* 100/1095
slake, *imper.* 44/12, 55/311
slake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 188/26
stake, *imper.* 118/397
stake, *inf.* 97/1027
take, *imper.* 69/242, 82/592, 118/394, 173/52
take, *inf.* 11/275, 13/349, 38/1038, 47/101, 67/167, 80/528, 102/1158, 109/148, 185/185, 188/23, 196/273, 203/465
take, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 97/1024, 185/169, 204/493
take, *subj.* 100/1102, 211/115
undertake, *inf.* 11/278
wake, *inf.* 44/11
ytake, *pp.* 93/906
make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
kake, *obj.* 214/203
outetake, *imper.* 27/723
take, *inf.* 159/29, 206/528
take, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/725, 128/675, 158/3
make, *v. subj.*
take, *imper.* 52/243, 101/1115
Tyriake, *nom.* 101/1118
outake, *imper.*
forsake, *imper.* 28/760
make, *inf.* 28/761
outetake, *imper.*
make, *inf.* 56/330
make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/726
take, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/725
overtake, *pp.*
ake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 3/53
awake, 3 *pl. pres.* 3/54
portulake, *obl.*
armonyake, *adj.* 23/605
slake, *inf.* 196/248
rake, *obl.*
awake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/262
take, *inf.* 140/16
shake, *inf.*
aslake, *inf.* 132/769
forsake, *imper.* 163/131
make, *imper.* 58/411
make, *inf.* 100/1093
make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 52/242
Siriake, *adj. sing.* 137/913
take, *imper.* 58/408, 132/766
take, *inf.* 137/915, 163/130
take, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 52/243
undertake, *pp.* 8/203
shake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
make, *imper.* 141/25
take, *imper.* 94/924
Siriake, *adj. sing.*
shake, *inf.* 137/916
take, *inf.* 137/915
slake, *imper.*
make, *imper.* 145/145
make, *inf.* 44/9, 55/309
take, *imper.* 145/143, 169/148
wake, *inf.* 44/11
slake, *inf.*
forsake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 77/452
Portulake, *obl.* 196/246
take, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 77/450
slake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
make, *inf.* 188/25
take, *inf.* 188/23
stake, *imper.*
make, *inf.* 118/396
take, *imper.* 118/394
stake, *inf.*
make, *inf.* 97/1026
take, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 97/1024
stake, *obl.*
make, *imper.* 72/310
take, *imper.* 72/313
symphoriake, *obj.*
make, *imper.* 196/256
take, *imper.* 196/257
take, *imper.*
aslake, *inf.* 132/769
awake, *imper.* 69/243
betake, *imper.* 24/639
blake, *adj. pl.* 130/710
forsake, *imper.* 38/1050
make, *imper.* 58/411, 72/310, 145/145, 196/256
make, *inf.* 69/240, 82/590, 82/593, 118/396, 173/50

make, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*
make, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 52/242, 101/1117
shake, *inf.* 52/240, 58/410, 132/768
shake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 94/923
slake, *imper.* 145/146, 169/150
stake, *imper.* 118/397
stake, *obl.* 72/312
symphoriake, *nom.* 196/254
Tyriake, *nom.* 101/1118
undertake, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 130/713
undertake, *inf.* 24/642
wake, *imper.* 12/301
take, *inf.*
ammonyake, *nom.* 41/1126
aslake, *imper.* 38/1040
asslake, *inf.* 63/74
bake, *obl.* 42/1156
forsake, *imper.* 163/131
make, *imper.* 63/75, 17/461
make, *inf.* 11/277, 13/350, 38/1041, 47/99, 67/168, 80/526, 102/1156, 109/150, 185/183, 188/25, 196/272, 203/463
make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/726, 159/31, 206/526
rake, *obl.* 140/18
shake, *imper.* 137/916
shake, *inf.* 163/128
Siriake, *adj. sing.* 137/913
slake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 188/26
undertake, *inf.* 11/278
wake, *a. sing.* 49/154
wake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 166/59
take, *pp.*
blake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 82/601
forsake, *inf.* 127/644
undertake, *inf.* 59/434
take, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*
make, *imper.* 90/826
take, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
make, *inf.* 97/1026, 185/171, 204/491
make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 128/673, 158/1
outetake, *imper.* 27/723
stake, *inf.* 27/1027
take, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
blake, *adj. pl.* 200/373
forsake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 77/452
make, *imper.* 220/370
make, *inf.* 100/1100, 173/50, 211/113
slake, *inf.* 77/453
tiriake, *obl.* 100/1107
wake, *inf.* 200/376
tiriake, *obl.*
take, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 100/1109
Tyriake, *nom.*
make, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 101/1117
take, *imper.* 101/1115
underslake, *inf.*
take, *pp.* 59/433
undertake, *inf.*
betake, *imper.* 24/639
make, *inf.* 11/277
take, *imper.* 24/641
take, *inf.* 11/275
undertake, *pp.*
shake, *inf.* 8/202
undertake, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
blake, *adj. pl.* 130/710
blake, *adj. sing.* 133/807
take, *imper.* 130/712
wake, *a. sing.*
take, *inf.* 49/193
wake, *imper.*
take, *imper.* 12/300
wake, *inf.*
blake, *adj. pl.* 200/373
make, *inf.* 44/9
slake, *imper.* 44/12
take, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 200/375
wake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
take, *inf.* 166/57
ytake, *pp.*
make, *inf.* 93/904
*violate, *adj.* 103/1170

-akes

stakes, *obl.*
takes, *imper.* 72/325

takes, *imper.*
stakes, *obl.* 72/323

al (*see* -all and -alle)

al, *adj. pl.*
Marcial, *nom.* 194/216
smal, *adv.* 205/505
general, *adv.*
*alle, *a. sing.* 77/463
Marcial, *nom.*
al, *adj. pl.* 194/217
*alle, *adj. sing.* 143/97
shall, *v.* 1 *sing. fut.* 143/94
medicinal, *adj. sing.*
smal, *adj. sing.* 169/146
smal, *adj. sing.*
medicinal, *adj. sing.* 169/147
smal, *adv.*
al, *adj. pl.* 205/507

-ale

avale, *imper.*
dale, *obj.* 204/481
smale, *adj. pl.* 204/478
avale, *inf.*
dale, *obl.* 177/172
hale, *inf.* 177/168
hale, *imper.* 177/170
dale, *obl.*
avale, *inf.* 177/173
hale, *imper.* 177/170
vale, *obl.* 4/90
dale, *obj.*
avale, *imper.* 204/480
smale, *adj. pl.* 204/478
female, *obl.*
hale, *inf.* 136/879
hale, *inf.*
avale, *inf.* 177/167
pale, *adj. sing.* 197/282
smale, *adj. pl.* 132/770, 197/285
female, *obl.* 136/877
hale, *imper.*
avale, *inf.* 177/173
dale, *obl.* 177/172
pale, *adj. sing.*
hale, *inf.* 197/284
smale, *adj. pl.* 197/285
smale, *adj. pl.*
avale, *imper.* 204/480
dale, *obj.* 204/481
hale, *inf.* 132/771, 197/284
pale, *adj. sing.* 197/282
stale, *nom. sing.* 194/194
tale, *obl.* 194/193
stale, *nom. sing.*
smale, *adj. pl.* 194/191
tale, *obl.* 194/193
tale, *obl.*
smale, *adj. pl.* 194/191
stale, *nom. sing.* 194/194
vale, *obl.*
dale, *obl.* 4/91

-ales, -ale is

females, *obj.*
males, *obj.* 130/721
males, *obj.*
females, *obj.* 130/722
tale is
femalys, *nom.* 167/97
female is
malys, *nom.* 134/821

-alf

calf, *obl.*
half, *adj. sing.* 154/144, 154/145
half, *adj. sing.*
calf, *obl.* 154/142
half, *adj. sing.* 154/145

-alys

femalys, *nom.*
tale is, 167/98
malys, *nom.*
female is, 134/823

-alk (*see* -alke)

stalk, *obj.*
*dalke, *obl.* 125/607
*walke, *inf.* 125/606

-alke (*see* -alk)

dalke, *obl.*
*stalk, *obj.* 125/604
walke, *inf.* 125/606
walke, *inf.*
dalke, *obl.* 125/607
*stalk, *obj.* 125/604

-all (*see* -al and -alle)

all, *a. pl.*
castimoniall, *a. sing.* 90/827
all, *a. sing.*
stall, *obj.* 19/505
castimoniall, *a. sing.*
all, *a. pl.* 90/829
shall, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
*alle, *adj. sing.* 143/97
Marcial, *nom.* 143/96
shall, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
*alle, *adv.* 53/260
small, *adv.* 169/149
therwithall, *adv.* 169/151
small, *a. sing.*
*alle, *a. pl.* 91/855
small, *adv.*
shall, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 169/152
therwithall, *adv.* 169/151
stall, *obj.*
all, *a. sing.* 19/507
therwithall, *adv.*
shall, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 169/152
small, *adv.* 169/149

-alle (*see* -al *and* -all)

alle, *adj. pl.*
falle, *inf.* 34/922
falle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 122/515, 150/42
falle, *imper.* 151/62
galle, *obj.* 137/924
galle, *obl.* 34/919, 92/867, 116/344
malle, *inf.* 122/516
*small, *a. sing.* 91/857
tytymalle, *obl.* 117/365
alle, *a. sing.*[1]
*general, *a. pl.* 77/465
*Marcial, *nom.* 143/96
*shall, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 143/94
alle, *adv.*
*shall, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 53/262
superficialle, *adj. sing.* 202/416
calle, *inf.*
titimalle, *nom.* 38/1043
falle, *inf.*
alle, *a. pl.* 34/921
galle, *obl.* 34/919
falle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
alle, *adj. pl.* 122/513, 150/41
falle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
alle, *adj. pl.* 151/63
malle, *inf.* 122/516
galle, *obl.*
alle, *a. pl.* 34/921, 92/868, 116/346
falle, *inf.* 34/922
galle, *obj.*
alle, *adj. pl.* 137/925
malle, *inf.*
alle, *adj. pl.* 122/513
falle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 122/515
superficialle, *adj. sing.*
alle, *adv.* 202/414
titimalle, *nom.*
calle, *inf.* 38/1042
tytymalle, *obl.*
alle, *adj. pl.* 117/367

-alles, -alle is, -allis

walles, *nom.*
halle is, 20/535
halle is
walles, *nom.* 20/533
Wallis, *nom.*
walle is, 151/52
walle is
Wallis, *nom.* 151/50

[1] Here the scribe, by writing *alle* instead of *all*, has made the ryme imperfect.

-ame

blame, *inf.*
same, *adj. sing.* 186/209
the same, *adv.* 1/7
blame, *obl.*
fame, *obl.* 11/291
name, *obj.* 181/53
name, *obl.* 131/755
same, *pron.* 11/292
same, *adj. sing.* 181/51
tame, *inf.* 131/752
fame, *obj.*
blame, *obl.* 11/289
same, 11/292
frame, *inf.*
overflame, *imper.* 42/1139
same, *pron.* 42/1136
game, *obl.*
shame, *obl.* 20/531
lame, *adj. sing.*
tame, *adj. sing.* 132/772
name, *obj.*
blame, *obl.* 181/54
same, *adj. sing.* 181/51
name, *obl.*
blame, *obl.* 131/754
tame, *inf.* 131/752
overflame, *imper.*
frame, *inf.* 42/1138
same, *pron.* 42/1136
same, *adj. sing.*
blame, *inf.* 186/210
blame, *obl.* 181/54
name, *obj.* 181/53
same, *pron.*
blame, *obl.* 11/289
fame, *obj.* 11/291
frame, *inf.* 42/1138
overflame, *imper.* 42/1139
shame, *obl.*
game, *obl.* 20/532
tame, *adj. sing.*
lame, *adj. sing.* 132/774
tame, *inf.*
blame, *obl.* 131/754
name, *obl.* 131/755
the same, *adv.*
blame, *inf.* 1/6

-ance (*see* **-annce** and **-aunce**)

abundance, *obl.*
avance, *inf.* 42/1144
avance, *inf.*
abundance, *obl.* 42/1142
enhance, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
avannce, *inf.* 124/579
distannce, *obj.* 124/576
gouvernance, *nom.*
avaunce, *inf.* 5/109
perchaunce, *adv.* 5/110
gouvernance, *obl.*
consideraunce, *nom.* 2/19
plesaunce, *obl.* 2/18

-and, -ande (*see* **-ond** and **-onde**)

land, *obl.*
stande, 3 *pl. pres.* 8/198
stande, *inf.* 8/201
fande, *pp.*
lande, *obl.* 80/548
stande, *inf.* 80/550
hande, *obl.*
lande, *nom.* 44/15, 113/268
lande, *obj.* 9/211
lande, *obl.* 3/57, 35/966, 113/259, 144/117, 184/156
sande, *obl.* 13/342
stande, *inf.* 85/679, 113/270, 115/315, 184/158
stande, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 144/118
lande, *nom.*
*fonde, *pp.* 47/103
hande, *obl.* 44/17, 113/271
stande, *inf.* 2/15, 47/102, 113/270, 123/537, 176/141
stande, 3 *subj.* 2/28
*wonde, *nom.* 123/537
lande, *obj.*
hande, *obl.* 9/213
*hond, *obl.* 47/81
stande, *inf.* 106/55, 181/7c
*stond, *inf.* 47/82
upstande, *v.* 3 *subj.* 75/392

lande, *obl.*
fande, *pp.* 80/551
hande, *obl.* 3/59, 35/965, 113/258, 144/115, 184/159
stande, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 99/1074, 124/556
stande, *inf.* 80/550, 115/304, 124/567, 144/109, 152/91, 184/158, 187/21
stande, *v. subj. pres.* 107/94, 144/118
understande, *pp.* 68/198
understande, *inf.* 62/26
*yfond, *pp.* 62/23
sande, *obl.*
hande, *obl.* 13/343
stande, *inf.* 97/1004
stande, *inf.*
fande, *pp.* 80/551
*fonde, *pp.* 47/103
hande, *obl.* 85/678, 115/314, 113/271, 184/159
land, *obl.* 8/200
lande, *nom.* 2/17, 47/100, 113/268, 123/534, 176/143
lande, *obj.* 106/56, 181/69
lande, *obl.* 80/548, 115/302, 124/566, 144/107, 152/90, 184/156, 187/20
*londe, *nom.* 67/174
sande, *obl.* 97/1002
stande, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
*wonde, *nom.* 123/537
stande, 3 *subj.*
lande, *nom.* 2/27
stande, *v.* 3 *pres.*
land, *obl.* 8/200
lande, *obl.* 99/1072, 124/554
stande, *inf.* 8/201
stande, *v. subj.*
hande, *obl.* 144/115
lande, *obl.* 107/92, 144/117
understande, *inf.*
lande, *obl.* 62/23
*yfond, *pp.* 62/25
understande, *pp.*
lande, *obl.* 68/195
upstande, *v. subj.*
lande, *obj.* 75/391

-ane

bane, *nom. sing.*
henbane, *obl.* 32/877
pane, *obl.* 32/879
henbane, *obl.*
bane, *nom. sing.* 32/880
pane, *obl.* 32/879
pane, *obl.*
bane, *nom. sing.* 32/880
henbane, *obl.* 32/877

-ange (*see* -annge and -onge)

lange, *a. pl.*
*elonge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 4/89
strange, *a. pl.* 4/88
strange, *a. pl.*
*elonge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 4/89
lange, *a. pl.* 4/86
strange, *a. sing.*
channge, *nom.* 64/90

-anys

planys, *obl.*
tranys, *obj.* 94/921
*yslayne is, 94/922
tranys, *obj.*
planys, *obl.* 94/919
*yslayne is, 94/922

-annce (*see* -ance, -aunce)

abondannce, *nom. sing.*
advannce, *inf.* 166/66
advannce, *inf.*
abondannce, *nom. sing.* 166/64
avannce, *inf.*
distannce, *obj.* 124/576
enhance, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/578
distannce, *obj.*
avannce, *inf.* 124/579
enhance, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/578

-annge (*see* -ange, -aunge)

channge, *nom.*
strange, *a. sing.* 64/91

-annte (*see* -aunte)

avannte, *inf.*
  transplannte, *imper.* 151/76
transplannte, *imper.*
  avannte, *inf.* 151/77
transversannte, *a. pl.*
  chaunte, *inf.* 21/565
  plesaunte, *a. sing.* 21/562

-ape

escape, *inf.*
  grape, *obj.* 100/1101
  jape, *nom.* 100/1104
  sape, *obl.* 213/174
escape, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  grape, *obl.* 8/190
escape, *v.* 3 *subj. pres.*
  frape, *inf.* 202/418
  grape, *obj.* 202/415
frape, *inf.*
  escape, *v.* 3 *subj. pres.* 202/417
  grape, *obj.* 202/415
grape, *obj.*
  escape, *inf.* 100/1103
  escape, *v.* 3 *subj. pres.* 202/417
  frape, *inf.* 202/418
  jape, *nom.* 100/1104
grape, *obl.*
  escape, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 8/192
jape, *nom.*
  escape, *inf.* 100/1103
  grape, *obj.* 100/1101
sape, *obl.*
  escape, *inf.* 213/175

-appe

gappe, *obj.*
  happe, *imper.* 68/214
  wrappe, *imper.* 68/215
happe, *imper.*
  gappe, *obj.* 68/212
  wrappe, *imper.* 68/215
wrappe, *imper.*
  gappe, *obj.* 68/212
  happe, *imper.* 68/214

-ardde (*see* -arde)

hardde, *a. sing.*
  downwarde, *adv.* 48/122

-arde (*see* -ardde)

downwarde, *adv.*
  hardde, *a. sing.* 48/120
harde, *a. sing.*
  harde, *inf.* 57/365
harde, *inf.*
  harde, *a. sing.* 57/367
harde, *a. pl.*
  upwarde, *adv.* 89/787
larde, *obl.*
  rewarde, *inf.* 16/434
rewarde, *inf.*
  larde, *obl.* 16/433
upwarde, *adv.*
  harde, *a. pl.* 89/785

-ardes (*see* -arde is)

hardes, *obj.*
  myddelwardes, *adv.* 169/137
  harde is, 169/138
myddlewardes, *adv.*
  hardes *obj.* 169/135
  harde is, 169/138

-arde is (*see* -ardes)

harde is,
  hardes, *obj.* 169/135
  myddlewardes, *adv.* 169/137

-are

are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  capare, *obj.* 110/172
  columbare, *adj. sing.* 220/352
  declare, 197/275
  fecundare, *a. pl.* 36/985
  mare, *obl.* 36/984, 136/885
  nare, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 136/888
  rare, *a. pl.* 5/99, 80/533, 84/650, 220/355
  rare, *a. sing.* 4/85, 98/1043, 164/20

repare, *inf.* 107/85
spare, *inf.* 110/173, 197/278
square, *a. sing.* 47/104
square, *adv.* 129/674
bare, *adj.*
declare, *inf.* 107/90
capare, *obj.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 110/170
spare, *imper.* 110/173
care, *obj.*
cynabare, *obl.* 211/118
care, *obl.*
forfare, *pp.* 138/931
spare, *inf.* 42/1148
columbare, *adj. sing.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 220/354
rare, *adj. pl.* 220/355
cynabare, *obl.*
care, *obj.* 211/119
declare, *inf.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 197/277
bare, *adj.* 107/91
spare, *inf.* 197/278
fare, *inf.*
chare, *obl.* 159/42
fecundare, *a. pl.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 36/982
mare, *obl.* 36/984
forfare, *pp.*
care, *obl.* 138/932
mare, *obl.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 36/982, 136/887
fecundare, *a. pl.* 36/985
nare, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 136/888
nare, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 136/887
mare, *obl.* 136/885
pare, *inf.*
repare, *inf.* 80/531
rare, *a. pl.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 5/101, 80/535, 84/651, 220/354
columbare, *adj. sing.* 220/352
rare, *a. sing.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 4/87, 98/1042, 164/21
rare, *adv.*
spare, *adv.* 110/185
repare, *inf.* renew (*see* repaire)
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 107/87
pare, *inf.* 80/532
stare, *inf.* 208/48
spare, *inf.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 110/170, 197/277
capare, *obj.* 110/172
care, *obl.* 42/1147
declare, *inf.* 197/275
spare, *adv.*
rare, *adv.* 110/183
square, *a. sing.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 47/105
square, *adv.*
are, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 129/676
stare, *inf.*
repare, *inf.* 208/49

-ares (*see* -are is)

hares, *nom.*
tares, *obj.* 62/36
tares, *obj.*
hares, *nom.* 62/38
mares, *nom.*
*ware is, 28/756

-are is (*see* -ares, -arys)

ware is
mares, *nom.* 28/755
bare is
marys, *obj.* 132/779

-arge

charge, *nom.*
large, *obl.* 28/746
charge, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 28/747
charge, *obj.*
large, *adj. pl.* 120/442
charge, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
charge, *nom.* 28/744
enlarge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 6/138
large, *adv.* 6/135, 27/720
large, *obl.* 28/746

charge, *inf.*
large, *adj. pl.* 134/819
enlarge, *imper.*
large, *a. sing.* 40/1100
enlarge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
charge, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 6/137
large, *adv.* 6/135
large, *adj. pl.*
charge, *inf.* 134/820
charge, *obj.* 120/444
large, *a. sing.*
enlarge, *imper.* 40/1102
large, *adv.*
charge, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 6/137, 27/721
enlarge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 6/138
large, *obl.*
charge, *nom.* 28/744
charge, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 28/247

-arie

adversarie, *nom.*
necessarie, *a. sing.* 20/527
warie, *imper.* 20/530
carie, *inf.*[1]
necessarie, *adj. sing.* 159/49
n^cessarie, *a. sing.*
adversarie, *nom.* 20/529
carie, *inf.* 159/48
varie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 14/353
warie, *imper.* 20/530
unnecessarie, *adj. sing.*
carie,[1] *inf.* 143/88
varie,*v. 3 *pl. pres.*
necessarie, *a. sing.* 14/351
warie, *imper.*
adversarie, *nom.* 20/529
necessarie, *a. sing.* 20/527

-ary

pampinary, *a. pl.*
vary, *inf.* 65/116
wary, *inf.* 65/117
rosary, *obj.*
seminary, *obj.* 108/125
seminary, *obj.*
rosary, *obj.* 108/126
vary, *inf.*
pampinary, *a. pl.* 65/114
wary, *inf.* 65/117
wary, *inf.*
pampinary, *a. pl.* 65/114
vary, *inf.* 65/116

-arys (*see* **-are is**)

marys, *obj.*
bare is, 132/781

-ark (*see* **-erk**)

kark, *inf.*
*werk, *obl.* 129/700

-arme

charme, *obj.*
harme, *obj.* 20/540
enarme, *inf.*
harme, *inf.* 19/501
warme, *a. pl.* 23/622
warme, *inf.* 19/499
harme, 3 *subj. pres.*
warme, *a. pl.* 45/41
harme, *inf.*
enarme, *inf.* 19/502
warme, *a. pl.* 99/1063, 194/202
warme, *adj. sing.* 93/897, 218/322
warme, *inf.* 19/499
harme, *obj.*
charme, *obj.* 20/542
warme, *a. pl.* 96/981
warme, *a. sing.* 13/344
harme, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
warme, *adj. pl.* 121/470
warme, *a. pl.*
enarme, *inf.* 23/623
harme, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/472
harme, 3 *subj. pres.* 45/42
harme, *inf.* 99/1064 194/203
harme, *obj.* 96/983

[1] Miswritten in MS. *caire.*

warme, *a. sing.*
harme, *inf.* 93/899, 218/321
harme, *obj.* 13/346
warme, *inf.*
enarme, *inf.* 19/502
harme, *inf.* 19/501

-art (*see* **-arte**)

part, *obj.*
*departe, *inf.* 202/423

-arte (*see* **-art**)

departe, *inf.*
*part, *obj.* 202/421

-arted

coarted, *pp.*
darted, *pp.* 101/1132
departed, *pp.* 101/1129
darted, *pp.*
coarted, *pp.* 101/1131
departed, *pp.* 101/1129
departed, *pp.*
coarted, *pp.* 101/1131
darted, *pp.* 101/1132

-asse

asse, *obl.*
nasse, *v.* 3 *sing. past*, 136/886
brasse, *a. sing.*
passe, *imper.* 40/1095
nasse, *v.* 3 *sing. past*
asse, *obl.* 136/884
passe, *imper.*
brasse, *a. sing.* 40/1093
passe, *inf.*
passe, *obj.* 205/500
passe, *obj.*
passe, *inf.* 205/498

-aste (*see* **-aaste**)

caste, *imper.*
caste, *inf.* 164/9
laste, *adv.* 164/11
caste, *inf.*
caste, *imper.* 164/12
laste, *adv.* 164/11
faste, *adv.*
haste, *inf.* 85/686
haste, *inf.*
faste, *adv.* 85/685
haste, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
waste, *inf.* 140/3
laste, *adv.*
caste, *imper.* 164/12
caste, *inf.* 164/9
waste, *inf.*
haaste, *inf.* 91/843
haste, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 140/1

-at (*see* **-ate**)

ablaqueat, *adj. pl.*
*astate, *obl.* 151/59

-ate (*see* **-at** and **-atte**)

abate, *inf.*
desolate, *inf.* 44/4
temporate, *a. pl.* 44/2
adorate, *adj. pl.*
desicate, *adj. sing.* 110/179
pastynate, *adj. pl.* 110/177
astate, *nom.*
moderate, *a. sing.* 98/1035
astate, *obl.*
*ablaqueat, *adj. pl.* 151/57
fortunate, *v.* 3 *sing. imper.* 7/180
temporate, *a. pl.* 7/177, 61/1
ate, *prep.* (*see* atte)
temporate, *adj. pl.* 153/127
celebrate, *pp.*
variate, *adj. sing.* 209/52
concavate, *a. sing.*
dilate, *inf.* 70/254
revocate, *a. sing.* 70/256
desiccate, *adj. sing.*
adorate, *adj. pl.* 110/180
pastynate, *adj. pl.* 110/177
desolate, *inf.*
abate, *inf.* 44/5
temporate, *a. pl.* 44/2
dilate, *inf.*
concavate, *a. sing.* 70/257
revocate, *pp.* 70/256

emplastrate, *adj. pl.*
enoculate, *inf.* 144/131
temperate, *adj. pl.* 144/129
enoculate, *inf.*
emplastrate, *adj. pl.* 144/132
temperate, *adj. pl.* 144/129
estate, *obj.*
refrigerate, *pp.* 160/62
fortunate, *v.* 3. *sing. imper.*
astate, *obl.* 7/179
temporate, *a. pl.* 7/177
inclinate, *a. sing.*
temporate, *a. pl.* 94/918
inoculate, *pp.*
mediate, *adj. sing.* 127/647
mediate, *adj. sing.*
inoculate, *pp.* 127/645
moderate, *a. sing.*
astate, *nom.* 98/1036
pastynate, *pp.*
adorate, *adj. pl.* 110/180
desiccate, *pp.* 110/179
state, *nom.* 63/52
refrigerate, *pp.*
estate, *obj.* 160/63
revocate, *a. sing.*
concavate, *a. sing.* 70/257
dilate, *inf.* 70/254
state, *nom.*
pastynate, *a. pl.* 63/50
temperate, *adj. pl.*
emplastrate, *adj. pl.* 144/132
enoculate, *inf.* 144/131
temporate, *a. pl.*
abate, *inf.* 44/5
astate, *obl.* 61/3, 7/179
ate, *prep.* 153/129
*atte, *prep.* 192/150
desolate, *inf.* 44/4
fortunate, *v.* 3 *sing. imper.* 7/180
inclinate, *a. sing.* 94/920
temporate, *a. sing.*
*atte, *prep.* 45/31
variate, *adj. sing.*
celebrate, *pp.* 209/50
violate, *a. sing.*
*ytake, *pp.* 103/1172

-ateth

abateth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
hateth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 23/618
prateth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 23/620
hateth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
abateth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 23/621
prateth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 23/620
prateth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
abateth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 23/621
hateth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 23/618

-athes (see **-athe is**)

bathes, *nom. pl.*
scathe is, 40/1106, 41/1116

-athe is (see **-athes**)

scathe is
bathes, *nom. pl.* 40/1106, 41/1116.

at is (*see* **attes**)

that is
gnattes, *obl.* 32/869

-atte (*see* **-ate**)

atte, *prep.*
*temporate, *adj. pl.* 192/148
*temporate, *a. sing.* 45/29

-attes

cattes, *nom.*
gnattes, *obj.* 33/905
rattes, *obj.* 33/907
gnattes, *obj.*
cattes, *nom.* 33/908
rattes, *obj.* 33/907
gnattes, *obl.*
that is, 32/871
rattes, *obj.*
cattes, *nom.* 33/908
gnattes, *obj.* 33/905

-aunce (*see* **-ance, annce**)

abundaunce, *obj.*
perchaunce, *adv.* 51/217
avaunce, *inf.*
gouernance, *nom.* 5/107
perchaunce, *adv.* 5/110

consideraunce, *nom.*
gouvernance, *obl.* 2/16
plesaunce, *obl.* 2/18
fecundaunce, *obl.*
pleasaunce, *obl.* 134/836
perchaunce, *adv.*
abundaunce, *obj.* 51/217
avaunce, *inf.* 5/109
gouvernance, *nom.* 5/107
pleasaunce, *obl.*
consideraunce, *nom.* 2/19
fecundance, *obl.* 134/838
gouvernance, *obl.* 2/16

-aunge

chaunge, *obj.*
straunge, *adj. pl.* 129/688
straunge, *adj. sing.* 143/98
chaunge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
eschaunge, *obl.* 9/236
estraunge, *a. sing.* 9/235
eschaunge, *obl.*
chaunge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 9/233
estraunge, *a. sing.* 9/235
estraunge, *a. sing.*
chaunge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 9/233
eschaunge, *obl.* 9/236
straunge, *adj. sing.*
chaunge, *obj.* 122/690, 143/99

-aunt (*see* **-aunte**)

denaunt, *prep.*
haunt, *obj.* 160/75
*plaunte, *inf.* 160/72
haunt, *inf.*
plesaunt, *adj. sing.* 113/253
haunt, *obj.*
denaunt, *prep.* 160/74
*plaunte, *inf.* 160/72
plesaunt, *adj. sing.*
haunt, *inf.* 113/255

-aunte (*see* **-annte** and **-aunt**)

chaunte, *inf.*
plesaunte, *a. sing.* 21/562
transversannte, *a. pl.* 21/564
haunte, *inf.*
plesaunte, *adj. pl.* 134/828
plaunte, *inf.*
*denaunt, *prep.* 160/74
*haunt, *obj.* 160/75
plesaunte, *adj. pl.*
haunte, *inf.* 134/830
plesaunte, *a. sing.*
chaunte, *inf.* 21/565
transversannte, *a. pl.* 21/564

-aunted

haunted, *pp.*
transplaunted, *pp.* 51/195
transplaunted, *pp.*
haunted, *pp.* 51/196

-ave

cave, *obl.*
have, *inf.* 147/194
shave, *imper.* 147/195
chave, *imper.* 2 *sing.*
have, *imper.* 13/340
pave, *imper.* 13/341
clave, *nom. sing.*
have, *inf.* 119/441
clave, *obl.*
crave, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 119/417
have, *inf.* 119/418, 119/430
crave, *imper.*
have, *inf.* 184/139
crave, *inf.*
have, *inf.* 85/667
save, 3 *pl. pres.* 85/670
crave, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
clave, *obl.* 119/415
have, *inf.* 91/854, 119/418
have, *imper.*
chave, *imper.* 2 *sing.* 13/338
pave, *imper.* 13/341
pave, *inf.* 155/176
have, *inf.*
cave, *obl.* 147/192
clave, *obl.* 119/415, 119/428, 119/440
crave, *imper.* 184/140

crave, *inf.* 85/669
crave, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 91/853, 119/417
save, *inf.* 100/1086
shave, *imper.* 147/195
have, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
save, *imper.* 118/395
pave, *imper.*
chave, *imper.* 2 *sing.* 13/338
have, *imper.* 13/340
pave, *inf.*
have, *imper.* 155/178
save, *imper.*
have, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 118/393
save, *inf.*
have, *inf.* 100/1088
save, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
crave, *inf.* 85/669
have, *inf.* 85/667
shave, *pp.* 74/370
shave, *imper.*
cave, *obl.* 147/192
have, *inf.* 147/194
shave, *pp.*
save, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 74/371

-aved

graved, *pp.*
saved, *pp.* 150/43
saved, *pp.*
graved, *pp.* 150/45

-awe

drawe, *inf.*
lawe, *obl.* 166/68
withdrawe, *pp.* 166/65
lawe, *obl.*
drawe, *inf.* 166/67
withdrawe, *pp.* 166/65
withdrawe, *pp.*
drawe, *inf.* 166/67
lawe, *obl.* 166/68

-axe

laxe, *adj. sing.*
waxe, *inf.* 197/283
waxe, *inf.*
laxe, *adj. sing.* 197/281

-e (*see* **-ee** and **-ie**)

be, *imper.*
fle, 3 *pl. pr.* 201/397
three, *adj. pl.* 200/378
peretre, *obl.* 185/176
quantitee, *nom.* 192/157
quantitee, *obl.* 201/397
be, *inf.*
chiritree, *obl.* 102/1147
bee, *obj.* 39/1064
countree, *obl.* 79/512
difficultee, *obl.* 150/25
eternitee, *obl.* 86/721
extremitee, *obj.* 119/436
fecunditee, *obl.* 70/253
*fecunditie, *nom.* 11/282
felicitee, *obl.* 207/5
feracitee, *obl.* 209/68
fertilitee, *obj.* 11/284, 171/12
fig-tree, *obj.* 218/313
fle, *inf.* 34/929, 54/297
free, *a. sing.* 46/75
he, *pron.* 29/785
hillaritee, *obl.* 135/852
humyditee, *nom.* 183/112
libertee, *obl.* 130/724
necessitee, *obl.* 49/134
povertee, *obl.* 188/37
puritee, *obj.* 201/405
pynappultree, *obl.* 98/1049
qualitee, *obl.* 83/628, 86/694, 188/40
quantitee, *nom. sing.* 168/117
se, *imper.* 39/1055, 117/362, 162/110, 199/333, 204/472
se, *inf.* 9/226, 36/986, 69/235, 72/306, 83/627, 84/661, 112/243, 119/438, 171/9, 185/173
se, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 58/397
see, *inf.* 104/11, 135/850
see, *obl.* 130/726, 168/114, 120/443, 184/145
she, *pron.* 26/695
solempnitee, *obl.* 207/2

stre, *obl.* 93/890
stre, *obj.* 112/223
summitee, *obl.* 112/240
summyte, *obl.* 119/433
the, *art.* 131/741
the, *pron.* 69/236
the, *inf.* 111/216
thee, *pron.* 120/446
thre, *adj. pl.* 26/697, 46/72, 109/143, 199/331
three, *num.* 34/926, 185/170
tre, *num. adj.* 142/72
tree, *nom.* 58/394, 67/180, 209/65
tree, *obj.* 39/1052, 72/303, 104/12, 189/62, 218/312
tree, *obl.* 58/391, 68/204, 69/220, 78/488, 87/731, 88/773, 92/876, 117/359, 121/484, 122/519, 150/26, 162/107, 198/328
ubertee, *obl.* 64/104
utilitee, *nom. sing.* 184/144, 78/485
utilitee, *obl.* 131/738
virginitee, *obl.* 9/229
ye, *pron.* 51/190

be, *obl.*
flee, *inf.* 146/180
see, *inf.* 146/178

be, *pp.*
see, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 20/541
the, *pron.* 20/544

be, *subj.*
asperitee, *obl.* 86/712
figtree, *obl.* 204/490
flee, *imper.* 6/150
frigiditee, *nom. sing.* 108/124
he, *pron.* 126/610
humyditee, *obl.* 95/957
kepe, *imper.* 183/123
lepe, *v.* 3. *sing. pres.* 183/121
libertee, *obl.* 94/938
me, *pron.* 75/393
propurtee, *obl.* 165/23
quantitee, *obj.* 115/325
quantitee, *obl.* 198/312
se, *inf.* 108/123, 198/313
se, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 96/984, 189/52
see, *inf.* 146/178, 165/25
see, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 109/151
the, *art.* 109/152
the, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 97/1012
three, *a. pl.* 72/324, 88/758, 90/819, 153/107
tree, *nom.* 95/956
tree, *obl.* 72/327, 86/711, 88/760, 96/985, 97/1013, 108/113, 153/109

be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
Almandtree, *obj.* 212/156
bee, *nom. sing.* 155/170
contumacitee, *obj.* 128/691
extremyte, *obl.* 215/243
felicitee, *obl.* 124/555
fertilitee, *nom. sing.* 174/89
fertilitee, *obj.* 124/557
fertilitee, *obl.* 212/159
firmitee, *obl.* 134/829
flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/81
he, *pron.* 127/648, 195/221, 195/228
iniquitee, *obl.* 167/89
naturalitee, *obj.* 134/832
propretee, *obl.* 128/688
qualitee, *obl.* 129/689
quan[t]itee, *obl.* 77/464
rotunditee, *obl.* 133/803
se, *inf.* 171/5, 104/5
se, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.* 32/865
see, *imper.* 149/19
see, *inf.* 129/692
see, *obl.* 149/10, 171/4
see, *v.* 3. *pl. pres.* 174/88
sle, *inf.* 32/863
slee, *inf.* 155/173
solempnitee, *obj.* 104/2
stre, *obl.* 121/491
three, *num. adj.* 47/92, 149/18, 67/177
tree, *obl.* 120/463, 126/631, 127/649, 161/92, 195/219, 195/226, 215/238, 215/240, 220/357

ubertee, *obj.* 167/88
ubertee, *obl.* 174/79
we, *pron.* 164/19
ye, *pron.* 133/804, 164/16
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
Amynee, *nom.* 64/86
bee, *nom. sing.* 218/317
bee, *obj.* 173/60
fecunditee, *obl.* 182/79
fertilitee, *obj.* 182/82
fertilitee, *obl.* 65/106
flee, *inf.* 146/176
he, *pron.* 11/279, 143/84, 170/166
perytree, *obj.* 173/58
povertee, *obj.* 219/331
se, *imper.* 77/467, 203/460, 219/334
se, *inf.* 61/17, 218/320
se, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 195/235
she, *pron.* 170/165
the, *pron.* 170/163
thre, *num. adj.* 7/153
three, *num. adj.* 64/89, 142/65
tree, *obj.* 182/92, 195/233
tree, *obl.* 73/351, 128/683, 147/196, 190/78, 203/457
cle, *obl.*
sle, *inf.* 109/155
extremyte, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 215/242
tree, *obl.* 215/240
fecundite, *obl.*
felicitee, *nom.* 138/933
fle, *inf.*
be, *inf.* 34/928, 54/295
three, *obl.* 34/926
fle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
be, *imper.* 201/396
quantitee, *obl.* 201/394
forme, *obj.*
*me, *pron.* 60/448
he, *pron.*
Almauntree, *obl.* 194/200
be, *inf.* 29/787
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 127/646, 195/222, 195/229
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 11/280, 143/85, 170/168
chiritree, *obj.* 194/201
flee, *inf.* 33/901
see, *obl.* 183/113
see, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 33/900
she, *pron.* 170/165
the, *pron.* 170/163
tree, *obl.* 127/649, 195/219, 195/226
maturite, *obl.*
*kepe, *obj.* 183/126
me, *pron.*
be, *subj.* 75/395
forme, *obj.* 60/447
se, *imper.*
be, *inf.* 39/1054, 117/361, 162/109, 199/334, 204/470
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 77/466, 203/459, 219/333
povertee, *obj.* 219/331
quan[t]itee, *obl.* 77/464
thre, *num.* 199/331
three, *num.* 196/251
tree, *obj.* 39/1052
tree, *obl.* 117/359, 162/107, 203/457
se, *inf.*
be, *inf.* 9/228, 36/987, 69/233, 72/305, 83/625, 84/659, 112/242, 119/439, 171/11, 185/172
be, *subj.* 108/121, 198/310
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 104/4, 171/2
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 61/15, 218/319
bee, *nom. sing.* 218/317
bee, *obl.* 146/164
extremitee, *obj.* 119/436
fertilitee, *obj.* 171/12
flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/166
frigiditee, *nom. sing.* 108/124
quantitee, *nom. sing.* 220/366
quantitee, *obl.* 83/628, 198/312
see, *obl.* 171/4
solempnitee, *obj.* 104/2

summitee, *obl.* 112/240
summyte, *obl.* 214/205
the, *pron.* 69/236
thee, *pron.* 214/207
thre, *adj.* 185/170
tree, *obl.* 220/369
tree, *obj.* 72/303
virginitee, *obl.* 9/229
se, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 32/866
sle, *inf.* 32/863
se, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 195/236
tree, *obj.* 195/233
se, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
be, *inf.* 58/396
tree, *nom.* 58/394
se, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*
be, *subj.* 96/982, 189/50
tree, *obl.* 96/985
she, *pron.*
be, *inf.* 26/698
be, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 170/168
he, *pron.* 170/166
the, *pron.* 170/163
thre, *num. adj.* 26/697
sle, *inf.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 32/866
cle, *obl.* 109/157
se, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.* 32/865
stre, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 112/224
stre, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 93/892
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/493
summyte, *obl.*
be *inf.* 119/434
se, *inf.* 214/208
thee, *pron.* 214/207
the, *art.*
be, 131/740
utilitee, *obj.* 131/738
the, *pron.*
be, *subj.* 109/149
be, *inf.* 69/233
be, *pp.* 20/543
be, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 170/168
he, *pron.* 170/166
se, *inf.* 69/235
see, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 109/151
see, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 20/541
she, *pron.* 170/165
the, *inf.*
be, *inf.* 111/217
the, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
be, *subj.* 97/1010
tree, *obl.* 97/1013
thre, *num. adj.*
be, *inf.* 26/698, 46/74, 109/141, 199/334
be, *v.* 3 *sing.* 7/154
free, *a. sing.* 46/75
se, *imper.* 199/333
she, *pron.* 26/695
tre, *num. adj.*
be, *inf.* 142/74
we, *pron.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 164/18
ye, *pron.* 164/16
ye, *pron.*
be, *inf.* 51/192
be, *v* 3. *pl. pres.* 133/801, 164/18
rotunditee, *obl.* 133/803
we, *pron.* 164/19

-eane (*see* -ene)

demeane, *imper.*
clene, *a. pl.* 55/323

-eason (*see* -eson)

reason, *nom.*
season, *obl.* 10/258
reason, *obl.*
geson, *adj. pl.* 164/5
leson, *inf.* 71/292
season, *obl.* 71/291
season, *nom.* 164/2
season, *obj.* 144/130
season, *nom. sing.*
geson, *adj. pl.* 164/5
leson, *inf.* 71/292
reason, *obl.* 164/4

season, *obj.*
reason, *obl.* 144/128
season, *obl.*
appeson, *inf.* 120/448
geson, *adj. pl.* 106/65
peson, *nom. pl.* 106/68
reason, *nom.* 10/259
reason, *obl.* 71/289

-ebre (*see* **-ever**)

elebre, *nom.*
*lever, *adj.* 38/1046

-eche

cleche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
seche, *inf.* 145/156
deche, *inf.*
eche, *imp.* 41/1122
leche, *inf.* 41/1125
eche, *imp.*
deche, *inf.* 41/1124
leche, *inf.* 41/1125
leche, *inf.*
deche, *inf.* 41/1124
eche, *imp.* 41/1122
leche, *nom. sing.*
peche, *obl.* 211/127
peche, *obl.*
leche, *nom. sing.* 211/129
pleche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 76/418
reche, *subj.* 76/417
teche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/248
pleche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
peche, *obl.* 76/415
reche, *subj.* 76/417
reche, *subj.*
peche, *obl.* 76/415
pleche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 76/418
seche, *inf.*
cleche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 145/158
teche, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
peche, *obl.* 216/246

-echeth

plecheth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
techeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 73/332
techeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
plecheth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 73/330

-ecte

confecte, *pp.*
dejecte, *imper.* 59/423
correcte, *inf.*
enfecte, *pp.* 11/294, 176/139
dejecte, *imper.*
confecte, *pp.* 59/421
directe, *adv.*
enfecte, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 155/177
tecte, *pp.* 155/180
directe, *adj.*
enfecte, *pp.* 214/206
enfecte, *pp.*
correcte, *inf.* 11/293, 176/140
directe, *adj.* 214/204
enfecte, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
directe, *adv.* 155/179
tecte, *pp.* 155/180
tecte, *pp.*
directe, *adv.* 155/179
enfecte, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 155/177

-ed (*see* **-eed** and **-eede**)

led, *pp.*
*heed, *obl.* 177/166
*leede, *obl.* 177/163

-edde

ledde, *pp.*
spredde, *pp.* 68/211
spredde, *pp.*
ledde, *pp.* 68/213

-ede (*see* **-eed**, **-eede** and **-eete**)

brede, *adj.*
lede, *inf.* 144/113
brede, *nom. sing.*
sprede, *pp.* 177/181
brede, *obl.*
drede, *inf.* 182/100
drede, *nom.* 68/210, 110/187

fede, *imper.* 21/556
lede, *inf.* 18/464
lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 155/189
rede, *a. pl.* 18/467
seede, *inf.* 182/103
sprede, *inf.* 40/1099, 110/186
brede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
dede, *adj.* 116/345
fede, *inf.* 116/348
dede, *inf.*
lede, *inf.* 57/368
rede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 57/369
dede, *nom. sing.*
fede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 191/130
*weete, *adj. sing.* 191/128
dede, *obl.*
drede, *obj.* 111/207
drede, *obl.* 34/935
lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 111/205
trede, *inf.* 34/933
dede, *pp.*
brede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 116/347
fede, *inf.* 116/348
dede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
nede, *obl.* 179/19
sprede, *inf.* 179/16
drede, *nom.*
brede, *obl.* 68/209, 110/184
sprede, *inf.* 110/186
weede, *imper.* 141/28
drede, *inf.*
brede, *obl.* 182/102
hede, *obj.* 39/1072
nede, *adj. sing.* 131/735
sede, *inf.* 11/268
seede, *inf.* 182/103
spede, *inf.* 11/270
wede, *inf.* 46/70
drede, *obj.*
dede, *obl.* 111/208
lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 111/205
drede, *obl.*
dede, *obl.* 34/936
need, 3 *sing.* 10/261
rede, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 107/95
sede, *inf.* 10/263, 107/96
sprede, *inf.* 96/987
excede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
succede, *v. sing. pres.* 161/105
fede, *imper.*
brede, *obl.* 21/554
lede, *inf.* 217/285
seede, *inf.* 217/284
fede, *inf.*
brede, *v.* 3. *pl. pres.* 116/347
dede, *adj.* 116/345
lede, *inf.* 24/646, 27/716
nede, *obl.* 27/718
rede, *a. pl.* 24/649
sede, *inf.* 181/77
fede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
dede, *nom. sing.* 191/131
*weete, *adj. sing.* 191/128
hede, *obj.*
drede, *inf.* 39/1074
lede, *inf.*
brede, *obl.* 18/466, 144/112
dede, *inf.* 57/366
fede, *imper.* 217/282
fede, *inf.* 24/648, 27/719
lede, *inf.* 177/174, 177/175
nede, *obl.* 27/718
rede, *a. pl.* 18/467, 24/649
rede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 57/369
seede, *inf.* 217/284
lede, 3 *subj. pres.*
dede, *obl.* 111/208
drede, *obj.* 111/207
brede, *obl.* 155/188
trede, *inf.* 182/99
mede, *obl.*
sprede, *imper.* 13/325
nede, *adj. sing.*
drede, *inf.* 131/736
procede, *imper.* 30/818
sprede, *inf.* 62/30
weede, *inf.* 62/32
nede, *obl.*
dede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 179/18
fede *inf.* 27/719
lede, *inf.* 27/716
sprede, *imper.* 13/325, 40/1091
sprede, *inf.* 179/16

procede, *imper.*
nede, *a. sing.* 30/819
procede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
wede, *inf.* 81/561
rede, *a. pl.*
brede, *obl.* 18/466
fede, *inf.* 24/648
lede, *inf.* 18/464, 24/646
rede, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
drede, *obl.* 107/93
sede, *inf.* 107/96
sprede, *inf.* 192/158
weede, *imper.* 192/156
rede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
dede, *inf.* 57/366
lede, *inf.* 57/368
sede, *inf.*
drede, *inf.* 11/271
drede, *obl.* 10/264, 107/93
fede, *inf.* 181/76
heede, *obj.* 151/73
*need, *sing. pres.* 10/261
rede, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 107/95
spede, *inf.* 11/270
spede, *inf.*
drede, *inf.* 11/271
sede, *inf.* 11/268
sprede, *imper.*
mede, *obl.* 13/323
nede, *obl.* 40/1092
sprede, *inf.*
brede, *nom. sing.* 177/182
brede, *obl.* 40/1098, 110/184
dede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 179/18
drede, *nom.* 110/187
drede, *obl.* 96/986
nede, *a. sing.* 62/33
nede, *obl.* 179/19
rede, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 192/159
weede, *imper.* 192/156
weede, *inf.* 62/32
succede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
excede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 161/104
trede, *inf.*
dede, *obl.* 34/936
drede, *obl.* 34/935
lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 182/101
wede, *inf.*
drede, *nom.* 46/69
procede, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 81/563

-ede is (*see* **-edes, -edys, -eedes, -eed is,** and **-eedys**)

dede is,
need is, 53/271
seedes, *obj.* 53/268
seedys, *nom. pl.* 184/160
drede is,
eedes, *obl.* 28/743
weedes, *obl.* 46/76
nede is,
seedes, *obj.* 29/792
spede is, 56/341, 70/250
stedes, *obl.* 31/828, 56/338
stedys, *obl.* 70/247
wede is, 31/830
spede is,
nede is, 56/340, 70/249
stedes, *obl.* 56/338
stedys, *obl.* 70/247
wede is,
stedes, *obl.* 31/828
nede is, 31/831

-edes (*see* **ede is** and **eede is**)

redes, *obl.*
drede is, 28/745
sedes, *obj.*
seede is, 51/213
stedes, *obl.*
nede is, 31/831, 56/340
spede is, 56/341
wede is, 31/830

-edeth (*see* **-eedeth**)

ledeth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
proceedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/473
succedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/471

succedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
ledeth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/474
proceedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/473

-edys (*see* **-ede is**)

stedys, *nom. pl.*
nede is, 70/249
spede is, 70/250

-ee (*see* **-e** and **-ie**)

Almandtree, *obj.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 212/158
fertilitee, *obl.* 212/159
Almauntree, *obl.*
chiritree, *obj.* 194/201
he, *pron.* 194/198
Amynee, *a. pl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 64/88
three, *num. adj.* 64/89
asperitee, *obl.*
be, *subj.* 86/709
tree, *obl.* 86/711
auctoritee, *nom.*
jocunditee, *obl.* 101/1121
beautee, *obj.*
qualitee, *obl.* 133/786
beautee, *obl.*
densitee, *obl.* 133/794
see, *inf.* 133/797
bee, *nom. sing.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 155/172
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 218/319
se, *inf.* 218/320
slee, *inf.* 155/173
bee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 39/1063
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 173/61
perytree, *obj.* 173/58
bee, *obl.*
flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/166
se, *inf.* 146/167
chastitee, *obl.*
tree, *nom.* 9/230
chiritree, *obj.*
Almauntree, *obl.* 194/200
he, *pron.* 194/198
Chiritree, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 102/1148
tree, *obj.* 194/213
citurtree, *obl.*
felicitee, *obl.* 166/52
contumacitee, *obj.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 128/690
propretee, *obl.* 128/688
countree, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 79/514
densitee, *obj.*
immensitee, *nom.* 56/357
densitee, *obl.*
beautee, *obl.* 133/796
see, *inf.* 133/797
difficultee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 150/23
tree, *obl.* 150/26
eternitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 86/720
eternytee, *obj.*
fertilitee, *obl.* 121/475
extremitee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 119/439
se, *inf.* 119/438
fecunditee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 70/255
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 182/81
fertilitee, *obj.* 182/82
felicitee, *nom.*
fecundite, *obl.* 138/935
felicitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 207/4
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/558
citurtree, *obl.* 166/50
fertilitee, *obj.* 124/557
solempnitee, *obl.* 207/2
feracitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 209/67
tree, *nom. sing.* 209/65
fertilitee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 171/11
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/558
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 182/81

*fecunditie, *nom.* 11/282
fecunditee, *obl.* 182/79
felicitee, *obl.* 124/555
se, *inf.* 171/9
fertilitee, *nom. sing.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/86
see, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/88
fertilitee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 11/285
*fecunditie, *nom.* 11/282
fertilitee, *obl.*
Almandtree, *obj.* 212/156
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 212/158
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 65/108
eternytee, *obj.* 121/476
utilitee, *obl.* 79/524
Fig-tree, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 218/310
tree, 218/312
figtree, *obl.*
be, *subj.* 204/489
firmitee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 134/831
naturalitee, *obj.* 134/832
flee, *imper.*
be, *v.* 3 *subj.* 6/148
flee, *inf.*
be, *obl.* 146/181
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 146/175
he, *pron.* 33/898
see, *inf.* 116/350, 146/178
see, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 33/900
flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bee, *obl.* 146/164
be, *v.* 3. *pl. pres.* 174/82
se, *inf.* 146/167
ubertee, *obl.* 174/79
free, *a. sing.*
be, *inf.* 46/74
thre, *num. adj.* 46/72
frigiditee, *nom. sing.*
be, *subj.* 108/121
se, *inf.* 108/123
hillaritee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 135/853
se, *inf.* 135/850
humyditee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 183/111
humyditee, *obl.*
be, *subj.* 95/954
tree, *nom.* 95/956
immensitee, *nom.*
densitee, *obj.* 56/356
iniquitee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 167/86
ubertee, *obj.* 167/88
jocunditee, *obl.*
auctoritee, *nom.* 101/1123
libertee, *obl.*
be, *subj.* 94/937
be, *inf.* 130/727
see, *obl.* 130/726
medietee, *obl.*
subtiltee, *obj.* 197/290
naturalitee, *obj.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 134/831
firmitee, *obl.* 134/829
necessitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 49/136
peretree, *obl.*
be, *imper.* 185/178
perytree, *obj.*
be, *v. subj.* 173/61
bee, *obj.* 173/60
povertee, *obj.*
be, *imper.* 219/333
se, *imper.* 219/334
povertee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 188/39
qualitee, *obl.* 188/40
propretee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 128/690
contumacitee, *obj.* 128/691
propurtee, *obl.*
be, *subj.* 165/26
see, *inf.* 165/25
puritee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 201/406
pynappultree, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 98/1050

qualitee, *obl.*
beautee, *obj.* 133/788
be, *inf.* 86/696, 188/39
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 129/691
povertee, *obl.* 188/37
see, *inf.* 129/692
quantitee, *nom. sing.*
be, *inf.* 168/116
be, *imper.* 192/155
se, *inf.* 220/368
See, *obl.* 168/114
three, *num. adj.* 116/333
tree, *nom.* 79/518
tree, *obl.* 220/369, 116/331
quantitee, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 83/625
be, *subj.* 115/323, 198/310
se, *inf.* 83/627
quantitee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 77/466
fle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 201/397
se, *inf.* 198/313
se, *imper.* 77/467
be, *imper.* 201/396
rotunditee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 133/801
ye, *pron.* 133/804
see, *imper.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 149/16
the, *pron.* 109/152
three, *num. adj.* 149/18
see, *inf.*
beautee, *obl.* 133/796
be, *inf.* 104/9, 135/853
be, *obl.* 146/181
be, *subj.* 165/26
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 129/691
densitee, *obl.* 133/794
flee, *inf.* 116/349, 146/180
hillaritee, *obl.* 135/852
propurtee, *obl.* 165/23
qualitee, *obl.* 129/689
see, *obl.* 159/22
tree, *obj.* 104/12
tree, *obl.* 126/615
see, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 120/445, 130/727, 168/116, 184/142
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 149/8, 171/2
he, *pron.* 183/115
libertee, *obl.* 130/724
quantitee, *nom. sing.* 168/117
se, *inf.* 171/5
see, *inf.* 159/24
thee, *pron.* 120/446
three, *adj. pl.* 153/132
utilitee, *obj.* 184/144
see, *imper.*
be, *subj.* 109/149
he, *pron.* 33/898
flee, *inf.* 33/901
the, *pron.* 109/152
see, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/86
fertilitee, *nom. sing.* 174/89
see, *v.* 3 *sing. pres. subj.*
be, *pp.* 20/543
the, *pron.* 20/544
slee, *inf.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 155/172
bee, *nom. sing.* 155/170
solempnitee, *obj.*
be, *v.* 3 *pres. pl.* 104/4
se, *inf.* 104/5
solempnitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 207/4
felicitee, *obl.* 207/5
subtiltee, *obj.*
medietee, *obl.* 197/288
summitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 112/242
se, *inf.* 112/243
thee, *pron.*
be, *inf.* 120/445
se, *inf.* 214/208
see, *obl.* 120/443
summyte, *obl.* 214/205
three, *num. adj.*
Amynee, *a. pl.* 64/86
be, *imper.* 200/377

be, *subj.* 72/326, 88/761, 90/818, 153/110
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 47/94, 64/88, 67/179
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 142/67
quantitee, *nom. sing.* 116/334
se, *imper.* 196/252
see, *obl.* 153/133
tree, *nom.* 67/180
tree, *obl.* 72/327, 88/760, 116/331, 153/109, 177/164
three, *obl.*
be *inf.* 34/928
fle, *inf.* 34/929
three (3)
be, 3 *pl. pres.* 149/16
be, *inf.* 185/172
se, *inf.* 185/173
see, *imper.* 149/19
tree, *nom.*
be, *inf.* 58/396, 209/67
be, *subj.* 95/954
chastitee, *obl.* 9/231
feracitee, *obl.* 209/68
humyditee, *obl.* 95/957
quantitee, *nom.* 79/517
se, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 58/397
tree, *obj.*
be, *inf.* 39/1054, 72/305, 104/9, 218/310
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 182/94, 195/236
Chiritree, *obl.* 194/211
Fig-tree, *obj.* 218/313
se, *imper.* 39/1055
se, *inf.* 72/306
se, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 195/235
see, *inf.* 104/11
tree, *obl.*
asperitee, *obl.* 86/712
be, *inf.* 58/392, 68/206, 69/218, 78/487, 87/729, 88/771, 92/878, 117/361, 121/486, 122/521, 150/23, 162/109, 189/63, 198/329
be, *subj.* 72/326, 86/709, 88/761, 96/982, 97/1010, 108/115, 153/110
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 120/465, 126/633, 127/646, 161/94, 195/222, 195/229, 215/237, 215/242
be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 73/353, 128/684, 147/197, 190/80, 203/459
difficultee, *obl.* 150/25
extremyte, *obl.* 215/243
he, *pron.* 127/648, 195/228, 195/221
quantitee, *nom. sing.* 116/334, 220/367
se, *imper.* 96/984, 117/362, 203/460, 162/110
se, *inf.* 220/368
see, *inf.* 126/616
the, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 97/1012
three, *num. adj.* 72/324, 88/758, 116/333, 153/107, 177/162
unytee, *obl.* 128/681
utilitee, *nom.* 78/485
ubertee, *obj.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 167/86
iniquitee, *obl.* 167/89
ubertee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/82
flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/81
be, *inf.* 64/105
unytee, *obl.*
be, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 128/684
tree, *obl.* 128/683
utilitee, *nom.*
be, *inf.* 78/487, 184/142
tree, *obl.* 78/488
utilitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 131/740
fertilitee, *obl.* 79/525
see, *obl.* 184/145
the *art.* 131/741
virginitee, *obl.*
be, *inf.* 9/228
se, *inf.* 9/226

-eed (*see* **-ed, -ede, and -eede**)

heed, *adj. sing.*
  leed, *obl.* 116/337
heed, *obl.*
  *led, *pp.* 177/165
  *leede, *obl.* 177/163
leed, *obl.*
  heed, *adj. sing.* 116/339
need, *nom.*
  *drede, *obl.* 10/264
  *sede, *inf.* 10/263
reed, *nom.*
  speed, *nom.* 85/691
  threed, *obl.* 85/690
speed, *nom.*
  *seede, *obl.* 96/988
speed, *nom.*
  reed, *nom.* 85/688
  threed, *obl.* 85/690
threed, *obl.*
  reed, *nom.* 85/688
  speed, *nom.* 85/691

-eede (*see* **-ed, -ede, and -eed**)

heede, *obj.*
  sede, *inf.* 151/71
heede, *obl.*
  reede, *obl.* 111/197
leede, *obl.*
  *heed, *obl.* 177/166
  *led, *pp.* 177/165
reede, *obl.*
  heede, *obl.* 111/199
seede, *inf.*
  brede, *obl.* 182/102
  drede, *inf.* 182/100
  fede, *imper.* 217/282
  lede, *inf.* 217/285
seede, *obl.*
  *speed, *nom.* 96/990
weede, *imper.*
  drede, *nom. sing.* 141/29
  rede, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 192/159
  sprede, *inf.* 192/158
weede, *inf.*
  nede, *a. sing.* 62/33
  sprede, *inf.* 62/30

-eede is (*see* **-edes**)

seede is
  sedes, *nom. pl.* 51/211

-eedes (*see* **-ede is** and **-eed is**)

seedes, *nom. pl.*
  dede is, 53/270
  need is, 53/271
weedes *nom. pl.*
  drede is, 46/77

-eedeth (*see* **-edeth**)

proceedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
  ledeth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/474
  succedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/471

-eed is (*see* **-ede is, -eedes,** and **-eedys**)

need is
  dede is, 53/270
  seedes, *nom. pl.* 53/268
  seedys, *obj.* 151/70

-eedys (*see* **-ede is** and **-eed is**)

seedys, *obj.*
  dede is, 184/161
  need is, 151/69

-eef (*see* **-eefe** and **-ief**)

breef, *adj. sing.*
  leef, *adj. sing.* 129/687
leef, *adj. sing.*
  breef, *adj. sing.* 129/686
preef, *obl.*
  bonchief, *obl.* 5/115
  bonechief, *obl.* 69/228
  *breefe, *adv.* 69/226

-eefe (*see* -eef and -ief)

breefe, *adv.*
*bonechief, *obl.* 69/228
*preef, *obl.* 69/229

-eek (*see* -eke)

eek, *conj.*
greek, *nom. sing.* 181/71
leek, *nom.* 143/102
greek, *nom. sing.*
eek, *conj.* 181/73
*eke, *conj.* 101/1141
leek, *nom.*
eek, *conj.* 143/100
meek, *adj. pl.*
seek, *inf.* 129/697
seek, *adj. pl.*
*seke, *inf.* 215/230
seek, *inf.*
meek, *adj. pl.* 129/695
speek, *inf.*
*breke, *inf.* 126/627
*steke, *pp.* 126/625

-eeke (*see* -eke)

greeke, *obj.*
eke, *adv.* 199/346

-eel (*see* -ell)

eel, *obj.*
weel, *adv.* 17/436
*well, *adv.* 17/439
weel, *adv.*
eel, *obj.* 17/438
*well, *adv.* 17/439.

-een (*see* -eene and -en)

atween, *adv.*
*clene, *adv.* 54/289
*fiftene (XV^ne^), *adj. pl.* 54/292
fleen, *nom. pl.*
*men, *nom. pl.* 34/914
*slen, *inf.* 34/912

seen, *pp.*
eighteen, *adj. pl.* 48/114
*seventene (XVII^ne^), *a. pl.* 48/117

-eene (*see* -ene)

demeene, *obl.*
lene, *a. sing.* 63/58
sustene, *inf.* 63/61
greene, *a. pl.*
bydene, *adv.* 8/184
clene, *adv.* 58/388
sustene, *inf.* 8/186
leene, *a. pl.*
clene, *adv.* 46/54
serene, *a. pl.* 46/53
leene, *a. sing.*
atwene, *prep.* 68/203
clene, *adv.* 64/82
lene, *adv.* 48/123
meene, *a. sing.* 64/81
meene, *obj.* 48/124
meene, *a. sing.*
clene, *adv.* 64/82
leene, *a. sing.* 64/79
meene, *obj.*
leene, *a. sing.* 48/121
lene, *adv.* 48/123

-eep (*see* -epe)

creep, *inf.*
deep, *adv.* 87/727
keep, *inf.* 127/652
creep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
deep, *a. pl.* 47/86
deep, *adj. sing.* 111/191
*kepe, *imper.* 47/88
*kepe, *inf.* 111/194
deep, *adj. pl.*
*bywepe, *inf.* 16/425
creep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 47/89
*kepe, *inf.* 16/424
*kepe, *imper.* 47/88
deep, *adj. sing.*
creep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 111/193
*kepe, *inf.* 111/194
steep, *adj. pl.* 133/800

deep, *adv.*
creep, *inf.* 87/728
*crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 109/158
*kepe, *inf.* 95/973, 109/156
steep, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/478
weep, *inf.* 121/481
deep, *imper.*
steep, *inf.* 117/378
keep, *imper.*
weep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 138/938
keep, *inf.*
creep, *inf.* 127/654
steep, *adj. pl.*
deep, *adj. pl.* 133/802
steep, *imper.*
*kepe, *imper.* 90/812
steep, *inf.*
deep, *imper.* 117/377
steep, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
deep, *adv.* 121/480
weep, *inf.* 121/481
weep, *inf.*
deep, *adv.* 121/480
steep, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/478
weep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
keep, *imper.* 138/939

-eepe (*see* -epe)

keepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
shepe, *obj.* 167/99
steepe, *inf.*
crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 56/343

-eepeth (*see* -epeth)

keepeth, 3 *sing. pres.*
hepeth, *imper.* 105/34

-eer (*see* -ere)

cheer, *obl.*
populeer, *obl.* 195/225
Feveryeer, *obl.*
Janyveer, *obl.* 185/174, 215/218
neer, *adv.*
Janyveer, *obl.* 105/48
Octobeer, *obl.* 186/218
Janyveer, *obl.*
*clere, *a. pl.* 56/335
Feveryeer, *obl.* 185/175, 215/220
*Feveryere, *obl.* 50/178
heer, *adv.* 105/49
weer, *v.* 3 *past sing.* 210/87
Octobeer, *obl.*
heer, *adv.* 186/216
populeer, *obl.*
cheer, *obl.* 195/227
weer, *v.* 3 *past sing.*
Janyveer, *obl.* 210/85

-ees (*see* -ese)

doutelees, *adv.*
*encrese, *inf.* 155/169
thees, *pron.*
*lese, *inf.* 35/948

-eese (*see* -ese)

ceese, *inf.*
encrese, *nom. sing.* 143/91

-eest (*see* -est and -este)

beest, *obl.*
*enfeste, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 33/891
*kest, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 33/894
feest, *obl.*
leest, *adj. pl.* 146/190
leest, *adj. pl.*
feest, *obl.* 146/189

-eeste (*see* -este)

beeste, *nom. sing.*
*meste, *adj. pl.* 137/898

-eestes (*see* -estes, -eest is, and -est is).

beestes, *obj.*
*drestes, *obl.* 35/944
feest is, 62/39
honest is, 43/1165
*kest is, 62/40

-eest is (*see* **-eestes, -estes,** and **-est is**)
feest is,
beestes, *obj.* 62/37
*bestes, *obj.* 18/485
*kest is, 62/40
unleest is, 18/487
leest is,
*bestes, *obl.* 20/519
unleest is,
*bestes, *obj.* 18/485
leest is, 18/488

-eet (*see* **-eete** and **-ete**)
geet, *inf.*
greet, *adj. pl.* 85/681, 165/36
greet, *inf.* 85/683
weet, *adj. pl.* 142/56
geet, *nom. sing.*
*gete, *inf.* 129/678
greet, *adj.* 129/675
greet, *adj. pl.*
geet, *inf.* 165/38, 85/684
*gete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 134/837
greet, *inf.* 85/683, 120/454
heet, *obl.* 150/28
*mete, *imper.* 61/19
*mete, *obl.* 183/128
*sete, *pp.* 120/457
surtreet, *imper.* 120/460
sweet, *inf.* 61/18
*trete, *inf.* 199/350
*weete, *a. pl.* 63/73
*ygete, *pp.* 183/131
greet, *adj. sing.*
meet, *obj.* 165/49
greet, *adv.*
geet, *nom. sing.* 129/677
*gete, *imper.* 136/873
*gete, *inf.* 129/678
*hete, *obl.* 93/915
*trete, *inf.* 136/874, 213/185
*trete, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 93/914
greet, *inf.*
geet, *inf.* 85/684
greet, *adj. pl.* 85/683 120/455
heet, *obl.*
greet, *adj. pl.* 150/27
meet, *obj.*
greet, *adj. sing.* 165/48
surtreet, *imper.*
greet, *adj. pl.* 120/459
*sete, *pp.* 120/457
sweet, *adj. pl.*
*meete, *adj. sing.* 198/318
sweet, *inf.*
greet, *a. pl.* 61/16
*mete, *imper.* 61/19
weet, *adj. pl.*
geet, *inf.* 142/57

-eete (*see* **-ede, -eet,** and **-ete**)
greete, *adj. pl.*
eete, *pp.* 123/553
gete, *inf.* 59/425
heete, *inf.* 44/6
swete, *inf.* 59/424
wete, *imper.* 212/146
eete, *pp.*
greete, *adj. pl.* 123/552
heete, *inf.*
greete, *a. pl.* 44/7
heete, *obl.*
gete, *inf.* 124/581
swete, *inf.* 156/201
trete, *inf.* 156/200
meete, *obj.*
ete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 99/1077
meete, *adj. sing.*
*sweet, *adj. pl.* 198/316
sweete, *adj. sing.* 197/295
swete, *adj. sing.* 199/335
meete, *adj. pl.*
swete, *adj. pl.* 172/43
seete, *adj. pl.*
unsweete, *adj. sing.* 174/84
sweete, *adj. sing.*
meete, *adj. sing.* 197/297
sete, *a. sing.* 59/420
wete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/479
sweete, *inf.*
swete, *a. pl.* 55/315

unsweete, *adj. sing.*
seete, *adj. pl.* 174/83
weete, *adj. pl.*
bete, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 210/101
*greet, *a. pl.* 63/71
weete, *adj. sing.*
*dede, *nom. sing.* 191/131
*fede, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 191/130
mete, *a. sing.* 49/158
mete, *inf.* 49/159
weete, *inf.*
*lete, *inf.* 81/577

-eeth

beeth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
deeth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 120/464
seeth, *v.* 3. *sing. pres.* 120/467

-eett (*see* **-ette**)

greett, *adj.*
*sette, *pp.* 115/209

-efte (*see* **-afte**)

efte, *adv.*
lefte, *pp.* 18/483, 142/52, 142/55
lefte, *pp.*
*crafte, *obj.* 75/401
efte, *adv.* 18/482, 142/52, 142/55
*shafte, *obj.* 75/404

-egges

dregges, *obj.*
legges, *obl.* 88/759
legges, *obl.*
dregges, *obj.* 88/757

-eght (*see* **-est**)

streght, *adj. sing.*
*brest, *nom. sing.* 129/681

-ey (*see* **-ai**)

cley, *a. sing.*
they, *pron.* 97/1005
sey, *inf.* 97/1006
cley, *obl.*
ley, *inf.* 89/802, 92/889
they, *pron.* 89/803
gey, *inf.*
obey, *inf.* 188/47
they, *pron.* 188/44
ley, *inf.*
cley, *obl.* 89/800, 92/888
they, *pron.* 19/803
obey, *inf.*
gey, *inf.* 188/46
they, *pron.* 188/44
sey, *inf.*
cley, *a.* 97/1003
they, *pron.* 97/1005
they, *pron.*
cley, *obl.* 89/800
cley, *a. sing.* 97/1003
gey, *inf.* 188/46
ley, *inf.* 89/802
obey, *inf.* 188/47
sey, *inf.* 97/1006
twey, *a. pl.*
thai, *pron.* 50/171

-eye (*see* **-ie**)

deye, 3 *pl. pres.*
trie, 3 *pl. pres.* 84/639
multiplie, *inf.* 84/641
eye, *nom.*
crie, *subj.* 154/156
drie, *a.* 154/158
plie, *imper.* 104/18
wrie, *imper.* 104/19
eye, *obj.*
die, *inf.* 22/600
drie, *adj. sing.* 149/13
maladie, *nom.* 22/599
multiplie, *inf.* 80/543, 127/650
trie, *inf.* 80/544
theye, *obl.* (the eye)
caprifie, *inf.* 161/86
pie, 3 *pl. pres.* 161/89

-eight

weight, *obj.*
*dight, *pp.* 41/1123

-eine, -eyne (*see* -ayne)

ayeine, *adv.*
  greyne, *obj.* 179/7
  reyne, *obl.* 77/442
bareyne, *a. sing.*
  tweyne, *a. pl.* 167/83
bareyne, *a. pl.*
  refreyne, *imper.* 22/581
byspreyne, *inf.*
  tweyne, *num. a.* 106/69
compleyne, 3 *pl. pres.*
  tweyne, *a. pl.* 73/337
distreyne, *inf.*
  engreyne, *imper.* 16/418
  greyne, *obl.* 16/417
greyne, *obj.*
  ayeine, *adv.* 179/6
greyne, *obl.*
  distreyne, *inf.* 16/415
  engreyne, *imper.* 16/418
refreyne, *imper.*
  bareyne, *a. pl.* 22/580
reyne, *subj.*
  spreyne, *subj.* 192/161
reyne, *obl.*
  ayeine, *adv.* 77/444
spreyne, *subj.*
  reyne, *subj.* 192/160
streyne, *inf.*
  treyne, *subj.* 70/271
  tweyne, *num. a.* 70/270
treyne, *subj.*
  streyne, *inf.* 70/268
  tweyne, *a. pl.* 70/270
tweyne, *a. pl.*
  bareyne, *a. sing.* 167/84
  byspreyne, *inf.* 106/70
  compleyne, 3 *pl. pres.* 73/339
  streyne, *inf.* 70/268
  treyne, *subj.* 70/271
veyne, *nom.*
  *complayne, *inf.* 175/112

-eir (*see* -eire)

feir, *adj. pl.*
  *appeire, *inf.* 62/41

-eire (*see* -ayer, -aire, -eir, and -iere)

appeire, *inf.*
  *feir, *a. pl.* 62/42
eire, *obl.*
  *dispaire, *obl.* 39/1071
  leire, *obl.* 3/52
feire, *a. pl.*
  *ayer, *nom.* 86/702
  leire, *nom.* 86/704
  peire, *inf.* 180/28
feire, *adv.*
  *ayer, *obl.* 114/298
  *dispiere, *inf.* 86/719
  leire, *nom. sing.* 114/299
  peire, *obj.* 95/963
  peire, *inf.* 95/964
  repeire, *inf.* 86/718
leire, *nom.*
  *ayer, *nom.* 86/702
  *ayer, *obl.* 114/298
  feire, *a. pl.* 86/705
  feire, *adv.* 114/296
leire, *obl.*
  eire, *obl.* 3/50
peire, *inf.*
  feire, *adj. pl.* 180/27
  feire, *adv.* 95/961
  peire, *obj.* 95/963
peire, *obj.*
  feire, *adv.* 95/961
  peire, *inf.* 95/964
repeire, *inf.*
  *dispiere, *inf.* 86/719
  feire, *adv.* 86/716

-eyve

conceyve, *inf.*
  deceyve, *inf.* 99/1068
  receyve, *subj.* 99/1069
deceyve, *inf.*
  conceyve, *inf.* 99/1066
  receyve, *subj.* 99/1069
receyve, *subj.*
  conceyve, *inf.* 99/1066
  deceyve, *inf.* 99/1068

-eiveth, -eyveth

conceyveth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
deceiveth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 135/845
weyveth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 135/846
deceiveth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
conceyveth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 135/843
weyveth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 135/846
weyveth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
conceyveth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 135/843
deceiveth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 135/845

-ek (*see* **eke**)

Greek, *nom.*
*eke, *conj.* 101/1141

-eke (*see* **-eek, -eeke,** and **-ike**)

breke, *inf.*
leke, *inf.* 150/33
*speek, *inf.* 126/628
speke, *inf.* 27/734
steke, *pp.* 126/625, 150/32
cheke, *obl.*
seke, *inf.* 193/177
seke, *v.* 3 *sing. subj.* 193/179
eke, *conj.*
*Greek, *nom.* 101/1140
greeke, *obj.* 199/344
meke, *adj. pl.* 214/192
reke, *inf.* 8/194
seke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 8/193
leke, *inf.*
breke, *inf.* 150/30
steke, *pp.* 150/32
meke, *adj. pl.*
eke, *conj.* 214/190
reke, *inf.*
eke, *conj.* 8/191
seke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 8/193
reke, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
smeke, *nom. sing.* 160/69
seke, *adj. sing.*
*pike, *inf.* 137/907
seke, *inf.*
cheke, *obl.* 193/180
*seek, *adj. pl.* 215/231
seke, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 193/179
seke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
eke, *conj.* 8/191
reke, *inf.* 8/194
seke, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
cheke, *obl.* 193/180
seke, *inf.* 193/177
smeke, *nom. sing.*
reke, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 160/70
speke, *inf.*
breke, *inf.* 27/735
steke, *pp.*
breke, *inf.* 126/627, 150/30
leke, *inf.* 150/33
*speek, *inf.* 126/628

-el (*see* **-ele**)

aisel, *obl.*
*dele, *nom. sing.* 205/516
vessel, *obl.* 169/145
wel, *adv.* 169/142, 205/515, 211/133
gravel, *obl.*
wel, *adv.* 14/378
vessel, *obl.*
aisel, *obl.* 169/144
wel, *adv.* 169/142
wel, *adv.*
aisel, *obl.* 169/144, 205/513, 211/132
*dele, *nom. sing.* 205/516
gravel, *obl.* 14/377
vessel, *obl.* 169/145

-eld (*see* **-elde**)

yeld, *pp.*
*felde, *nom. sing.* 207/15

-elde (*see* **-eld**)

felde, *nom. sing.*
*yeld, *pp.* 207/17
felde, *obj.*
foryelde, *inf.* 12/311

foryelde, *inf.*
felde, *obj.* 12/309

-elde is (*see* -eldys).

yelde is,
feldys, *obl.* 9/217

-eldys (*see* -elde is)

feldys, *obl.*
yelde is, 9/216

-eldron (*see* -ildren)

eldron, *nom.*
children, *obl.* 26/713
eldron, *obl.*
children, *nom.* 6/126

-ele (*see* -el)

congele, *imper.*
hele, *inf.* 137/918
dele, *inf.*
fele, *adj. pl.* 201/393
mele, *adv.* 66/148
dele, *nom. sing.*
*aisel, *obl.* 205/513
*wel, *adv.* 205/515
fele, *adj. pl.*
dele, *inf.* 201/395
fele, *adv.*
stele, *obj.* 209/77
hele, *inf.*
congele, *imper.* 137/917
mele, *adv.*
dele, *inf.* 66/150
stele, *obj.*
fele, *adj.* 209/76

-ele is (*see* -eles)

hele is,
sceles, *obj.* 32/881

-eles (*see* -ele is)

sceles, *obj.*
hele is, 32/882

-elf (*see* -elve)

self, *pron.*
*overwhelve, *inf.* 7/161

-ell (*see* -eel)

Averell, *obl.*
well, *adv.* 140/6
catell, *obl.*
well, *adv.* 36/994
everidell, *adv.*
well, *adv.* 83/617
fenestell, *obl.*
well, *adv.* 20/546
vessell, *obl.*
well, *adv.* 121/490
well, *adv.*
Averell, *obl.* 140/8
catell, *obl.* 36/993
*eel, *obj.* 17/438
everidell, *adv.* 83/619
fenestell, *obl.* 20/545
vessell, *obl.* 121/489
*weel, *adv.* 17/436

-elle

awelle, *obl.*
dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 86/698
felle, *a. pl.* 86/697
belle, *obj.*
dwelle, *inf.* 82/599
swelle, *inf.* 82/597
Columelle, *nom.*
dwelle, *inf.* 83/624, 84/664, 189/73
dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 108/106
quelle, *inf.* 100/1090
selle, *imper.* 100/1089
shelle, *obl.* 24/645
smelle, *inf.* 58/402
telle, *inf.* 111/209, 179/14
telle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 72/318
dwelle, *inf.*
belle, *obj.* 82/600
Columelle, *nom.* 83/626, 84/665, 189/71

melle, *imper.* 92/866
propelle, *imper.* 38/1034
quelle, *imper.* 92/865
selle, *imper.* 90/824
smelle, *inf.* 210/81
swelle, *inf.* 82/597, 152/82
telle, *inf.* 9/232, 63/69, 87/724, 152/79
telle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 210/79
welle, *nom.* 38/1031
welle, *obl.* 90/821
dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
awelle, *obl.* 86/695
Columelle, *nom.* 108/108
felle, *a. pl.* 86/697
quelle, *inf.* 12/304
telle, *inf.* 146/179
felle, *a. pl.*
awelle, *obl.* 86/695
dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 86/698
melle, *imper.*
dwelle, *inf.* 92/863
quelle, *imper.* 92/865
oxymelle, *obl.*
smelle, *inf.* 213/168
propelle, *imper.*
dwelle, *inf.* 38/1033
welle, *nom.* 38/1031
quelle, *inf.*
Columelle, *nom.* 100/1087
dwelle, *inf.* 12/302
selle, *imper.* 100/1089
telle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 46/55
quelle, *imper.*
dwelle, *inf.* 92/863
melle, *imper.* 92/866
rodomelle, *obj.*
smelle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 156/216
selle, *imper.*
dwelle, *inf.* 90/823
welle, *obl.* 90/821
selle, *pp.*
Columelle, *nom.* 100/1087
quelle, *inf.* 100/1090
shelle, *obl.*
Columelle, *nom.* 24/647
welle, *obl.* 146/165
smelle, *inf.*
Columelle, *nom.* 58/400
dwelle, *inf.* 210/82
oxymelle, *obl.* 213/167
swelle, *inf.* 110/188
telle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 210/79
smelle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
rodomelle, *obj.* 156/217
swelle, *inf.*
belle, *obj.* 82/600
dwelle, *inf.* 82/599, 152/81
smelle, *inf.* 110/189
telle, *inf.* 152/79
telle, *inf.*
Columelle, *nom.* 111/210, 179/13
dwelle, *inf.* 9/234, 63/70, 87/722, 152/81
dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/177
swelle, *inf.* 152/82
welle, *nom.* 17/440
telle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
dwelle, *inf.* 210/82
quelle, *inf.* 46/56
smelle, *inf.* 210/81
telle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
Columelle, *nom.* 72/316
welle, *nom.*
dwelle, *inf.* 38/1033
propelle, *imper.* 38/1034
telle, *inf.* 17/441
welle, *obl.*
dwelle, *inf.* 90/823
selle, *imper.* 90/824
shelle, *obl.* 146/163

-elles (*see* **-ell is**)

celles, *obj.*
elles, *adv.* 196/268
hell is, 196/271
elles, *adv.*
celles, *obj.* 196/270
hell is, 196/271

-ell is (*see* **-elles**)

hell is
celles, *obj.* 196/270
elles, *adv.* 196/268

-elve (*see* -elf)

delve, *imper.*
  overwhelve, *inf.* 29/781
  selve, *pron.* 29/782, 30/810, 49/148, 79/498, 217/291
  shelve, 3 *sing. subj.* 217/289
  twelve, *adj. pl.* 30/809
delve, *inf.*
  whelve, *inf.* 175/122
delve, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
  himselve, *pron.* 50/175
  selve, *pron.* 82/582
delve, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*
  selve, *pron.* 3/64, 66/137
  twelve, *adj. pl.* 66/135
himselve, *pron.*
  delve, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 50/174
  umbidelve, *imper.* 115/324, 115/327
overwhelve, *inf.*
  delve, *imper.* 29/779
  *self, *pron.* 7/160
  selve, *pron.* 29/782
  twelve, *adj. pl.* 48/111
selve, *pron.*
  delve, *inf.* 30/807, 217/292
  delve, *imper.* 29/779, 49/150, 79/500
  delve, *v.* 1 *pres. sing.* 82/584
  delve, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 3/66, 66/138
  overwhelve, *inf.* 29/781
  shelve, 3 *sing. pres.* 217/289
  twelve, *adj. pl.* 30/809, 66/135
  umbydelve, *inf.* 94/930
shelve, 3 *sing. subj.*
  selve, *pron.* 217/291
  delve, *inf.* 217/292
twelve, *num. adj.*
  delve, *inf.* 30/807
  delve, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 66/138
  overwhelve, *inf.* 48/112
  selve, *pron.* 30/810, 66/137
umbidelve, *imper.*
  hemselve, *pron.* 115/326
  umbidelve, *imper.* 115/327
umbydelve, *inf.*
  selve, *pron.* 94/931
whelve, *inf.*
  delve, *inf.* 175/120

-em

hem, *pron.*
  hem, *pron.* 25/683, 25/684

-eme

deme, *imper.*
  yeme, *inf.* 4/84
deme, *inf.*
  diademe, *nom. sing.* 163/149
  extreme, *adj. sing.* 163/152
  yeme, *inf.* 163/154
  yeme, *obj.* 173/69
diademe, *nom. sing.*
  deme, *inf.* 163/151
  extreme, *adj. sing.* 163/152
  yeme, *inf.* 163/154
extreme, *adj. sing.*
  deme, *inf.* 163/151
  diademe, *nom. sing.* 163/149
  yeme, *inf.* 163/154
yeme, *inf.*
  deme, *imper.* 4/83
  deme, *inf.* 163/151
  diademe, *nom.* 163/149
  extreme, *adj. sing.* 163/152
yeme, *obj.*
  deme, *inf.* 173/70

-en (*see* een)

hen, *nom.*
  ten, *a. pl.* 25/672
men, *nom.*
  fleen, *obj.* 34/915
  slen, *inf.* 34/912
slen, *inf.*
  fleen, *obj.* 34/915
  men, *nom.* 34/914
ten, *a. pl.*
  hen, *nom.* 25/671
then, *adv.*
  when, *adv.* 96/995

when, *adv.*
then, *adv.* 96/997

-ence (*see* -ense)

diligence, *nom. sing.*
experience, *nom. sing.* 165/46
science, *nom. sing.* 165/47
diligence, *obj.*
dispence, *inf.* 5/112
dispense, *inf.* 194/192
expence, *obj.* 8/185
suspense, *a. sing.* 19/500
diligence, *obl.*
negligence, *obl.* 8/210
dispence, *inf.*
diligence, *obj.* 5/111
expence, *obj.* 7/170
influence, *obl.* 7/173
dispence, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*
sapience, *nom. sing.* 157/236
science, *nom. sing.* 157/238
sentence, *nom. sing.* 157/233
eloquence, *obj.*
prudence, *obl.* 1/1
expence, *obj.*
diligence, *obj.* 8/183
dispence, *inf.* 7/172
influence, *obl.* 7/173
experience, *nom. sing.*
diligence, *nom. sing.* 165/44
science, *nom. sing.* 165/47
fervence, *obl.*
pestilence, *obl.* 203/442
influence, *obl.*
dispence, *inf.* 7/172
expence, *obj.* 7/170
negligence, *obl.*
diligence, *obl.* 8/209
pestilence, *obl.*
fervence, *obl.* 203/444
prudence, *obl.*
eloquence, *obj.* 1/3
sapience, *nom. sing.*
dispence, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 157/235
science, *nom. sing.* 157/238
sentence, *nom. sing.* 157/233
science, *nom. sing.*
diligence, *nom. sing.* 165/44
dispence, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 157/235
experience, *nom. sing.* 165/46
sapience, *nom. sing.* 157/236
sentence, *nom. sing.* 157/233
sentence, *nom. sing.*
dispence, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 157/235
sapience, *nom. sing.* 157/236
science, *nom. sing.* 157/238

-end (*see* ende)

end, *obl.*
*descende, *inf.* 67/189

-endde (*see* -ende)

brendde, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
shende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 154/161

-ende (*see* -enned and -endde)

amende, *imper.*
extende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 6/140
amende, *inf.*
extende, *inf.* 69/244
amende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
defende, *inf.* 207/13
anende, *inf.*
ascende, *inf.* 166/61
ende, *obl.* 158/17
tende, *pp.* 166/60
anende, *adv.*
ascende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 109/135
defende, *inf.* 151/51
descende, *imper.* 109/137
spende, *pp.* 151/53
ascende, *inf.*
anende, *inf.* 166/58
attende, *imper.* 40/1090
descende, *inf.* 214/200
ende, *inf.* 167/102
ende, *obl.* 123/538, 142/58
extende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 71/295
offende, *inf.* 39/1057
spende, *imper.* 214/201

spende, *inf.* 161/83
spende, *pp.* 167/100
tende, *pp.* 166/60
upbende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 40/1087
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
attende, *inf.* 6/127
comprehende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 105/37
defende, *inf.* 46/61
ende, *obl.* 178/205, 215/219
extende, *imper.* 70/269
extende, *inf.* 64/101
extende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 178/207
spende, *inf.* 46/60
spende, *pp.* 105/40
umbywende, *imper.* 215/221
ascende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*
anende, *adv.* 109/138
*brenned, *pp.* 164/14
descende, *imper.* 109/137, 175/115
attende, *imper.*
ascende, *inf.* 40/1089
upbende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 40/1087
attende, *inf.*
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 6/129
Calende, *obl.* 138/943
shende, *inf.* 138/944
attende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
mende, *inf.* 19/510
bende, *pp.*
ende, *obl.* 159/39
wende, *inf.* 159/40
Calende, *obl.*
attende, *inf.* 138/941
shende, *inf.* 138/944
commende, *inf.*
descende, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 45/47
ende, *obl.* 45/44
comprehende, *inf.*
rende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 141/44
comprehende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 105/39
spende, *pp.* 105/40
comprende, *inf.*
condescende, *inf.* 75/397
descende, *inf.* 75/396
spende, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 118/404
suspende, *inf.* 118/401
condescende, *inf.*
comprende, *inf.* 75/394
descende, *inf.* 75/396
ende, *obl.* 171/1
contende, 3 *pl. pr.*
suspende, 3 *pl. pr.* 206/531
defende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
offende, *inf.* 5/97
defende, *imper.*
spende, *imper.* 123/541
thende, *obl.* 123/544
defende, *inf.*
amende, *inf.* 207/14
anende, *adv.* 151/54
ascende, 3 *pl. pres.* 46/58
extende, *imper.* 218/328
spende, *inf.* 46/60
spende, *pp.* 151/53
suspende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 118/392
depende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
ende, *obl.* 168/122
descende, *inf.*
ascende, *inf.* 214/198
comprende, *inf.* 75/394
condescende, *inf.* 75/397
*end, *obl.* 67/188
mende, *inf.* 219/343
spende, *imper.* 214/201
suspende, *inf.* 90/832
descende, *imper.*
anende, *adv.* 109/138
ascende *subj.* 175/113
ascende, *inf.* 109/135
descende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
kalende, *obl.* 112/218
sende, *pp.* 175/126
descende, *subj.*
commende, *inf.* 45/46
ende, *obl.* 45/44
descende, *subj.*
offende, *inf.* 213/189
ende, *inf.*
ascende, *inf.* 167/103
spende, *pp.* 167/100

ende, *nom.*
mende, *inf.* 122/501
spende, *inf.* 122/502
ende, *obl.*
anende, *inf.* 158/15
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pr.* 178/208, 215/222
ascende, *inf.* 124/539, 142/60
bende, *pp.* 159/37
commende, *inf.* 45/46
condescende, *inf.* 171/3
depende *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 168/120
descende, *subj.* 45/47
extende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 178/207
kalende, *obj.* 183/132, 187/2
on-ende, *adv.* 187/5
shende, *inf.* 65/112
spende *inf.* 46/52
spende, *imper.* 203/462
umbywende, *imper.* 215/221
wende, *inf.* 159/40
extende, *pl. pres.*
amende, *v.* 3 *sing. subj.* 6/139
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 178/208
ende, *obl.* 178/205.
extende, *imper.*
ascende, *subj.* 70/267
defende, *inf.* 218/329
extende, *v.* 3 *sing. subj.*
ascende, *inf.* 71/297
extende, *inf.*
amende, *inf.* 69/245
ascende *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 63/99
kalende, *obl.*
descende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 112/220
ende, *obl.* 183/133, 187/4
on-ende, *adv.* 187/5
mende, *inf.*
attende, *subj.* 19/511
descende, *inf.* 219/342
ende, *nom.* 122/499
spende, *inf.* 17/444, 122/502
offende, *inf.*
ascende, *inf.* 39/1056
defende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 5/98
descende, *subj.* 213/188
wende, *pp.* 131/749
on-ende, *adv.*
kalende, *obl.* 187/2
ende, *obl.* 187/4
rende, *imper.*
comprehende, *inf.* 141/46
rende, *pp.*
suspende, *imper.* 125/595
sende, *pp.*
descende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 175/125
shende, *subj.*
brendde, *subj.* 154/160
shende, *inf.*
ende, *obl.* 65/111
shende, *pp.*
attende, *inf.* 138/941
Calende, *obl.* 138/943
spende, *subj.*
comprende, *inf.* 118/403
suspende, *inf.* 118/401
spende, *imper.*
ascende, *inf.* 214/198
defende, *imper.* 123/543
descende, *inf.* 214/200
ende, *obl.* 203/461
thende, *obl.* 123/544
spende, *inf.*
ascende, *inf.* 161/84
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 46/58
defende, *inf.* 46/61
ende, *nom.* 122/499
ende, *obl.* 46/50
mende, *inf.* 17/442, 122/501
spende, *pp.*
anende, *adv.* 151/54
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 105/39
ascende, *inf.* 107/103
comprehende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 105/37
defende, *inf.* 151/51
wende, *pp.* 93/902
suspende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
contende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 206/532
defende, *inf.* 118/391
suspende, *imper.*
rende, 125/594

suspende, *inf.*
comprende, *inf.* 118/403
descende, *inf.* 90/833
spende, *subj.* 118/404
tende, *obj.*
anende, *inf.* 166/58
ascende, *inf.* 166/61
thende, *obl.*
defende, *imper.* 123/543
spende, *imper.* 123/541
umbywende, *imper.*
ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 215/222
ende, *obl.* 215/219
upbende, *subj.*
ascende, *inf.* 40/1089
attende, *inf.* 40/1090
wende, *inf.*
bende, *pp.* 159/37
ende, *obl.* 159/39
wende, *pp.*
offende, *inf.* 131/750
spende, *pp.* 93/903

-ended

amended, *pp.*
extended, *pp.* 11/290
extended, *pp.*
amended, *pp.* 11/288

-ende is (*see* -endes)

spende is
kalendes, *nom. pl.* 185/162

-ender

engender, *inf.*
slender, *a. pl.* 152/95
tender, *a. sing.* 152/93
slender, *a. pl.*
engender, *inf.* 152/96
tender, *a. sing.* 152/93
tender, *a. pl.* 27/729
tender, *a. sing.*
engender, *inf.* 152/96
slender, *a. pl.* 152/95
tender, *a. pl.*
slender, *a. pl.* 27/731

-endes (*see* -ende is)

kalendes, *nom. pl.*
spende is, 185/164

-ene (*see* -eane, -een, -eene)

atwene, *adv.*
leene, *a. sing.* 68/202
lene, *a. sing.* 77/469
bene *nom.*
lene, *a. pl.* 7/158
lene, *a. sing.* 207/21
rene, *obl.* 7/159
bene, *obl.*
clene, *a. sing.* 200/369
stene, *obl.* 200/368
bene, *inf.*
lene, *a. pl.* 91/849
sene, *pp.* 91/851
bene, *pp.*
lene, *a. sing.* 77/449
betwene, *adv.*
grene, *a. pl.* 99/1080
stene, *obl.* 128/666
sustene, *inf.* 99/1083
bydene, *adv.*
clene, *adv.* 118/407
greene, *a. pl.* 8/187
sustene, *inf.* 8/186, 123/540
bytwene, *adv.*
clene, *a. sing.* 73/352
kene, *a. pl.* 73/354
chene, *obl.*
clene, *a. pl.* 42/1140
clene, *a. sing.*
bene, *obl.* 200/366
bytwene, *adv.* 73/355
demene, *imper.* 199/352, 205/502
glene, *imper.* 14/362
kene, *a. pl.* 73/354
lene, *a. sing.* 14/361
sene, *pp.* 176/151
sustene, *inf.* 176/152
stene, *obl.* 205/501
unclene, *a. sing.* 2/35

clene, *a. pl.*
chene, *obl.* 42/1141
demeane, *imper.* 55/325
demene, *imper.* 59/427
grene, *a. sing.* 157/219
sustene, *inf.* 157/221
clene, *adv.*
*atween, *adv.* 54/291
bydene, *adv.* 118/409
demene, *imper.* 19/497, 188/32
fiftene (xv^ne), *a. pl.* 54/292
glene, *inf.* 90/809
greene, *a. pl.* 58/386
grene, *a. pl.* 127/653
leene, *a. sing.* 64/79
leene, *a. pl.* 46/51
lene, *a. sing.* 188/30
lene, *inf.* 90/810
meene, *a. sing.* 64/81
sene, *pp.* 127/656
serene, *a. pl.* 46/53
stene, *obl.* 200/308
demene, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
fiftene (xv), *a. pl.* 139/955, 206/541
sustene, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 139/957
sustene, *inf.* 206/543
demene, *imper.*
clene, *a. sing.* 199/354, 205/499
clene, *a. pl.* 59/426
clene, *adv.* 19/496, 188/33
lene, *adj.* 171/8, 188/30
mene, *obl.* 4/93
stene, *nom. pl.* 202/426
stene, *obl.* 199/355, 205/501
unlene, *adj.* 5/96
demene, *inf.*
lene, *a. sing.* 180/29
dene, *num. a.*
fiftene (xv), *a. pl.* 22/588, 25/673
eightene (xviii), *adj. pl.*
sustene, *inf.* 179/17
fiftene (xv^ne), *adj. pl.*
*atween, *adv.* 54/291
clene, *adv.* 54/289
demene, 3 *pl. pres.* 139/958, 206/544
dene, *a. pl.* 22/587, 25/675
sustene, 3 *pl. pres.* 139/957
sustene, *inf.* 206/543
thirtene (xiii), *adj. pl.* 208/24
glene, *imper.*
clene, *a. sing.* 14/359
lene, *a. sing.* 14/361
glene, *inf.*
clene, *adv.* 90/807
lene, *inf.* 90/810, 123/530
serene, *a. sing.* 123/527
grene, *adj.*
clene, *a. pl.* 157/222
sustene, *inf.* 157/221, 191/133
grene, *a. pl.*
betwene, *adv.* 99/1082
clene, *adv.* 127/655
lene, *a. pl.* 122/522
sene, *pp.* 122/520, 127/656
sustene, *inf.* 99/1083
kene, *a. pl.*
bytwene, *adv.* 73/355
clene, *a. sing.* 73/352
lene, *adj. sing.*
atwene, *adv.* 77/468
bene, *nom.* 207/20
bene, *pp.* 77/451
clene, *a. sing.* 14/359
clene, *adv.* 188/33
demeene, *imper.* 63/60
demene, *imper.* 171/10, 188/32
demene, *inf.* 180/31
glene, *imper.* 14/362
rene, *a. sing.* 3/61
sene, *imper.* 16/410
sustene, *inf.* 63/61
sustene, *imper.* 16/411
unclene, *a. sing.* 3/58
lene, *a. pl.*
bene *nom.* 7/156
bene, *inf.* 91/852
grene, *a. pl.* 122/523
rene, *obl.* 7/159
sene, *pp.* 91/851, 122/520

lene, *adv.*
leene, *a. sing.* 48/121
meene, *obj.* 48/124
lene, *inf.*
clene, *adv.* 90/807
glene, *inf.* 90/809, 123/529
serene, *adj.* 123/527
mene, *obj.*
demene, *imper.* 5/95
unlene, *a. sing.* 5/96
mene, 3 *s. pres.*
unclene, *a. pl.* 113/272
rene, *a. sing.*
lene, *a. sing.* 3/60
unclene, *a. sing.* 3/58
rene, *obl.*
bene, *nom.* 7/156
lene *a. pl.* 7/158
sene, *imper.*
lene, *a. sing.* 16/408
sustene, 16/411
sene, *pp.*
bene, *inf.* 91/852
clene, *adv.* 127/655
clene, *a. sing.* 176/149
grene, *a. pl.* 127/653, 122/523
lene, *a. pl.* 91/849, 122/522
sustene, *inf.* 176/152
serene, *a. sing.*
glene, *inf.* 123/529
lene, *inf.* 123/530
serene, *a. pl.*
clene, *adv.* 46/54
leene, *a. pl.* 46/51
seventene (XVII[ne]), *adj. pl.*
*eighteen, *adj. pl.* 48/114
*seen, *pp.* 48/116
syngrene, *obl.*
wene, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 31/854
stene, *n. pl.*
demene, *imper.* 202/427
stene, *obl.*
bene, *obl.* 200/366
betwene, *adv.* 128/668
clene, *a. sing.* 199/354, 200/369, 205/499
demene, *imper.* 199/352, 205/502
sustene, 3 *s. pres.*
demene, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 139/958
fiftene (XV), *a. pl.* 139/955
sustene, *imper.*
lene *a. sing.* 16/408
sene, *imper.* 16/410
sustene, *inf.*
betwene, *adv.* 99/1082
bydene, *adv.* 8/184, 123/542
clene, *a. sing.* 176/149
clene, *a. pl.* 157/222
demeene, *imper.* 63/60
demene, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 206/544
eightene (XVIII), *adj. pl.* 179/15
fiftene (XV), *adj. pl.* 206/541
greene, *a. pl.* 8/187
grene, *a. sing.* 157/219, 191/132
grene, *a. pl.* 99/1080
lene, *a. sing.* 63/58
sene, *pp.* 176/151
thirtene (XIII), *adj. pl.*
fiftene (XV), *adj. pl.* 208/22
unclene, *a. sing.*
clene, *a. sing.* 2/34
demene, *imper.* 5/95
mene, *obl.* 4/93
lene, *a. sing.* 3/60
rene, *a. sing.* 3/61
unclene, *a. pl.*
mene, 3 *s. pres.* 113/273
wene, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
syngrene, *obl.* 31/853

-ened

abstened, *pp.*
tened, *pp.* 130/725
tened, *pp.*
abstened, *pp.* 130/723

-enger (*see* -onger)

lenger, *adv.*
*stronger, *a. sing.* 41/1108
*unstronger, *a. pl.* 41/1110

-engeth (*see* **-ingeth**)

mengeth, *imper.*
springeth, 3 *s. pres.* 32/876

-enght

lenght, *obl.*
strenght, *obl.* 47/87
strenght, *obl.*
lenght, *obl.* 47/85

-enn (*see* **-enne**)

thenn, *adv.*
*penne, *nom.* 140/2
*renne, *inf.* 140/7
*thenne, *adv.* 140/5

-enne (*see* **-enn**)

brenne, *subj.*
renne, *inf.* 33/887
thenne, *adv.* 33/886
brenne, *inf.*
renne, *inf.* 84/644, 141/38, 172/24
thenne, *adv.* 141/40
kenne, *inf.*
whenne, *adv.* 126/636
penne, *nom.*
renne, *inf.* 140/7
*thenn, *adv.* 140/4
thenne, *adv.* 140/5
penne, *obl.*
renne, *imper.* 177/184
thenne, *adv.* 177/187, 218/325
renne, *imper.*
penne, *obl.* 177/186
thenne, *adv.* 177/187
renne, *subj.*
thenne, *adv.* 185/188
renne, *inf.*
brenne, *inf.* 84/643, 141/41, 172/22
brenne, *subj.* 33/884
penne, *nom.* 140/2
*thenn, *adv.* 140/4
thenne, *adv.* 16/419, 33/886, 140/5, 141/40
thenne, *adv.*
brenne, *subj.* 33/884
brenne, *inf.* 141/41
penne, *nom.* 140/2
penne, *obl.* 177/186, 218/323
renne, *imper.* 177/184
renne, *subj.* 185/189
renne, *inf.* 16/420, 33/887, 140/7, 141/38
*thenn, *adv.* 140/4
whenne, *adv.*
kenne, *inf.* 126/637

-enned (*see* **-ende**)

brenned, *pp.*
*ascende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 164/13

-ennes

pennes, *n. pl.*
thennes, *adv.* 21/549
thennes, *adv.*
pennes, *n. pl.* 21/547

-ense (*see* **-ence**)

dispense, *inf.*
diligence, *obj.* 194/190
suspense, *a. sing.*
diligence, *obj.* 19/498

-ent (*see* **-ente**)

abstinent, *a. sing.*
relent, *pp.* 137/908
shent, *a. pl.* 137/909
adolent, *a. sing.*
diligent, *a. sing.* 105/32
sarment, *obj.* 105/33
assent, *obl.*
unguent, *obl.* 109/147
bent, *subj.*
promynent, *a. sing.* 15/380
shent, *pp.* 15/383
blent, *pp.*
luculent, *a. pl.* 186/191
shent, *pp.* 186/193

brent, *pp.*
sarment, *obl.* 201/386
tegument, *obj.* 104/20
circumferent, *a. sing.*
convenient, *a. sing.* 151/58
hent, *inf.* 151/60
condyment, *inf.*
ferment, *obj.* 205/524
condyment, *obj.*
pigment, *obj.* 155/167
condyment, *obl.*
fundament, *nom.* 220/353
convenient, *a. sing.*
circumferent, *a. sing.* 151/61
*entente, *nom.* 68/192
hent, *inf.* 151/60
*relente, *pp.* 16/412
descent, *obj.*
librament, *obj.* 175/131
*pestilente, *a. sing.* 175/128
diligent, *a. sing.*
adolent, *a. sing.* 105/30
entent, *obl.* 100/1111
experient, *a. sing.* 47/95
hent, *pp.* 80/542
instrument, *nom.* 130/718
medicament, *obl.* 110/1110
negligent, *a. sing.* 137/904
sarment, *obj.* 105/33
went, *obl.* 47/96
diligent, *a. pl.*
entent, *obl.* 142/71
diligent, *adv.*
silent, *a. pl.* 137/919
entent, *obl.*
diligent, *a. sing.* 47/93, 100/1108
diligent, *a. pl.* 142/70
loment, *obl.* 200/370
medicament, *obl.* 100/1110
experient, *a. sing.*
went, *obl.* 47/96
experiment, *obl.*
insolent, *a. sing.* 209/57
ferment, *obj.*
condyment, *inf.* 205/525
fundament, *nom.*
condyment, *obl.* 220/351
hent, *inf.*
circumferent, *a. sing.* 151/61
convenient, *a. sing.* 151/58
instrument, *obj.* 42/1149
hent, *pp.*
diligent, *a. sing.* 80/540
impediment, *obj.* 72/328
pestilent, *a. sing.* 203/448
impediment, *obl.*
sarment, *obj.* 101/1125
succedent, *obj.* 101/1124
impediment, *obj.*
hent, *pp.* 72/329
increment, *nom.*
shent, *pp.* 8/188
insolent, *a. sing.*
experiment, *obl.* 209/59
instrument, *nom.*
diligent, *a. sing.* 130/716
instrument, *obj.*
hent, *inf.* 42/1151
scyment, *inf.* 177/183
jugement, *obj.*
*entente, *nom.* 178/215
librament, *obj.*
*pestilente, *a. sing.* 175/128
descent, *obj.* 175/130
loment, *obl.*
entent, *obl.* 200/371
luculent, *a. pl.*
shent, *pp.* 186/193
blent, *pp.* 186/194
lynyment, *obl.*
sarment, *obl.* 202/441
medicament, *obl.*
diligent, *a. sing.* 100/1108
entent, *obl.* 100/1111
negligent, *a. sing.*
diligent *a. sing.* 137/903
negligent, *a. pl.*
went, *inf.* 44/20
pavyment, *obl.*
*brente, *pp.* 33/904
pestilent, *a. sing.*
hent, *pp.* 203/447
pestilent, *a. pl.*
violent, *a. pl.* 12/308

pigment, *obj.*
condyment, *obj.* 155/168
promynent, *a. sing.*
bent, *subj.* 15/382
shent, *pp.* 15/383
relent, *imper.*
sarment, *obl.* 102/1144
relent, *pp.*
abstinent, *a. sing.* 137/906
shent, *pp.* 137/909
sarment, *obj.*
adolent, *a. sing.* 105/30
diligent, *a. sing.* 105/32
impediment, *obl.* 101/1122
relent, *imper.* 102/1142
succedent, *obj.* 101/1124
sarment, *obl.*
bent, *pp.* 201/388
lynyment, *obl.* 202/440
turment, *obj.* 65/119
scyment, *inf.*
instrument, *obj.* 177/185
shent, *pp.*
abstinent, *a. sing.* 137/906
bent, *subj.* 15/382
blent, *pp.* 186/194
increment, *nom.* 8/189
luculent, *a. pl.* 186/191
promynent, *a. sing.* 15/380
relent, *pp.* 137/908
silent, *a. pl.*
deligent, *adv.* 137/921
succedent, *obj.*
impediment, *obl.* 101/1122
sarment, *obj.* 101/1125
superfluent, *a. sing.*
uphent, *pp.* 204/475
tegument, *obj.*
tobrent, *pp.* 104/21
turment, *obj.*
sarment, *obl.* 65/118
unguent, *obl.*
assent, *obl.* 109/146
uphent, *pp.*
superfluent, *a. sing.* 204/476
violent, *a. pl.*
pestilent, *a. pl.* 12/307
went, *inf.*
negligent, *a. pl.* 44/21
went, *obl.*
diligent, *a. sing.* 47/93
experient, *a. sing.* 47/95

-ente (*see* -ent)

brente, *pp.*
*pavyment, *obl.* 33/906
contente, *inf.*
shente, *pp.* 166/63
entente, *nom.*
*convenient, *a. sing.* 68/190
*jugement, *obj.* 178/216
pestilente, *a. sing.*
*descent, *obj.* 175/130
*librament, *obj.* 175/131
relente, *pp.*
*convenient, *a. sing.* 16/413
shente, *pp.*
contente, *inf.* 166/62

-entes

adolescentes, *a. pl.*
parentes, *n. pl.* 135/851
parentes, *n. pl.*
adolescentes, *a. pl.* 135/849

-epe (*see* -eep, -eepe)

aslepe *adv.*
kepe, *imper.* 59/432
wepe, *inf.* 59/431
bywepe, *subj.*
kepe, *inf.* 106/60
stepe, *a. sing.* 106/58
crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
*deep, *adv.* 109/159
kepe, *imper.* 216/259
kepe, *inf.* 109/156
steepe, *inf.* 56/342
crepe, *inf.*
depe, *adv.* 78/471, 105/47, 141/42
kepe, *inf.* 78/474, 105/44

depe, *a. sing.*
kepe, *inf.* 73/357, 173/74, 214/212
slepe, *inf.* 214/214
wepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 173/75
depe, *adv.*
crepe, *inf.* 78/473, 105/46, 141/43
kepe, *inf.* 29/773, 53/357, 78/474, 105/44, 168/123
kepe, *imper.* 123/532
krepe, *inf.* 168/124
slepe, *inf.* 53/256
drepe, *inf.*
wepe, *subj.* 71/279
hepe, *imper.*
kepe, *imper.* 216/262
kepe, *obj.*
kepe, *inf.* 58/405
*maturite, *obl.* 183/125
wepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 104/7
kepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
kepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/270
slepe, *inf.* 185/182
stepe, *inf.* 54/281
wepe, *subj.* 216/271
kepe, *imper.*
aslepe, *adv.* 59/429
be, *subj.* 183/124
*creep, *subj.* 47/89
crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/258
deep, *a. pl.* 47/86
depe, *adv.* 123/531
hepe, *imper.* 216/260
lepe, *subj.* 183/121
pasnepe, *obl.* 173/56
slepe, *inf.* 160/59
*steep, *imper.* 90/811
wepe, *inf.* 59/431
kepe, *inf.*
bywepe, *inf.* 16/425
bywepe, *subj.* 106/61
crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 109/158, 111/193
crepe, *inf.* 78/473, 105/46
*deep, *adv.* 95/972, 109/159
*deep, *a. sing.* 111/191
*deep, *a. pl.* 16/422
depe, *adv.* 29/771, 53/254, 78/471, 105/47, 168/121
depe, *a. sing.* 73/356, 173/72, 214/215
kepe, *obj.* 58/406
krepe, *inf.* 168/124
slepe, *inf.* 53/256, 57/382, 214/214, 217/301
stepe, *imper.* 180/48
stepe, *a. sing.* 106/58
wepe, *subj.* 57/383
wepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 173/75
krepe, *inf.*
depe, *adv.* 168/121
kepe, *inf.* 168/123
lepe, *subj.*
be, *subj.* 183/124
kepe, *imper.* 183/123
pasnepe, *obl.*
kepe, *imper.* 173/55
shepe, *obj.*
keepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 167/101
slepe, *inf.*
depe, *adv.* 53/254
depe, *a. sing.* 214/215
kepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 185/181
kepe, *imper.* 160/57
kepe, *inf.* 53/257, 57/380, 214/212, 217/300
wepe, *subj.* 57/383
stepe, *a. sing.*
bywepe, *subj.* 106/61
kepe, *inf.* 106/60
stepe, *imper.*
kepe, *inf.* 180/49
stepe, *inf.*
kepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/283
wepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
depe, *a. sing.* 173/72
kepe, *inf.* 173/74
kepe, *obj.* 104/6
wepe, *subj.*
drepe, *inf.* 71/280
kepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/268, 216/270
kepe, *inf.* 57/380
slepe, *inf.* 57/382

wepe, *inf.*
aslepe, *adv.* 59/429
kepe, *imper.* 59/432

-epeth (*see* -eepeth)

hepeth, *imper.*
keepeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 105/35

-er (*see* -ere, -ire)

Canicüler, *obl.*
cler, *a. sing.* 168/129
cler, *a. sing.*
Canicüler, *obl.* 168/127
Jannyver, *obl.*
*Feveryere, *nom.* 53/266
maner, *obl.*
*clere, *a. sing.* 175/108
November, *obl.*
*emyspire, *obl.* 206/553
orbiculer, *a. pl.*
*clere, *a. sing.* 93/893
*nere, *adv.* 93/894
September, *obl.*
*clere, *a. sing.* 178/216
ther, *adv.* 170/167
ther, *adv.*
September, *obl.* 170/169

-ere (*see* -er, -eree)

appere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
clere, *a. pl.* 161/97
appere, *subj.*
lere, *imper.* 3/45
appere, *inf.*
here, *adv.* 199/343
yere, *obl.* 199/356
bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
here, *adv.* 195/242
pere, *inf.* 195/243
pere, *obl.* 88/777
bere, *subj.*
there, *adv.* 66/141
bere, *inf.*
manere, *obl.* 72/309
brere, *obl.*
rere, *inf.* 81/674
brere, *obj.*
nere, *adv.* 111/213
Canyculere, *nom.*
chere, *obl.* 196/250
ypere, *adv.* 196/247
chere, *obl.*
Canyculere, *nom.* 196/249
Feveryere, *obl.* 214/216
Janyvere, *obl.* 194/206
chere, *inf.*
yere, *obl.* 144/123
yfere, *adv.* 13/330
clere, *a. sing.*
ffeveryere, *obl.* 91/837
*maner, *obl.* 175/106
*orbiculer, *a. pl.* 93/891
nere, *adv.* 93/894
*September, *obl.* 178/218
yfere, *adv.* 91/835
clere, *a. pl.*
appere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 161/98
*Janyveer, *obl.* 56/336
yere, *n. pl.* 116/356
dere, *inf.*
there, *adv.* 35/958
elles where, *adv.*
fere, *obl.* 2/23
there, *adv.* 2/25, 66/161
fere, *obl.*
elles-where 2/26
there, *adv.* 2/25
ffeberyere, *obl.*
pere, *obl.* 122/518
Feveryere, *nom.*
*Jannyver, *obl.* 53/265
Feveryere, *obl.*
chere, *obl.* 214/217
clere, *a. sing.* 91/838
here, *adv.* 93/907
*Janyveer, *obl.* 50/176
manere, *obj.* 88/767
pere, *obl.* 93/905
sere, *a. pl.* 88/768
yfere, *adv.* 91/835

here, *adv.*
appere, *inf.* 199/342
bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 195/240
ffeveryere, *obl.* 93/908
pere, *obl.* 93/905
pere, *inf.* 195/243
Janyvere, *obl.*
chere, *obl.* 194/204
lere, *imper.*
appere, *subj.* 3/43
manere, *obl.*
bere, *inf.* 72/311
nere, *adv.* 204/486
yfere, *adv.* 59/430
manere, *obj.*
ffeveryere, *obl.* 88/765
sere, *a. pl.* 88/768
nere, *adv.*
brere, *obj.* 111/211
clere, *a. sing.* 93/893
manere, *obl.* 204/484
*orbiculer, *a. pl.* 93/891
nere, *prep.*
popule[re] *obl.* 92/877
yere, *obj.* 92/879
pere, *inf.*
bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 195/240
here, *adv.* 195/242
pere, *obl.*
bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 88/776
ffeberyere *obl.* 122/517
ffeveryere, *obl.* 93/908
here, *adv.* 93/907
popule[re] *obl.*
nere, *prep.* 92/880
yere, *obj.* 92/879
rere, *inf.*
brere, *obl.* 81/573
sere, *a. pl.*
ffeveryere, *obl.* 88/765
manere, *obj.* 88/767
shere, *inf.*
were, *subj.* 43/1166
were, *inf.* 43/1167
tere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
tere, *inf.* 102/1150
there, *adv.* 102/1153
tere, *subj.*
were, *inf.* 72/307
tere, *inf.*
tere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1152
there, *adv.* 102/1153
there, *adv.*
bere, *subj.* 66/143
dere, *inf.* 35/959
elles where, *adv.* 2/26, 66/160
eree, *inf.* 61/9
fere, *obl.* 2/23
there, *adv.* 97/1016, 97/1018
were, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 48/133
were, *subj.* 61/12
were, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
there, *adv.* 48/132
were, *inf.* (wear)
shere, *inf.* 43/1164
tere, *subj.* 72/308
were, *subj.* 43/1166
were, *subj.* 3 *sing.*
eree, *inf.* 61/9
matiere, *obl.* 72/317
shere, *inf.* 43/1164
there, *adv.* 61/11
were, *inf.* 43/1167
yfere, *adv.* 72/319, 75/398
yere, *nom. pl.*
clere, *a. pl.* 116/357
yere, *obl.*
appere, *inf.* 199/357
chere, *inf.* 144/121
nere, *prep.* 92/880
popule[re] *obl.* 92/877
yfere, *adv.*
Canyculere, *nom.* 196/249
chere, *obl.* 196/250
chere, *inf.* 13/332
clere, *a. sing.* 91/838
ffeveryere, *obl.* 91/837
manere, *obl.* 59/428
matiere, *obl.* 72/317
were, *subj.* 72/320, 75/399
-eree (*see* -ere)
eree, *inf.*
there, *adv.* 61/11
were, *v.* 3 *sing. subj.* 61/12

-ere is (*see* -er is, -eres, -ers)

chere is
  Janyver is 52/233
  welner is, 52/235
fere is
  *gutters, *n. pl.* 38/1035
where is
  brieres, *n. pl.* 47/97

-er is (*see* -ere is)

Janyver is
  chere is, 52/236
  welner is, 52/235
welner is
  chere is, 52/236
  Janyver is, 52/233

-eres (*see* -ere is)

beres, *n. pl.*
  deres, *n. pl.* 31/840
brieres, *n. pl.*
  where is, 47/98
deres, *n. pl.*
  beres, *n. pl.* 31/839

-erk (*see* -ark)

werk *obl.*
  *kark, *inf.* 129/701

-erme

ferme, *a. sing.*
  ferme, *inf.* 113/249
  ferme, *adv.* 113/250
ferme, *adv.*
  ferme, *a. sing.* 113/247
  ferme, *inf.* 113/249
ferme, *inf.*
  ferme, *a. sing.* 113/247
  ferme, *adv.* 113/250

-erne

cisterne, *obj.*
  gouverne, *imper.* 16/427
Eterne, *a. sing.*
  externe, *inf.* 186/215
  interne, *a. sing.* 186/214
  sempiterne, *a. sing.* 186/217
  superne, *a. sing.* 206/547
externe, *inf.*
  Eterne, *a. sing.* 186/212
  interne, *a. sing.* 186/214
  sempiterne, *a. sing.* 186/217
ferne, *obj.*
  werne, *inf.* 171/20
gouverne, *imper.*
  cisterne, *obj.* 16/426
interne, *a. sing.*
  Eterne, *a. sing.* 186/212
  externe, *inf.* 186/215
  sempiterne, *a. sing.* 186/217
sempiterne, *a. sing.*
  Eterne, *a. sing.* 186/212
  externe, *inf.* 186/215
  interne, *a. sing.* 186/214
superne, *a. sing.*
  Eterne, *a. sing.* 206/549
werne, *inf.*
  ferne, *obj.* 171/21

-ers (*see* -ere is)

dyvers, *a. sing.*
  wers, *a. pl.* 190/101
wers, *a. pl.*
  dyvers, *a. sing.* 190/99
gutters, *n. pl.*
  *fere is, 38/1036

-erst

erst, *adv.*
  werst, *adv.* 208/31
werst, *adv.*
  erst, *adv.* 208/29

-erve

kerve, *inf.*
  serve, *imper.* 138/928
observe, *inf.*
  serve, *nom.* 196/261
  serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 196/263

reserve, *inf.*
serve, *inf.* 62/34
serve, *nom.*
observe, *inf.* 196/264
serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 196/263
serve, *obl.*
serve, *inf.* 98/1039, 145/141
serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 95/952
serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
observe, *inf.* 196/264
serve, *nom.* 196/261
serve, *obl.* 95/951
serve, *imper.*
kerve, *inf.* 138/926
serve, *inf.*
reserve, *inf.* 62/35
serve, *obl.* 98/1037, 145/140
sterve, *inf.* 34/931
sterve, *inf.*
serve, *inf.* 34/930

-ese (*see* **-ees**)

brese, *subj.*
crese, *subj.* 142/77
brese, *inf.*
chese, *obl.* 34/911, 155/162
chese, *inf.*
chese, *obl.* 154/141
chese, *obl.*
brese, *inf.* 34/913, 155/164
chese, *inf.* 154/143
crese, *subj.*
brese, *subj.* 142/78
encrese, *nom.*
ceese, *inf.* 143/92
encrese, *inf.*
*doutelees, *adv.* 155/171
lese, *inf.*
*thees, *n. pl.* 35/946

-ese is (*see* **-esys**)

chese is
flesys, *a. pl.* 167/85

-eses

breses, *n. pl.*
cheses, *n. pl.* 24/652
cheses, *n. pl.*
breses, *n. pl.* 24/654

-eseth

displeseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
eseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/565
uneseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/562
eseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
displeseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/564
uneseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/562
uneseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
displeseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/564
eseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/565

-esys (*see* **-ese is**)

flesys, *a. pl.*
chese is, 167/87

-eson (*see* **-eason**)

appeson, *inf.*
season, *obl.* 120/447
geson, *a. pl.*
peson, *n. pl.* 106/68
reason, *obl.* 164/4
season, *nom.* 164/2
season, *obl.* 106/67
leson, *inf.*
reson, *obl.* 71/289
season, *obl.* 71/291
peson, *n. pl.*
geson, *a. pl.* 106/65
season, *obl.* 106/67
reson, *obj.*
seson, *obl.* 101/1135
seson, *obl.*
reson, *obj.* 101/1137

-ess (*see* **-esse**)

ingress, *obl.*
*lyonesse, *obl.* 35/961
*hevynesse, *obj.* 35/963

-esse (*see* **-ess**)

besinesse, *nom.*
expresse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 66/154

besinesse, *obl.*
oppresse, *subj.* 68/205
dresse, *imper.* 68/207
bisinesse, *obj.*
bitternesse, *obj.* 172/44
greetnesse, *obl.* 172/47
bitternesse, *obj.*
bisinesse, *obj.* 172/46
greetnesse, *obl.* 172/47
cipresse, *obl.*
cupresse, *obl.* 15/397
dresse, *imper.* 15/396
compresse, *imper.*
presse, *obl.* 154/149
sadnesse, *obl.* 154/152
cupresse, *obl.*
cipresse, *obl.* 15/394
dresse, *imper.* 15/396
gesse, *imper.* 200/385
distresse, *obl.*
hevynesse, *obl.* 107/82
lesse, *a. sing.* 107/81
dresse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
express, *pp.* 206/537
presse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 206/534
dresse, *imper.*
besinesse, *obl.* 68/208
cipresse, *obl.* 15/394
cupresse, *obl.* 15/397
fatnesse, *obl.* 79/502
oppresse, *subj.* 68/205, 79/499, 129/694
dresse, *inf.*
gentilnesse, *obl.* 92/875
greetnesse, *obl.* 75/386
expresse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
besinesse, *nom.* 66/153
expresse, *inf.*
gentillesse, 188/28
gesse, 1 *s. pres.* 58/404
lesse, *a. pl.* 58/401
expresse, *pp.*
presse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 206/534
dresse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 206/536
fatnesse, *obl.*
oppresse, *subj.* 79/499
dresse, *imper.* 79/501
gentilnesse, *obl.*
dresse, *inf.* 92/874
expresse, *inf.* 188/27
gesse, 1 *s. pres.*
expresse, *inf.* 58/403
lesse, *a. pl.* 58/401
gesse, *imper.*
cupresse, *obl.* 200/384
lesse, *a. sing.* 183/118
greetnesse, *obl.*
bisinesse, *obj.* 172/146
bitternesse, *obj.* 172/44
dresse, *inf.* 75/388
hevynesse, *obl.*
distresse, *obl.* 107/79
lesse, *a. sing.* 107/81
hevynesse, *obj.*
*ingress, *obl.* 35/964
lyonesse, *obl.* 35/961
lesse, *a. sing.*
distresse, *obl.* 107/79
gesse, *imper.* 183/119
hevynesse, *obl.* 107/82
lesse, *a. pl.*
expresse, *inf.* 58/403
gesse, 1 *s. pres.* 58/404
lyonesse, *obl.*
hevynesse, *obj.* 35/963
*ingress, *obl.* 35/964
oppresse, *subj.*
besinesse, *obl.* 68/208
dresse, *imper.* 68/207, 79/501, 129/693
fatnesse, *obl.* 79/502
presse, *obl.*
compresse, *imper.* 154/151
presse, *imper.* 50/188
sadnesse, *obl.* 154/152
presse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
dresse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 206/536
expresse, *pp.* 206/537
presse, *imper.*
presse, *obl.* 50/189
sadnesse, *obl.*
compresse, *imper.* 154/151
presse, *obl.* 154/149

-estes (*see* **-eestes, -eest is,** and **-est is**)

bestes, *n. pl.*
  best is, 78/470, 135/869
  feest is, 18/488
  leest is, 20/521
  unleest is, 18/487
drestes, *n. pl.*
  beestes, *n. pl.* 35/945

-est is (*see* **-eestes, -eest is,** and **-estes**)

best is
  bestes, *n. pl.* 78/472, 135/868
honest is
  beestes, *n. pl.* 43/1163
kest is
  beestes, *n. pl.* 62/37
  feest is, 62/39

-est (*see* **-eest, -eeste,** and **-este**)

agrest, *a. sing.*
  rest, *inf.* 200/379
best, *obl.*
  rest, *obl.* 135/857
  rest, *inf.* 135/860
best, *a. sing.*
  celest, *a. sing.* 17/456
  fest, *adv.* 83/634
  grettest, *a. sing.* 82/585
  harvest, *obl.* 82/583
  honest, *a. sing.* 30/812, 201/392
  kest, *inf.* 98/1032
  kest, *imper.* 14/358
  kest, *pp.* 211/131
  lest, *a. sing.* 77/462
  rest, *obl.* 59/435, 83/632
  rest, *obj.* 5/105
  swetest, *a. sing.* 38/1023
  unrest, *subj.* 211/130
best, *adv.*
  chest, *obl.* 173/73
  est, *nom.* 15/389
  gladdest, *a. pl.* 50/186
  honest, *a. sing.* 5/124
  prest, *pp.* 50/187
  rest, *obj.* 207/7
  west, *nom.* 15/387
  west, *obl.* 5/121
best, *adj. pl.*
  brest, *obl.* 3/48
brest, *nom.*
  *streght, *a. sing.* 129/683
brest, *obl.*
  best, *adj. pl.* 3/49
celest, *a. sing.*
  best, *a. sing.* 17/454
chest, *obl.*
  best, *adv.* 173/71
chillingest, *a. pl.*
  ferventest, *a. pl.* 120/450
  hardiest, *adv.* 120/453
est, *nom.*
  best, *adv.* 15/390
  west, *nom.* 15/387
est, *obl.*
  west, *obl.* 50/164
fattest, *a. sing.*
  thickest, *adv.* 52/237
fertilest, *a. pl.*
  fest, *adv.* 101/1138
  kest, *pp.* 101/1139
ferventest, *a. pl.*
  chillingest, *a. pl.* 120/452
  hardiest, *adv.* 120/453
fest, *adv.*
  best, *a. sing.* 83/635
  fertilest, *a. pl.* 101/1136
  kest, *imper.* 76/435
  kest, *pp.* 101/1139
  rest, *obl.* 83/632
gladdest, *a. pl.*
  best, *adv.* 50/184
  prest, *pp.* 50/187
grettest, *a. sing.*
  best, *a. sing.* 82/586
  harvest, *obl.* 82/583
hardiest, *adv.*
  chillingest, *a. pl.* 120/452
  ferventest, *a. pl.* 120/450

harvest, *obl.*
best, *a. sing.* 82/586
grettest, *a. sing.* 82/585
honest, *a. sing.*
best, *a. sing.* 5/123, 30/811, 201/391
west, *obl.* 5/121
kest, *imper.*
best, *a. sing.* 14/360
fest, *adv.* 76/437
kest, *subj.*
beest, *obl.* 33/893
*enfeste, *subj.* 33/891
kest, *inf.*
best, *a. sing.* 98/1030
kest, *pp.*
best, *a. sing.* 211/128
fertilest, *a. pl.* 101/1136
fest, *adv.* 101/1138
unrest, *subj.* 211/130
lest, *a. sing.*
best, *a. sing.* 77/461
prest, *pp.*
best, *adv.* 50/184
gladdest, *a. pl.* 50/186
rest, *obj.*
best, *a. sing.* 5/104
best, *adv.* 207/6
rest, *obl.*
best, *a. sing.* 59/437, 83/635
best, *obl.* 135/859
fest, *adv.* 83/634
rest, *inf.* 135/860
rest, *inf.*
agrest, *a. sing.* 200/381
best, *obl.* 135/859
rest, *obl.* 135/857
sweetest, *a. sing.*
best, *a. sing.* 38/1025
thickest, *adv.*
fattest, *a. sing.* 52/238
unrest, *subj.*
best, *a. sing.* 211/128
kest, *pp.* 211/131
west, *nom.*
best, *adv.* 15/390
est, *nom.* 15/389
west, *obl.*
best, *adv.* 5/123
est, *obl.* 50/162
honest, *a. sing.* 5/124

-este (*see* **-eest** and **-est**)

enfeste, *subj.*
*beest, *obl.* 33/893
*kest, *subj.* 33/894
meste, *a. sing.*
beeste, *nom.* 137/900

-ete (*see* **-eet**, **-eete**, and **-ette**)

alete, *inf.*
gete, *inf.* 174/102
swete, *subj.* 174/100
bete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
grete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 204/494
trete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 204/492
bete, *subj.*
weete, *a. pl.* 210/99
bete, *inf.*
threte, *inf.* 31/832
ete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
meete, *obj.* 99/1078
ete, *subj.*
mete, *obl.* 22/596, 27/722
ete, *inf.*
mete, *obl.* 153/106
gete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 204/495
*greet, *a. pl.* 134/835
grete, *inf.* 149/6
trete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 158/4, 204/492
whete, *obj.* 158/5
gete, *imper.*
*greet, *adv.* 136/871
trete, *inf.* 136/874
gete, *inf.*
alete, *inf.* 174/103
*geet, *obl.* 129/677
*greet, *a. pl.* 129/675
greete, *a. pl.* 59/422
heete, *obl.* 124/580
heirylete, *inf.* 190/96
hete, *obl.* 94/933, 190/93

hete, 1 *s. pres.* 94/936
mete, *nom.* 21/559
mete, *obl.* 21/570
mete, *obj.* 86/708
swete, *a. sing.* 14/370
swete, *a. pl.* 173/76
swete, *subj.* 174/100
swete, *inf.* 59/424, 158/19
trete, *subj.* 87/741
wete, *obj.* 76/426
whete, *nom.* 158/16
grete, *inf.*
gete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 149/7
hete, *obl.* 159/26
whete, *obj.* 159/23
grete, *a. sing.*
trete, *imper.* 155/182
grete, *a. pl.*
hete, *obl.* 49/139
mete, *nom.* 22/584
*sette, *inf.* 67/170
*sette, *pp.* 67/173
trete, *imper.* 165/34
heirylete, *inf.*
gete, *inf.* 190/95
hete, *obl.* 190/93
hete, 1 *s. pres.*
gete, *inf.* 94/935
hete, *obl.* 94/933
hete, *obl.*
*greet, *a. pl.* 93/912
trete, *subj.* 93/914
trete, *inf.* 193/175
hete, *obl.*
gete, *inf.* 94/935, 190/95
grete, *inf.* 159/25
grete, *a. pl.* 49/140
heirylete, *inf.* 190/96
hete, 1 *s. pres.* 94/936
lete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 211/125
lete, *inf.* 206/529
swete, *a. pl.* 206/527
whete, *obj.* 159/23
lete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
hete, *obl.* 211/126
shete, *obl.* 112/222
wete, *obl.* 112/219
lete, *imper.*
weete, *inf.* 81/575
lete, *inf.*
hete, *obl.* 206/530
swete, *a. pl.* 206/527
mete, *nom.*
gete, *inf.* 21/560
grete, *a. pl.* 22/582
mete, *obj.*
gete, *inf.* 86/710
mete, *obl.*
ete, *subj.* 22/598, 27/724
ete, *inf.* 153/108
gete, *inf.* 21/568
*greet, *a. pl.* 183/130
mete, *inf.* 49/159
weete, *obl.* 49/156
whete, *obj.* 159/34
whete, *obl.* 180/41
ygete, *pp.* 183/131
mete, *a. sing.*
swete, *obj.* 187/16
wete, *a. pl.* 187/18
mete, *imper.*
*greet, *a. pl.* 61/16
*sweet, *inf.* 61/18
mete, *subj.*
trete, *imper.* 177/171
mete, *inf.*
mete, *a. sing.* 49/158
weete, *obl.* 49/156
olivete, *obj.*
swete, *inf.* 189/67
swete, *a. pl.* 189/68
sete, *a. sing.*
sweete *a. sing.* 59/419
sete, *a. pl.*
wete, *subj.* 160/76
sete, *inf.*
*greet, *a. pl.* 120/459
*surtreet, *imper.* 120/460
shete, *obj.*
lete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 112/221
wete, *obl.* 112/219
shete, *obl.*
swete, *inf.* 203/446
trete, *inf.* 203/443

swete, *a. sing.*
gete, *inf.* 14/371
trete, *inf.* 4/75
wete, *inf.* 4/74
swete, *a. pl.*
gete, *inf.* 173/77
hete, *obl.* 206/530
lete, *inf.* 206/529
meete, *a. pl.* 172/45
olivete, *obj.* 189/65
sweete, *inf.* 55/314
swete, *inf.* 189/67
wete, *a. pl.* 149/1
swete, *adv.*
meete, *obj.* 199/336
swete, *obj.*
wete, *a. pl.* 187/18
mete, *a. sing.* 187/19
swete, *subj.*
alete, *inf.* 174/103
gete, *inf.* 174/102
whete, *obl.* 18/484
swete, *inf.*
gete, *inf.* 59/425, 158/18
greete, *a. pl.* 59/422
heete, *obl.* 156/198
olivete, *obj.* 189/65
swete, *a. pl.* 189/68
shete, *obl.* 203/445
trete, *inf.* 156/200, 203/443
whete, *nom.* 158/16
threte, *inf.*
bete, *inf.* 31/833
trete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 204/495
gete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 158/2, 204/494
whete, *obj.* 158/5
trete, *subj.*
gete, *inf.* 87/742
*greet, *a. pl.* 93/912
hete, *obl.* 93/915
trete, *imper.*
grete, *a. sing.* 155/181
grete, *a. pl.* 165/35
mete, *subj.* 177/169
trete, *inf.*
gete, *imper.* 136/873
*greet, *adv.* 136/871
*greet, *a. pl.* 199/349, 213/183
heete, *obl.* 156/198
hete, *obj.* 193/174
shete, *obl.* 203/445
swete, *inf.* 156/201, 203/446
swete, *a. sing.* 4/72
wete, *imper.* 4/74
wete, *a. pl.* 91/848
wete, *a. sing.*
whete, *obl.* 10/251
wete, *a. pl.*
mete, *a. sing.* 187/19
swete, *obj.* 187/16
swete, *a. pl.* 149/3
trete, *inf.* 91/850
wete, *obl.*
lete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 112/221
shete, *obj.* 112/222
wete, *obj.*
gete, *inf.* 76/427
wete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
sweete, *a. sing.* 121/477
wete, *imper.*
greete, *a. pl.* 212/147
wete, *subj.*
sete, *a. pl.* 160/77
wete, *inf.*
swete, *a. sing.* 4/72
trete, *inf.* 4/75
whete, *nom.*
gete, *inf.* 158/18
swete, *inf.* 158/19
whete, *obl.*
mete, *a. sing.* 180/42
swete, *subj.* 18/486
wete, *a. sing.* 10/252
whete, *obj.*
gete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 158/2
grete, *inf.* 159/25
hete, *obl.* 159/26
mete, *obl.* 159/35
trete, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 158/4

ygete, *pp.*
*greet, *a. pl.* 183/130
mete, *obl.* 183/128

-eth (*see* -ith)

beth, *subj.*
seth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 92/873
therwith, *adv.* 92/870
with, *prep.* 199/351
deth, *obl.*
sleth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 215/239
seth, 3 *s. pres.*
beth, *subj.* 92/872
therwith, *adv.* 92/870
sleth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
deth, *obl.* 215/241

-ethe

alethe, *inf.*
brethe, *inf.* 202/433
brethe, *inf.*
alethe, *inf.* 202/434

-ette

bette, *adv.*
sette, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/267
sette, *inf.* 97/1009
ysette, *pp.* 192/139
bewette, *pp.*
sette, *pp.* 110/176
dette, *obl.*
sette, *subj.* 24/631
fette, *imper.*
lette, *pp.* 211/116
mette, *obl.* 210/89
sette, *subj.* 211/114
sette, *inf.* 210/86
fette, *inf.*
sette, *imper.* 122/498
fette, *pp.*
grette, *a. sing.* 76/432
sette, *imper.* 76/429
sette, *subj.* 111/190
flette, *imper.*
lette, *imper.* 18/474
sette, *imper.* 18/471
frette, *inf.*
lette, *inf.* 56/354
sette, *inf.* 56/352
grette, *a. sing.*
fette, *pp.* 76/431
sette, *imper.* 76/429
g(r)ette, *a. pl.*
ysette, *pp.* 74/381
lette, *imper.*
flette, *imper.* 18/473
sette, *imper.* 18/471
lette, *subj.*
oversette, *subj.* 6/144
sette, *inf.* 6/142, 79/506
wette, *pp.* 79/509
lette, *inf.*
frette, *inf.* 56/355
sette, *inf.* 26/708, 56/352, 67/183
lette, *pp.*
frette, *imper.* 211/117
sette, *subj.* 211/114
mette, *obl.*
fette, *imper.* 210/88
sette, *inf.* 65/133, 68/197, 210/86
mette, *imper.*
sette, *inf.* 109/134
oversette, *subj.*
lette, *subj.* 6/145
sette, *inf.* 6/142
sette, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bette, *adv.* 97/1011
fette, *a. sing.* 113/269
ysette, *pp.* 53/269
sette, *imper.*
fette, *inf.* 122/500
fette, *pp.* 76/431
flette, *imper.* 18/473
grette, *a. sing.* 76/432
lette, *imper.* 18/474
violette, *obj.* 37/1014
ywette, *pp.* 50/182
sette, *subj.*
dette, *obl.* 24/633
fette, *imper.* 211/117
fette, *pp.* 111/192
lette, *pp.* 211/116

ysette, *pp.* 168/107
wette, *pp.* 168/109
sette, *inf.*
bette, *adv.* 97/1011
fette, *imper.* 210/88
frette, *inf.* 56/355
*grete, *a. pl.* 67/172
lette, *subj.* 6/145, 79/508
lette, *inf.* 26/710, 56/354, 67/185
mette, *obl.* 68/199, 210/89
mette, *imper.* 109/136
mette, *inf.* 65/132
oversette, *subj.* 6/144
sette, *pp.* 67/173
umbiwette, *imper.* 85/675
wette, *obl.* 65/125
wette, *pp.* 79/509, 193/168
ywette, *pp.* 191/122
sette, *pp.*
bewette, *pp.* 110/178
*greett, *a. sing.* 115/311
*grete, *a. pl.* 67/172
sette, *inf.* 67/170
sette, *pp.* 145/135, 145/137
wette, *pp.* 93/916
umbiwette, *imper.*
sette, *inf.* 85/673
violette, *obj.*
sette, *imper.* 37/1015
wette, *obl.*
sette, *inf.* 65/126
wette, *pp.*
lette, *subj.* 79/508
sette, *subj.* 168/110
sette, *inf.* 79/506, 193/167
sette, *pp.* 93/917
ysette, *pp.* 168/107
ysette, *pp.*
bette, *adv.* 192/140
g(r)ette, *a. pl.* 74/379
sette, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 53/267
sette, *subj.* 168/110
wette, *pp.* 168/109
wette, *pp.*
sette, *imper.* 50/181
sette, *inf.* 191/120

-eu (*see* -u)

greu, *v.* 3 *pl. pt.*
superflu, *a. pl.* 168/118

-eve (*see* -ieve)

bereve, *inf.*
leve, *obj.* 152/100
leve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 152/102
bileve, *obj.*
greve, *inf.* 82/609
byleve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
meve, *imper.* 198/307
cheve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
mysheve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 63/65
preve, *inf.* 63/68
cheve, *inf.*
cleve, *imper.* 195/234
preve, *inf.* 83/615
cleve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
streve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 101/1127
cleve, *imper.*
cheve, *inf.* 195/232
cleve, *inf.*
eve, *obl.* 219/340
remeve, *inf.* 219/341
eve, *obl.*
cleve, *inf.* 219/338
greve, *subj.* 23/611, 189/53
greve, *inf.* 105/24
leve, *inf.* 189/51
mysheve, *subj.* 23/614
remeve, *imper.* 190/102
remeve, *inf.* 219/341
streve, *inf.* 190/103
greve, *subj.*
eve, *obl.* 23/613, 189/54
leve, *inf.* 189/51
mysheve, *subj.* 23/614
greve, *inf.*
bileve, *obj.* 82/608
eve, *obl.* 105/22
leve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bereve, *inf.* 152/103
leve, *obj.* 152/100
preve, *inf.* 176/148

leve, *imper.*
leve, *inf.* 71/276
preve, *inf.* 172/49
leve, *inf.*
eve, *obl.* 189/54
greve, *subj.* 189/53
leve, *imper.* 71/274
leve, *obj.*
breve, *inf.* 152/103
leve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 152/102
meve, *imper.*
byleve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 198/308
preve, *inf.* 50/180
revieve, *inf.* 50/177
myscheve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
cheve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 63/67
preve, *inf.* 63/68
myscheve, *subj.*
eve, *obl.* 23/613
greve, *subj.* 23/611
preve, *inf.*
cheve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 63/67
cheve, *inf.* 83/616
leve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 176/150
leve, *imper.* 172/48
meve, *imper.* 50/179
myscheve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 63/65
remeve, *inf.* 55/308
revieve, *imper.* 50/177
remeve, *imper.*
eve, *obl.* 190/100
streve, *inf.* 190/103
remeve, *inf.*
cleve, *inf.* 219/338
eve, *obl.* 219/340
preve, *inf.* 55/307
streve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
cleve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 101/1126
streve, *inf.*
eve, *obl.* 190/100
remeve, *imper.* 190/102

-eved

cheved, *pp.*
preved, *pp.* 217/295
moeved, *pp.*
ypreved, *pp.* 198/304
preved, *pp.*
cheved, 217/297
ypreved, *pp.*
moeved, *pp.* 198/302

-even (*see* **-evon**)

eleven (XI), *a. pl.*
even, *a. pl.* 139/954
even, *adv.* 147/215, 169/157, 206/540
seven (VII), *a. pl.* 147/213, 186/206
even, *obl.*
heven, *obl.* 154/134
even, *a. sing.*
seven (VII), *a. pl.* 181/72
hevén, *inf.* 181/75
heven, *obj.* 186/203
even, *a. pl.*
eleven (XI), *a. pl.* 139/956
sevon, *a. pl.* 135/866
unevon, *a. pl.* 135/867
even, *adv.*
eleven (XI), *a. pl.* 147/216, 169/156, 206/542
heven, *obl.* 156/215
heven, *inf.*
even, *a. sing.* 181/74
seven (VII), *a. pl.* 181/72
heven, *obl.*
even, *obl.* 154/136
even, *adv.* 156/214
seven (VII), *a. pl.* 156/212
heven, *obj.*
even, *a. sing.* 186/202
seven, *a. pl.* 147/213, 156/212
seven (VII), *a. pl.*
eleven (XI), *a. pl.* 147/216, 186/204
even, *adv.* 147/215, 156/214, 181/74
heven, *inf.* 181/75
heven, *obl.* 156/215

-ever (*see* **-ebre**)

lever, *a. sing.*
*elebre, *nom.* 38/1044

-eve is (*see* -eves)
cheve is
  cleves, *nom.* 50/167
preve is
  greves, *n. pl.* 49/149
  repreve is, 49/151
repreve is
  aspreve is, 49/152
  greves, *n. pl.* 49/149

-eves (*see* -eve is)
cleves, *nom.*
  cheve is, 50/168
greves, *n. pl.*
  repreve is, 49/151
  aspreve is, 49/152

-evon (*see* -even)
sevon, *num. a.*
  even, *a. pl.* 135/864
  unevon, *a. pl.* 135/867
unevon, *a. pl.*
  even, *a. pl.* 135/864
  sevon, *obl.* 135/866

-ew (*see* -ewe)
eschew, *inf.*[1]
 *remewe, *imper.* 29/777

-ewe (*see* -ue, -ew)
arewe, *adv.*
  fewe, *a. pl.* 25/674
  shewe, *inf.* 25/676
eschewe, *inf.*
  mewe, *obl.* 125/583
  sewe, *inf.* 125/585
eschewe, *imp.*
  renewe, *inf.* 5/116
  trewe, *a. pl.* 5/117
eschewe, *inf.*
  pursue, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 34/924
  remewe, *inf.* 112/244
  rewe, *obj.* 22/552
fewe, *a. pl.*
  arewe, *adv.* 25/677
  remewe, *subj.* 138/930
  rewe, *obl.* 71/290, 138/929
  shewe, *inf.* 25/676
grewe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  newe, *a. pl.* 74/377
mewe, *obl.*
  eschewe, *inf.* 125/586
  newe, *a. pl.* 21/574
  sewe, *inf.* 125/585
newe, *a. sing.*
  renewe, *inf.* 96/977
  snewe, *imper.* 199/332
  trewe, *a. pl.* 96/978
newe, *a. pl.*
  grewe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 74/378
  mewe, *obl.* 21/573
  remewe, *inf.* 54/280
remewe,[1] *imper.*
 *eschew, *inf.* 29/776
remewe, *subj.*
  fewe, *a. pl.* 138/927
  rewe, *obl.* 138/929
remewe, *inf.*
  eschewe, *inf.* 112/245
  newe, *a. pl.* 54/279
renewe, *inf.*
  eschewe, *imper.* 5/114
  newe, *a. sing.* 96/975
  stewe, *obj.* 28/769
  trewe, *a. pl.* 5/117, 96/978
rewe, *obj.*
  eschewe, *inf.* 21/553
rewe, *obl.*
  fewe, *a. pl.* 71/288, 138/927
  remewe, *subj.* 138/930
sewe, *inf.*
  eschewe, *inf.* 125/586
  mewe, *obl.* 125/583
shewe, *inf.*
  arewe, *adv.* 25/677
  fewe, *a. pl.* 25/674
snewe, *imper.*
  newe, *a. sing.* 199/330
stewe, *obj.*
  renewe, *inf.* 28/770
trewe, *a. pl.*
  eschewe, *imper.* 5/114
  newe, *a. sing.* 96/975
  renewe, *inf.* 5/116, 96/977

[1] A ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.

-ewes (*see* -ew is)

mewes, *n. pl.*
  eschew is, 20/528

-ew is (*see* -ewes)

eschew is
  mewes, *n. pl.* 20/526

-i, -y (*see* -ie)

advysely, *adv.*
  gisily, *adv.* 75/409
avisely, *adv.*
  besily, *adv.* 4/71
besily, *adv.*
  avisely, *adv.* 4/73
  esily, *adv.* 23/610
busely, *adv.*
  wely, *a. sing.* 70/266
by and by, *adv.*
  myghtely, *adv.* 15/399
clenly, *adv.*
  contynuelly, *adv.* 204/473
  mightily, *adv.* 204/471
contynuelly, *adv.*
  clenly, *adv.* 204/474
  mightily, *adv.* 204/471
dri,[1] *a. pl.*
  *hie, *inf.* 99/1075
  *multiplie, *inf.* 99/1076
esily, *adv.*
  besily, *adv.* 23/612
evenly, *adv.*
  unevenly, *adv.* 215/234
gisily, *adv.*
  advysely, *adv.* 75/407
mightily, *adv.*
  clenly, *adv.* 204/474
  contynuelly, *adv.* 204/473
myghtely, *adv.*
  by and by, *adv.* 15/398
multipli,[1] *inf.*
  *trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 138/934
  *die, *subj.* 138/937
prively, *adv.*
  sekirly, *adv.* 31/843
sekirly, *adv.*
  prively, *adv.* 31/841
subtily, *adv.*
  therby, *adv.* 161/101
territory, *obl.*
  *memorie, *obl.* 120/469
therby, *adv.*
  subtily, *adv.* 161/99
unevenly, *adv.*
  evenly, *adv.* 215/232
wely, *a. sing.*
  busely, *adv.* 70/265

-ic (*see* -ik)

mastic, *obl.*
  epatik, *a. pl.* 201/408
  endik, *a. sing.* 201/411

-ice (*see* -ise, -yse)

cherice, *inf.*
  vice, *nom.* 112/237
price, *obl.*
  vice, *obl.* 5/100
  avyse, *nom.* 5/102
servyce, *obj.*
  avyse, *imper.* 138/952
suffice, *subj.*
  devyse, *imper.* 146/186
suffice, *inf.*
  aryse, *inf.* 40/1081
  assise, 16/430
  devise, *imper.* 199/348
  devyse, *inf.* 18/475, 74/364, 199/347
  gise, *nom.* 99/1067
  gyse, *nom.* 145/149
  rise, *inf.* 187/13
  wyse, *n. pl.* 127/659
vice, *nom.*
  cherice, *inf.* 112/238
vice, *obl.*
  avyse, *nom.* 5/102
  price, *obl.* 5/103

[1] In these instances the scribe, by omitting the final *-e*, has spoilt an otherwise correct ryme.

-iced (*see* **-ysed**)

sufficed, *pp.*
  devysed, 1 *s. pres.* 61/21

-iceth (*see* **-iseth**)

sufficeth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
  aviseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 140/14

-icke (*see* **-ik**)

thicke, *a. sing.*
  *brik, *nom.* 156/202

-ide, -yde

abyde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  devyde, *inf.* 51/205
  hide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/257
  slide, *inf.* 113/256
  wride, *a. sing.* 51/207
abide, *subj.*
  slide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 163/129
abyde, *subj.*
  asyde, *obl.* 15/401
  devyde, *inf.* 124/561
  glide, *imper.* 15/404
abide, *inf.*
  aside, *adv.* 136/880
  besyde, *adv.* 37/1000
  ride, *inf.* 136/878
  tide, *obl.* 214/210
abyde, *inf.*
  beside, 30/821, 52/244
  devyde, *inf.* 75/387
  gide, *inf.* 64/95
  hide, *inf.* 86/200
  side, *obl.* 13/331, 17/435, 75/389, 186/198, 209/55
  slyde, *inf.* 64/96
  syde, *obl.* 21/561
  tyde, *obj.* 30/824
  tyde, *obl.* 13/334
aside, *adv.*
  abide, *inf.* 136/881
  ride, *inf.* 136/878
asyde, *adv.*
  stride, *subj.* 37/1011
asyde, *obl.*
  abyde, *subj.* 15/403
  glide, *imper.* 15/404
astride, *inf.*
  prasocoride, *obj.* 35/953
beside, *adv.*
  abyde, *inf.* 30/823, 52/245
  side, *obl.* 146/170
  tyde, *obj.* 30/824
besyde, *adv.*
  abide, *inf.* 37/1001
betyde, *inf.*
  cantaride, *obj.* 33/890
  gliciride, *obl.* 200/358
byde, *subj.*
  glide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/943
  hide, *inf.* 35/940
cantaride, *obj.*
  betyde, *inf.* 33/892
cupide, *obj.*
  side, *obl.* 23/626
devide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  syde, *obl.* 89/805
devide, *inf.*
  hyde, *inf.* 92/885
devyde, *imper.*
  side, *obl.* 65/131
  syde, *obl.* 15/386, 38/1028
  wide, *adv.* 65/128
devyde, *inf.*
  abyde, *v.* 3. *pl. pres.* 51/208
  abyde, *subj.* 124/563
  abyde, *inf.* 75/390
  side, *obl.* 75/389, 95/960, 101/1128
  syde, *obl.* 162/106
  slide, *inf.* 95/969
  wride, *a. sing.* 51/207
gide, *obj.*
  ride, *inf.* 157/234
gide, *inf.*
  abyde, *inf.* 64/93
  slyde, *inf.* 64/96
glide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  byde, *subj.* 35/942
  hide, *inf.* 35/940

glide, *imper.*
abyde, *subj.* 15/403
asyde, *obl.* 15/401
glyde, *inf.*
syde, *obl.* 61/6
gliciride, *obl.*
betyde, *inf.* 200/360
hide, *nom.*
side, *obl.* 36/980
hide, *obj.*
side, *obl.* 35/962
hide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
abide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/254
slide, *inf.* 113/256
hide, *imper.*
wyde, *a. pl.* 86/715
hide, *inf.*
abyde, *inf.* 186/201
byde, *subj.* 35/942
glide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/943
side, *obl.* 186/198
hyde, *inf.*
devide, *inf.* 92/883
humyde, *a. sing.*
wyde, *a. pl.* 114/283
prasocoride, *obj.*
athide, *inf.* 35/955
ride, *inf.*
abide, *inf.* 136/881
aside, *adv.* 136/880
gide, *obj.* 157/234
side, *nom.*
syde, *a. pl.* 129/684
wide, *a. pl.* 129/685
side, *obj.*
wyde, *obl.* 48/108
side, *obl.*
abyde, *inf.* 13/333, 17/437, 75/390, 186/201, 209/56
beside, *prep.* 146/172
cupide, *obj.* 23/624
devyde, *imper.* 65/130
devyde, *inf.* 75/387, 95/962, 101/1130
hide, *nom.* 36/979
hide, *obj.* 35/960
hide, *inf.* 186/200
tyde, *obl.* 13/334
wide, *adv.* 65/128
syde, *obl.*
abyde, *inf.* 21/563
devide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 89/804
devyde, *imper.* 15/388, 38/1029
devyde, *inf.* 162/108
glyde, *inf.* 61/7
syde, *a. sing.* 99/1060
tyde, *obl.* 19/493
wyde, *adv.* 129/680
wyde, *a. pl.* 96/980, 131/737
syde, *a. sing.*
syde, *obl.* 99/1058
syde, *a. pl.*
side, *nom.* 129/682
wyde, *a. pl.* 129/685
wyde, *adv.* 130/709
slide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
abide, *subj.* 163/127
slide, *inf.*
abide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/254
devyde, *inf.* 95/967
hide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/257
slyde, *inf.*
abyde, *inf.* 64/93
gide, *inf.* 64/95
stride, *subj.*
asyde, *adv.* 33/1009
tide, *obl.*
abide, *inf.* 214/209
tyde, *obj.*
abyde, *inf.* 30/823
beside, 30/821
tyde, *obl.*
abyde, *inf.* 13/333
side, *obl.* 13/331
syde, *obl.* 19/491
wide, *a. pl.*
side, *nom.* 129/682
syde, *a. pl.* 129/684
wyde, *adv.*
devyde, *imper.* 65/130
side, *obl.* 65/131
wyde, *obl.*
side, *obj.* 48/106

wyde, *a. pl.*
hide, *imper.* 86/717
humyde, *a. sing.* 114/281
syde, *obl.* 96/979, 131/739
wyde, *adv.*
syde, *obl.* 129/679
syde, *a. pl.* 130/711
wride *a. sing.*
abyde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 51/208
devyde, *inf.* 51/205

-ides (*see* -ise is and -is is)

besides, *adv.*
*avis is, 36/992
*gise is, 36/989

-ie, -ye (*see* -aye, -eye, -i)

accompanye, *pp.*
plie, *inf.* 55/306
remedie, *nom.* 55/303
adorifie, *inf.*
drie, *a. pl.* 110/181
applie, *imper.*
multiplie, *imper.* 178/196
Armenye, *a. sing.*
drie, *subj.* 211/122
aspie, *inf.*
mellifie, *inf.* 145/159
multiplie, *inf.* 145/157
butterflie, *obj.*
crie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 155/174
hie, *a. pl.* 147/207
caprifie, *inf.*
hie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 161/89
remedie, *obl.* 125/590
signifie, *inf.* 125/593
theye, *obl.* 161/88
crie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
butterflie, *obj.* 155/175
crie, *subj.*
drie, *a. sing.* 154/158
eye, *nom.* 154/159
crie, *inf.*
drie, *a. pl.* 44/8
crucifie, *inf.*
flie, *obj.* 32/864
defie, *inf.*
drie, *a. pl.* 102/1157
wrie, *imper.* 102/1159
denye, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 115/303
multiplie, *inf.* 115/305
destrie, *inf.*
drie, *a. pl.* 172/26
hie, *adv.* 172/23
die, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
husbondrie, *nom.* 73/343
die, *subj.*
*enaye,[1] *subj.* 50/163
*multipli,[2] *inf.* 138/936
trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 138/934
trie, *imper.* 50/165
die, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 10/253
drie, *inf.* 37/1007
eye, *obj.* 22/599
fructifie, *inf.* 116/352
husbondrie, *obj.* 70/273
intrie, *imper.* 116/355
luxurie, *nom.* 61/13
maladie, *nom.* 22/597
multiplie, *inf.* 82/588, 210/103, 216/254
trie, *imper.* 210/102, 216/257
ywrie, *pp.* 33/895
drie, *obl.*
twye, *adv.* 132/778
drie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
frie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/249
husbondrie, *nom.* 15/384
trie, *inf.* 90/808
trie, *pp.* 213/171
drie, *imper.*
multiplie, *imper.* 32/875
skye, *obl.* 82/605
testacye, *a. sing.* 156/192

[1] See footnote to *enaye*, p. 258.
[2] A perfect ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.

drie, *subj.*
Armenye, *a. sing.* 211/120
hie, *adv.* 117/375
trie, *imper.* 117/376
drie, *inf.*
die, *inf.* 37/1008
edifie, *inf.* 14/364
multiplie, *inf.* 114/291
plie, *imper.* 205/522
strie, *inf.* 114/292, 158/10
strie, *obl.* 128/670
trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 210/94
trie, *imper.* 265/523
wrie, *imper.* 13/347, 13/348
ywrie, *pp.* 128/667
drie, *a. sing.*
crie, *subj.* 154/156
denye, *inf.* 115/306
die, *inf.* 10/255
eye, *nom.* 154/159
eye, *obj.* 149/14
espie, *imper.* 179/5
espie, *inf.* 155/187
hie, *imper.* 10/242, 211/106
hie, *a. pl.* 10/243, 209/66
hie, *adv.* 12/314
husbondrie, *nom.* 76/439
lie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 53/264
multiplie, *inf.* 45/28, 78/479, 97/1008, 112/241, 115/305, 172/40, 180/25, 184/136, 188/31
ouerwrie, *inf.* 3/65
qualifie, *inf.* 48/127
sie, *inf.* 198/326
signifie, *inf.* 4/68
thrie, *adv.* 179/2
strie, *inf.* 172/39, 180/26
trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 53/263
trie, *imper.* 198/327
undrie, *inf.* 189/70
wrie, *inf.* 76/438
drie, *a. pl.*
adorifie, *inf.* 110/182
crie, *inf.* 44/10
defie, *inf.* 102/1160
destrie, *inf.* 172/25
frie, *inf.* 58/413
fructifie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 108/116
fructifie, *inf.* 30/817
hie, *imper.* 208/32
hie, *a. pl.* 18/470, 30/816, 63/55, 124/564
hie, *adv.* 172/23
husbondrie, *obl.* 5/119, 27/742 28/749
mortifie, *inf.* 57/384
multiplie, *subj.* 165/24
multiplie, *inf.* 115/322, 192/154, 196/262
plie, *imper.* 218/306
strie, *inf.* 61/10
trie, *imper.* 54/276, 54/294, 108/117
trie, *inf.* 102/1165, 124/562
wrie, *imper.* 102/1159
wrie, *inf.* 6/143, 208/33
ywrie, *pp.* 218/305
drie, *adv.*
outtrie, *imper.* 19/514
edifie, *inf.*
drie, *inf.* 14/363
espie, *imper.*
drie, *a. sing.* 179/4
thrie, *adv.* 179/2
espie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 155/184
plie, *pp.* 196/255
wrie, *inf.* 155/186
fecunditie, *nom.*
*be, *inf.* 11/285
*fertilitee, *obj.* 11/284
flie, *obj.*
crucifie, *inf.* 32/862
folie, *obj.*
husbondrie, *obl.* 1/2
magnifie, *inf.* 1/4
frie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
drie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/247
trie, *imper.* 216/250
frie, *inf.*
drie, *a. pl.* 58/412

fructifie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*
drie, *a. pl.* 108/114
trie, *imper.* 108/117
fructifie, *inf.*
die, *inf.* 116/354
drie, *a. pl.* 30/814
hie, *a. pl.* 30/816
intrie, *imper.* 116/355
trie, *imper.* 190/83
wrie, *pp.* 207/8
hie, *a. sing.*
multiplie, *inf.* 209/60
plie, *imper.* 209/61
hie, *a. pl.*
butterflie, *obj.* 147/205
drie, *a. sing.* 10/240, 209/64
drie, *a. pl.* 18/472, 30/814, 63/56, 124/565
fructifie, *inf.* 30/817
hie, *imper.* 10/242
putrifie, *inf.* 186/197
skye, *obl.* 176/156 [159
trie, *inf.* 124/562, 176/156, 176/
hie, *adv.*
destrie, *inf.* 172/25
drie, *a. sing.* 12/315
drie, *a. pl.* 172/26
drie, *subj.* 117/373
multiplie, *imper.* 186/208
trie, *imper.* 64/97, 117/376
trie, *inf.* 130/707
twye, *adv.* 186/205
hie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*
caprifie, *inf.* 161/86
theye, *obl.* 161/88
hie, *imper.*
drie, *a. sing.* 10/240, 211/108
drie, *a. pl.* 208/30
hie, *a. pl.* 10/241
wrie, *inf.* 208/33
hie, *subj.*
scarifie, *inf.* 125/601
hie, *inf.*
*dri,[1] *a. pl.* 99/1073
multiplie, *inf.* 99/1076
trie, *imper.* 216/263
wrie, *inf.* 216/261
husbondrie, *nom.*
die, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 73/342
drie, *a. sing.* 76/436
drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 15/385
maladie, *obj.* 25/685
wrie, *inf.* 76/438
husbondrie, *obj.*
die, *inf.* 70/272
husbondrie, *obl.*
drie, *a. pl.* 5/118, 27/741, 28/748
folie, *obj.* 1/5
magnifie, *inf.* 1/4
instrie, *imper.*
remedie, *imper.* 180/39
trie, *inf.* 180/40
intrie, *imper.*
die, *inf.* 116/354
fructifie, *inf.* 116/352
lie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*
drie, *a. sing.* 53/261
trie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 53/263
luxurie, *nom.*
die, *inf.* 61/14
magnifie, *inf.*
folie, *obj.* 1/5
husbondrie, *obl.* 1/2
maladie, *nom.*
die, *inf.* 22/600
eye, *obj.* 22/599
maladie, *obj.*
husbondrie, *nom.* 25/686
mellifie, *inf.*
aspie, *inf.* 145/160
multiplie, *inf.* 145/157
memorie, *obl.*
*territory, *obl.* 120/468
mortifie, *inf.*
drie, *a. pl.* 57/385
multiplie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*
*done,[2] *pp.* 162/126
remedie, *nom.* 35/954
twye, *adv.* 35/957

[1] A perfect ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.
[2] The text is hopelessly corrupt in this instance.

multiplie, *imper.*
applie, *imper.* 178/195
drie, *imper.* 32/874
hie, *adv.* 186/207
twye, *adv.* 186/205
multiplie, *subj.*
drie, *a. pl.* 165/22
signifie, *inf.* 65/109
trie, *inf.* 65/110
multiplie, *inf.*
aspie, *inf.* 145/160
denye, *inf.* 115/306
die, *inf.* 82/587, 210/100, 216/256
*dri,[1] *a. pl.* 99/1073
drie, *a. sing.* 45/27, 78/477, 97/1007, 112/239, 115/303, 172/37, 180/23, 184/134, 188/29
drie, *a. pl.* 115/321, 192/153, 196/260
drie, *inf.* 114/289
drye, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 84/642
eye, *obl.* 80/541
eye, *obj.* 127/651
hie, *a. sing.* 209/58
hie, *inf.* 99/1075
mellifie, *inf.* 145/159
plie, *imper.* 174/99, 209/61
purifie,[2] *inf.* 68/191
putrifie, *inf.* 182/83
strie, *inf.* 114/292, 172/39, 180/26
thrie, *adv.* 54/288
trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 84/639
trie, *imper.* 68/193, 210/102, 216/257
trie, *inf.* 80/544
ouerwrie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 4/67
signifie, *inf.* 4/68
outtrie, *imper.*
drie, *adv.* 19/512
plie, *imper.*
accompanye, *pp.* 55/305
drie, *a. pl.* 218/303
drie, *inf.* 205/520
eye, *nom.* 104/16
espie, *inf.* 196/253
hie, *a. sing.* 209/58
multiplie, *inf.* 174/101, 209/60
remedie, *nom.* 55/303
trie, *imper.* 205/523
wrie, *imper.* 104/19
ywrie, *pp.* 218/305
purifie,[2] *inf.*
multiplie, *inf.* 68/194
trie, *imper.* 68/193
putrifie, *inf.*
hie, *a. pl.* 186/199
multiplie, *inf.* 182/84
qualifie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 48/129
remedie, *nom.*
accompanye, *pp.* 55/305
multiplie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/956
plie, *inf.* 55/306
twye, *adv.* 35/957
remedie, *obl.*
caprifie, *inf.* 125/592
signifie, *inf.* 125/593
remedie, *imper.*
instrie, *imper.* 180/37
trie, *inf.* 180/40
scarifie, *inf.*
hie, *subj.* 125/602
sie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 198/324
trie, *imper.* 198/327
signifie, *inf.*
caprifie, *inf.* 125/592
drie, *a. sing.* 4/67
multiplie, *subj.* 65/107
ouerwrie, *inf.* 3/65
remedie, *obl.* 125/590
trie, *inf.* 65/110

[1] A perfect ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.
[2] Read *putrifie*.

skye, *obl.*
drie, *imper.* 82/603
hie, *a. pl.* 176/158
trie, *inf.* 176/159
strie, *obl.*
drie, *inf.* 128/669
ywrie, *pp.* 128/667
strie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 172/37, 180/23
drie, *a. pl.* 61/8
drie, *inf.* 114/289, 158/8
multiplie, *inf.* 114/291, 172/40, 180/25
testacye, *a. sing.*
drie, *imper.* 156/190
thrie, *adv.*
drie, *a. sing.* 179/4
espie, *imper.* 179/5
multiplie, *inf.* 54/290
trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
deye, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 84/642
die, *subj.* 138/937
drie, *inf.* 210/92
drie, *a. sing.* 53/261
lie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 53/264
multiplie, *inf.* 84/641, 138/936
trie, *imper.*
die, *subj.* 50/166
die, *inf.* 210/100, 216/256
drie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 216/247
drie, *subj.* 117/373
drie, *a. sing.* 198/324
drie, *a. pl.* 54/274, 54/293, 108/114
drie, *inf.* 205/520
*enaye,[1] *subj.* 50/163
frie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 210/249
fructifie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 108/116
fructifie, *inf.* 190/84
hie, *adv.* 64/98, 117/375
hie, *inf.* 216/264
multiplie, *inf.* 68/194, 210/103, 216/254
plie, *imper.* 205/522
purifie,[2] *inf.* 68/191
sie, *inf.* 198/326
wrie, *inf.* 216/261
trie, *inf.*
drie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 90/806
drie, *a. pl.* 102/1163, 124/565
eye, *obl.* 80/541
hie, *a. pl.* 124/564, 176/158
hie, *adv.* 130/708
instrie, *imper.* 180/37
multiplie, *subj.* 65/107
multiplie, *inf.* 80/543
remedie, *imper.* 180/39
signifie, *inf.* 65/109
skye, *obl.* 176/156
trie, *pp.*
drie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 213/169
twye, *adv.*
drie, *obl.* 132/777
hie, *adv.* 186/207
multiplie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/956
multiplie, *imper.* 186/208
remedie, *nom.* 35/954
undrie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 189/69
wrie, *imper.*
defie, *inf.* 102/1160
drie, *a. pl.* 102/1157
drie, *inf.* 13/345
eye, *nom.* 104/16
plie, *imper.* 104/18
wrie, *imper.* 13/348
wrie, *inf.*
drie, *a. sing.* 76/436, 155/184
drie, *a. pl.* 6/141, 208/30
espie, *inf.* 155/187
hie, *imper.* 208/32
hie, *inf.* 216/264
husbondrie, *nom.* 76/439
trie, *imper.* 216/263
wrie, *pp.*
fructifie, *inf.* 207/10

[1] See note to *enaye*, p. 258.

[2] Read *putrifie*.

ywrie, *pp.*
die, *inf.* 33/896, 128/669
drie, *a. pl.* 218/303
plie, *imper.* 218/316
strie, *obl.* 128/670

-ied

multiplied, *pp.*
wried, *pp.* 163/146
wried, *pp.*
multiplied, *pp.* 163/147

-yer (*see* **-ire**)

myer, *obl.*
*desire, *imper.* 2/38

-ifte

lifte, *a. sing.*
swifte, *a. pl.* 133/795
swifte, *a. pl.*
lifte, *a. sing.* 133/793

-ige

caprifige, *adj.*
fige, *obj.* 125/591
fige, *obj.*
caprifige, *adj.* 125/589

-igges (*see* **-igg is**)

figges, *n. pl.*
bigg is, 41/1130

-igg is (*see* **-igges**)

bigg is
figges, *n. pl.* 41/1128

-igh, -ygh

nygh, *a. pl.*
sligh, *a. sing.* 146/169
nygh, *adv.*
sigh, *subj.* 28/766
slygh, *a. sing.* 145/162
sigh, *subj.*
nygh, *adv.* 28/764
sligh, *a. sing.*
nygh, *a. pl.* 146/168
slygh, *a. sing.*
nygh, *adv.* 145/161

-yghtes (*see* **-ight is**)

anyghtes, *adv.*
dight is, 117/381

-ight is (*see* **-yghtes**)

dight is
anyghtes, *obl.* 117/379

-ight, -yght (*see* **-eight**)

bright, *a. sing.*
dight, *imper.* 16/416
dight, *imper.*
bright, *a. sing.* 16/414
light, *a. sing.* 40/1084, 181/64
light, *obj.* 19/506
sight, *obj.* 19/508
dight, *inf.*
myght, *obl.* 28/754
sight, *obl.* 28/751
dight, *pp.*
*weight, *obj.* 41/1121
downeright, *adv.*
myght, *obl.* 36/971
upright, *adv.* 36/968
light, *nom.*
myght, *obl.* 175/107
ydight, *pp.* 175/110
light, *obj.*
dight, *imper.* 19/509
sight, *obj.* 19/508
light, *a. sing.*
dight, *imper.* 40/1085
dight, *pp.* 181/66
light, *a. sing.* 13/328, 13/329
nyght, *obj.* 2/30
sight, *nom.* 2/32
light, *a. pl.*
right, *adv.* 45/49
myght, *obl.*
dight, *inf.* 28/753
downeright, *adv.* 36/970
sight, *obl.* 28/751
upright, *adv.* 36/968

myght, *obl.*
lyght, *nom.* 175/109
ydight, *pp.* 175/110
nyght, *obj.*
light, *a. sing.* 2/33
sight, *nom.* 2/32
right, *adv.*
light, *a. pl.* 45/48
ydight, *pp.* 62/29
sight, *nom.*
light, *a. sing.* 2/33
nyght, *obj.* 2/30
sight, *obl.*
dight, *inf.* 28/753
sight, *obj.*
dight, *imper.* 19/509
light, *obj.* 19/506
myght, *obl.* 28/754
upright, *adv.*
downeright, *adv.* 36/970
myght, *obl.* 36/971
ydight, *pp.*
light, *nom.* 175/109
nyght, *obl.* 175/107
right, *adv.* 62/31

-igne (*see* **-ynge, -yne**)

assigne, *imper.*
medicyne, *inf.* 203/450
reclyne, *inf.* 203/452
assigne, *inf.*
*benynynge,[1] *a. sing.* 81/556
benygne, *adj.*
declyne, *inf.* 171/18
vyne, *obj.* 171/16
digne, *a. sing.*
canteryne, *a. sing.* 187/6
carbunculyne, *a. sing.* 216/272
signe, *nom.*
vyne, *obl.* 174/90
signe, *obj.*
vyne, *obl.* 188/22

-ik, -yk (*see* **-icke**)

brik, *nom.*
*thicke, *a. sing.* 156/203
epatik, *a. pl.*
Indik, *a. sing.* 201/411
mastic, *obl.* 201/410
quyk, *a. pl.*
splenetyk, *a. sing.* 168/125
splenetyk, *a. sing.*
quyk, *a. pl.* 168/126

-ike, -yke (*see* **-eke**)

Celtike, *a. sing.*
epatike, *a. pl.* 200/361
smyke, *obl.* 200/362
epatike, *a. pl.*
Celtike, *a. sing.* 200/359
smyke, *obl.* 200/362
galatike, *a. sing.*
like, *a. sing.* 45/32
like, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 45/33
Indik, *a. sing.*
epatik, *a. pl.* 201/408
mastic, *obl.* 201/410
like, *a. sing.*
galatike, *a. sing.* 45/30
like, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 45/33
rubrike, *obl.* 156/197
like, *a. pl.*
prike, *inf.* 135/858
like, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
galatike, *a. sing.* 45/30
like, *a. sing.* 45/32
rubrike, *a. sing.* 217/274
like, *subj.*
prike, *imper.* 182/87
pike, *inf.*
rubrike, *obl.* 122/512
seke, *a. sing.* 137/905
thamarike, *obl.* 218/316
prike, *imper.*
like, *subj.* 182/85
prike, *inf.*
like, *a. pl.* 135/856

[1] A ryme spoilt by the scribe; read *benygne*.

rubrike, *a. sing.*
like, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/276
strike, *n. pl.* 181/63
rubrike, *obl.*
like, *a. sing.* 156/199
pike, *inf.* 122/514
ulpike, *obj.* 110/166
unlike, *a. sing.* 110/165
slyke, *a. pl.*
strike, *obl.* 26/687
smyke, *obl.*
Celtike, *a. sing.* 200/359
epatike, *a. pl.* 200/361
strike, *n. pl.*
rubrike, *a. sing.* 181/62
strike, *obl.*
slyke, *a. pl.* 26/689
thamarike, *obl.*
pike, *inf.* 216/318
ulpike, *obj.*
rubrike, *obl.* 110/163
unlike, *a. sing.* 110/165
unlike, *a. sing*
rubrike, *obl.* 110/163
ulpike, *obj.* 110/166

-ild

fild, *pp.*
spild, *pp.* 118/402
spild, *pp.*
fild, *pp.* 118/400

-ilde, -ylde

childe, *obl.*
mylde, *obj.* 145/152
mylde, *a. sing.* 145/153
mylde, *a. pl.* 194/208
wilde, *a. pl.* 4/69, 58/398, 194/205
mylde, *nom.*
wilde, *a. pl.* 183/129
mylde, *obj.*
childe, *obl.* 145/150
mylde, *a. sing.* 145/153
mylde, *a. sing.*
childe, *obl.* 145/150
mylde, *obj.* 145/152
mylde, *a. pl.*
childe, *obl.* 194/207
wilde, *a. pl.* 194/205
wilde, *a. sing.*
ytilde, *pp.* 110/164
wilde, *a. pl.*
childe, *obl.* 4/70, 58/399, 194/207
mylde, *nom.* 183/127
mylde, *a. pl.* 194/208
ytilde, *pp.*
wilde, *a. sing.* 110/162

-ildren (*see* **eldron**)

children, *n. pl.*
eldron, *n. pl.* 26/714

-ildron (*see* **eldron**)

childron, *n. pl.*
eldron, *n. pl.* 6/125

-ile, -yle (*see* **-ille**)

Aprile, *obl.*
while, *nom.* 164/3
begile, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
otherwhile, *adv.* 175/121
while, *obl.* 175/124
dyle, *obj.*
skyle, *nom.* 110/168
exile, *a. sing.*
smyle, *inf.* 201/390
while, *obl.* 188/35, 201/389
overwhile, *adv.*
begile, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 175/123
while, *obl.* 175/124
skyle, *nom.*
dyle, *obj.* 110/167
smyle, *inf.*
exile, *a. sing.* 201/387
while, *obl.* 201/389
squyle, *obl.*
*ille, *adv.* 100/1113
stile, *obj.*
Virgile, *n. pr.* 88/769
vile, *a. pl.*
while, *obl.* 176/155

Virgile *n. pr.*
stile, *obj.* 88/770
while, *nom.*
Aprile, *obl.* 164/1
while, *obl.*
begile, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 175/123
exile, *a. sing.* 188/34, 201/387
otherwhile, *adv.* 175/121
smyle, *inf.* 201/390
vile, *a. pl.* 176/157

-ille, -ylle (*see* **-yle**)

fille, *inf.*
ille, *a. sing.* 117/364
ille, *a. sing.*
fille, *inf.* 117/363
ille, *a. pl.*
kille, *inf.* 32/858
squylle, *obj.* 32/856
ille, *adv.*
*squyle, *obl.* 100/1112
stille, *adv.* 114/288
kille, *inf.*
ille, *a. pl.* 32/859
squylle, *obj.* 32/856
spille, *pp.*
wille, *nom.* 170/165
squylle, *obl.*
wille, *obl.* 101/1134
squylle, *obj.*
ille, *a. pl.* 32/859
kille, *inf.* 32/858
stille, *adv.*
ille, *adv.* 114/290
wille, *nom.*
spille, *pp.* 170/164
wille, *obl.*
squylle, *obl.* 101/1133

-ille is (*see* **-illys**)

wille is
hillys, *n. pl.* 213/181

-illys (*see* **-ille is**)

hillys, *n. pl.*
wille is, 213/182

-yme (*see* **-y me**)

betyme, *adv.*
tyme, *obj.* 30/820
lyme, *obl.*
tyme, *obl.* 15/406
pryme, *nom.*
tyme, *obj.* 157/227
pryme, *obl.*
by me, 163/143
tyme, *obl.*
lyme, *obl.* 15/405
tyme, *obj.*
betyme, *adv.* 30/822
pryme, *nom.* 157/225

-y me (*see* **-yme**)

by me
pryme, *obl.* 163/141

-in, -yn (*see* **-yne, -ynne**)

comyn, *obl.*
lupyn, *obl.* 23/609
fyn, *a. sing.*
therein, *adv.* 59/417
*wyne, *obl.* 59/415
immuyn, *a. sing.*
Juyn, *obl.* 157/239
Juyn, *obl.*
immuyn, *a. sing.* 157/237
lupyn, *obl.*
comyn, *obl.* 23/608
therein, *adv.*
fyn, *a. sing.* 59/418
*synne, *nom.* 156/193
*thynne, *a. sing.* 156/194
*wyne, *obl.* 59/415

-inde, -ynde

behinde, *adv.*
bynde, *inf.* 153/114
kynde, *a. sing.* 132/760
kynde, *obl.* 141/33, 153/116
rynde, *obj.* 118/386
rynde, *obl.* 141/31, 208/43

behynde, *adv.*
kynde, *obl.* 159/44
lynde, *nom.* 37/1021
upwynde, *inf.* 159/47
blynde, *a. pl.*
kynde, *obl.* 150/34
bynde, *imper.*
fynde, *inf.* 8/206
rynde, *obj.* 161/100
wynde, *imper.* 161/103
bynde, *inf.*
behinde, *adv.* 153/117
fynde, *subj.* 12/321, 212/152
kynde, *nom.* 74/361
kynde, *obl.* 153/116, 212/151
rinde, *obl.* 74/384
rynde, *obj.* 74/359
rynde, *obl.* 212/141
fynde, *v.* 1 *s. pres.*
kynde, *a. sing.* 148/221
fynde, *v.* 2 *pres. sing.*
rynde, *obj.* 70/260
fynde, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.*
kynde, *obl.* 161/95
rynde, *obl.* 161/93
fynde, *subj.*
bynde, *inf.* 12/322, 212/149
kynde, *obl.* 212/151
kynde, *a. sing.* 185/180
rynde, *obl.* 185/177
fynde, *inf.*
bynde, *imper.* 8/204
kynde, *obl.* 15/395, 96/989
kynde, *obj.* 37/1012
rynde, *nom.* 96/992
rynde, *obl.* 109/154, 113/263
wynde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/261
wynde, *obl.* 37/1010
kynde, *a. sing.*
behinde, *adv.* 132/758
finde, *subj.* 185/179
fynde, *v.* 1 *s. pres.* 148/219
mynde, *obl.* 145/138
rynde, *obl.* 120/462, 145/136, 185/177
wynde, *imper.* 116/338
wynde, *inf.* 116/341
kynde, *adv.*
behynde, *adv.* 159/46
upwynde, *inf.* 159/47
kynde, *nom.*
bynde, *inf.* 74/362
rynde, *obl.* 38/1047, 95/953, 104/13
rynde, *obj.* 74/359
unkynde, *a. sing.* 38/1048
kynde, *obj.*
finde, *inf.* 37/1013
mynde, *obj.* 66/140
mynde, *obl.* 65/124
wynde, *obl.* 37/1010, 65/121
kynde, *obl.*
behinde, *adv.* 141/34, 153/117,
blynde, *a. pl.* 150/35
bynde, *inf.* 153/114, 212/149
fynde, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.* 161/96
fynde, *subj.* 212/154
fynde, *inf.* 15/393
lynde, *nom.* 13/336
mynde, *obl.* 195/231
mynde, *obj.* 163/133, 193/163
rynde, *obl.* 55/328, 73/349, 97/1023, 141/31, 161/93
unbinde, *inf.* 71/293
wynde, *imper.* 193/166
lynde, *nom.*
behynde, *adv.* 37/1022
kynde, *obl.* 13/335
mankynde, *nom.*
rynde, *obl.* 193/188
mynde, *obj.*
kynde, *obj.* 66/147, 163/132, 193/165
wynde, *imper.* 193/166
mynde, *obl.*
kynde, *obl.* 195/230
kynde, *obj.* 65/123
kynde, *a. sing.* 145/139
rynde, *obl.* 145/136
wynde, *obl.* 65/121
rynde, *nom.*
finde, *inf.* 96/991
kynde, *obl.* 96/989

rynde, *obj.*
behinde, *adv.* 118/388
bynde, *imper.* 161/102
bynde, *inf.* 74/362
fynde, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 70/262
kynde, *nom.* 74/361
wynde, *imper.* 161/103
rinde, *obl.*
bynde, *inf.* 74/385
rynde, *obl.*
behinde, *adv.* 141/34, 208/45
bynde, *inf.* 212/143
finde, *subj.* 185/179
finde, *inf.* 96/991, 109/153
fynde, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.* 161/96
fynde, *inf.* 113/264
kynde, *a. sing.* 120/461, 145/139, 185/180
kynde, *nom.* 38/1045, 95/955, 104/14
kynde, *obl.* 55/329, 73/350, 97/1025, 141/33, 161/95
mankynde, *nom.* 193/189
mynde, *obl.* 145/138
rynde, *nom.* 96/992
unkynde, *a. sing.* 38/1048
wynde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/261
unbinde, *inf.*
kynde, *obl.* 71/294
unkynde, *a. sing.*
kynde, *nom.* 38/1045
rynde, *obl.* 38/1047
upwynde, *inf.*
behinde, *adv.* 159/46
kynde, *obl.* 159/44
wynde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
fynde, *inf.* 113/264
rynde, *obl.* 113/263
wynde, *imper.*
bynde, *imper.* 101/102
kynde, *a. sing.* 116/340
kynde, *obl.* 193/165
mynde, *obj.* 193/163
rynde, *obj.* 161/100
wynde, *inf.* 116/341
wynde, *inf.*
kynde, *a. sing.* 116/340
wynde, *imper.* 116/338
wynde, *obl.*
finde, *inf.* 37/1013
kynde, *obj.* 37/1012, 65/123
mynde, *obl.* 65/124

-ine, -yne (*see* **-igne, -ygne**)

argentine, *a. sing.*
entyne, *inf.* 154/104
bryne, *obj.*
vyne, *obj.* 107/99
canteryne, *a. sing.*
digne, *a. sing.* 187/7
lupyne, *nom.* 181/59
carbunculyne, *a. sing.*
digne, *a. sing.* 216/273
columbyne, *nom.*
myne, *nom.* 14/374
declyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
lupyne, *obl.* 122/508
uryne, *nom.* 122/506
vyne, *obj.* 72/302
declyne, *imper.*
lyne, *obl.* 71/296
vyne, *obl.* 71/299
declyne, *subj.*
enclyne, *imper.* 28/765
enclyne, *subj.* 12/296
enmyne, *imper.* 28/768
shyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 12/299
declyne, *inf.*
benygne, *a. sing.* 171/19
medicyne, *obj.* 102/1169
nyne (IX), *a. pl.* 157/226
shyne, *inf.* 157/229
vyne, *obl.* 70/251
vyne, *obj.* 171/16
declyne, *obl.*
duracyne, *a. sing.* 211/121
vespertyne, *a. sing.* 211/123
discyplyne, *nom.*
nyne (IX^{ne}), *a. pl.* 161/87
duracyne, *a. sing.*
declyne, *obl.* 211/124
vespertyne, *a. sing.* 211/123

dwyne, *inf.*
nyne (IX^ne), *a. pl.* 75/411
vyne, *obj.* 75/408
enclyne, *imper.*
declyne, *subj.* 28/767
enmyne, *imper.* 28/768
enclyne, *subj.*
declyne, *subj.* 12/298
shyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 12/299
enmyne, *imper.*
declyne, *subj.* 28/767
enclyne, *imper.* 28/765
entyne, *inf.*
argentine, *a. sing.* 152/105
fyne, *inf.*
maryne, *a. sing.* 197/291
wyne, *nom.* 197/286
wyne, *obl.* 197/289, 200/363
fyne, *a. sing.*
squillyne, *a. sing.* 169/134
fyne, *a. pl.*
lauryne, *a. sing.* 209/70
lauryne, *a. sing.*
fyne, *a. pl.* 209/69
mastycyne, *obl.* 109/144
reclyne, *subj.* 109/142
lyne *obl.*
declyne, *imper.* 71/298
triclyne, *obj.* 15/391
vyne, *obl.* 71/299
lyne, *obj.*
vyne, *obl.* 66/140
lupyne, *nom.*
canteryne, *a. sing.* 181/57
lupyne, *obl.*
declyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 122/509
*fyne is,[1] 153/131
uryne, *nom.* 122/506
*wynys,[1] *n. pl.* 153/130
maryne, *a. sing.*
fyne, *inf.* 197/292
wyne, *obl.* 197/289
mastycyne, *obl.*
lauryne, *a. sing.* 109/145
reclyne, *subj.* 109/142
medicyne, *obl.*
pyne, *obl.* 137/911
medicyne, *obj.*
declyne, *inf.* 102/1168
medicyne, *inf.*
assigne, *imper.* 203/453
reclyne, *inf.* 203/452
myne, *nom.*
columbyne, *nom.* 14/372
myne, *inf.*
reclyne, *inf.* 73/333
vyne, *nom.* 73/331
nine (IX), *a. pl.*
declyne, *inf.* 157/228
discyplyne, *nom.* 161/85
divyne, *inf.* 75/410
pastyne,[2] *inf.* 48/113
shyne, *inf.* 157/229
vyne, *obj.* 75/408
pastyne, *inf.*
nyne,[2] *a. pl.* 48/115
pyne, *obl.*
medicyne, *obl.* 137/910
recline, *imper.*
tarentyne, *a. pl.* 57/372
reclyne, *subj.*
lauryne, *a. sing.* 109/145
mastycyne, *obl.* 109/144
reclyne, *inf.*
assigne, *imper.* 203/453
medicyne, *inf.* 203/450
myne, *inf.* 73/334
shyne, *inf.* 89/797
vyne, *nom.* 73/331
wyne, *obj.* 125/608
shyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
declyne, *subj.* 12/298
enclyne, *subj.* 12/296

[1] In this instance there can be no doubt that the correct reading is *lupynes*.
[2] MS. *nyde*.

shyne, *inf.*
declyne, *inf.* 185/228
nyne (IX), *a. pl.* 157/226
reclyne, *inf.* 89/798
squillyne, *a. sing.*
fyne, *a. sing.* 169/136
tarentyne, *a. pl.*
recline, *imper.* 57/374
thyne, *pron.*
wyne, *obj.* 7/174
triclyne, *obj.*
lyne, *obl.* 15/392
uryne, *nom.*
declyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 122/509
lupyne, *obl.* 122/508
uryne, *obj.*
vyne, *nom.* 219/337
vespertyne, *a. sing.*
declyne, *obl.* 211/124
duracyne, *a. sing.* 211/121
vyne, *nom.*
uryne, *obj.* 219/339
vyne, *obl.*
*benynge,[1] *a. sing.* 111/206
declyne, *imper.* 71/298
lyne, *obl.* 71/296
lyne, *obj.* 66/139
signe, *nom.* 174/91
signe, *obj.* 188/24
vyne, *obj.*
benygne, *a. sing.* 171/19
bryne, *obj.* 107/101
declyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 72/304
declyne, *inf.* 70/252, 171/18
divyne, *inf.* 75/410
nyne (IX^ne), *a. pl.* 75/411
wyne, *nom.*
fyne, *inf.* 197/287
myne, *imper.* 73/334
reclyne, *inf.* 73/333
wyne, *obl.*
*enclyne is,[2] 199/341
*fyn, *a. sing.* 59/418
fyne, *inf.* 197/292, 200/364
maryne, *a. sing.* 197/291
reclyne, *inf.* 125/609
*therein, *adv.* 59/417
thyne, *pron.* 7/175
*wyne is,[2] 199/340
ynne, *adv.* 127/657

-ynes (*see* **-ine is, -yne is, -ynne is**)

vynes, *n. pl.*
*pynne is, 37/1006
vine is, 67/171
wynes, *n. pl.* 37/1005, 63/77, 71/286, 171/14
wyne is, 7/171, 48/126
wynes, *n. pl.*
*pynne is, 37/1006
vynes, *n. pl.* 37/1003, 63/76, 71/287, 171/13

-ine is, -yne is (*see* **-ynes, -ynys**)

enclyne is
wyne,[2] *obl.* 199/338
wyne is, 199/340
fyne is
lupyne,[3] *obl.* 153/128
wynys, *n. pl.* 153/130
vine is
vynes, *n. pl.* 67/169
vyne is
vynys, *n. pl.* 69/225
wyne is
enclyne is, 199/341
vynes, *n. pl.* 7/169, 48/125
wyne,[2] *obl.* 199/338

-ynys (*see* **-yne is**)

vynys, *n. pl.*
vyne is, 69/227
wynys, *n. pl.*
fyne is, 153/131
lupyne,[3] *obl.* 153/128

[1] Read *benygne*, which will give a perfectly good ryme.
[2] Apparently we should read *wynes* in l. 338.
[3] In this instance there can be no doubt that the correct reading is *lupynes*.

-ing, yng (*see* **-inge, -ynge**)

anything, *obl.*
  slevyng, *obj.* 67/163
 *springe, *inf.* 67/166
boring, *obl.*
 *bringe, *inf.* 97/1014
bring, *inf.*
  everything, *obl.* 1/11
  housyng, *obl.* 1/9
chillyng, *a. sing.*
 *graffinge, *obj.* 98/1047
 *sprynge, *imper.* 98/1048
clevyng, *obl.*
  germynyng, *obl.* 115/316
connyng, *obj.*
  gynnyng, *nom.* 178/212
  spryng, *inf.* 178/215
 *uphinge, *inf.* 178/217
coveryng, *obl.*
 *bringe, *inf.* 14/369
  worching, *obl.* 14/366
defervyng, *obl.*
 *boylinge, *nom.* 204/488
 *brynge, *inf.* 204/487
dounging, *obl.*
 *brynge, *inf.* 114/301
everything, *obl.*
  bring, *inf.* 1/12
  housyng, *obl.* 1/9
germynyng, *obl.*
 *brynge, *inf.* 128/674
  clevyng, *obl.* 115/318
  spryng, *inf.* 128/677
gynnyng, *nom.*
  connyng, *obj.* 178/214
  spryng, *inf.* 178/215
 *uphinge, *inf.* 178/217
growing, *a. pl.*
  kytting, *obl.* 69/239
helping, *obl.*
 *brynge, *inf.* 21/548
 *flynge, *inf.* 21/550
housyng, *obl.*
  bring, *inf.* 1/12
  everything, *obl.* 1/11
husbondyng, *obl.*
 *kepynge, *obl.* 18/468
kytting, *obl.*
  growing, *a. pl.* 69/241
likyng, *obl.*
 *flynge, *subj.* 132/762
  spryng, *inf.* 132/761
meddissyng, *pres. p.*
  spryngyng, *obl.* 29/798
pastynyng, *obj.*
 *sowynge, *nom.* 151/75
 *sprynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 151/74
pastynyng, *obl.*
 *dichinge, *obl.* 46/73
ryvullyng, *obl.*
 *sprynge, *inf.* 196/259
slevyng, *obj.*
  anything, *obl.* 67/165
 *springe, *inf.* 67/166
slevyng, *obl.*
  cherisshinge, *nom.* 185/165
 *sprynge, *inf.* 185/166
spryng, *inf.*
 *brynge, *inf.* 128/674
  connyng, *obj.* 178/214
 *flynge, *subj.* 132/762
  germynyng, *obl.* 128/676
  gynnyng, *nom.* 178/212
  likyng, *obl.* 132/759
 *uphinge, *inf.* 178/217
spryngyng, *obl.*
  meddissyng, *pr. p.* 29/797
tyllyng *obl.*
 *brynge, *inf.* 29/774
 *pastynynge, *obl.* 29/772
tuppyng, *nom.*
 *sprynge, *subj.* 145/155
vessellyng, *obl.*
 *bespringe, *inf.* 191/109
 *wrynge, *obj.* 191/107
worching, *obl.*
 *bringe, *inf.* 14/369
  coveryng, *obl.* 14/368

-inge, -ynge (*see* -igne, -ing, -yng)

benynge,[1] *a. sing.*
  vyne, *obl.* 111/204
benynynge,[1] *a. sing.*
  *assigne, *inf.* 81/554
bespringe, *inf.*
  *vessellyng, *obl.* 191/110
  wrynge, *obj.* 191/107
blossomynge, *obl.*
  delvynge, *obl.* 87/738
boylinge, *nom.*
  brynge, *inf.* 204/487
  defervynge, *obl.* 204/485
boilynge, *obj.*
  vessellinge, *obl.* 118/410
  wrynge, *obl.* 118/408
bredynge, *obl.*
  brynge, *inf.* 24/632
  legginge, *obl.* 24/634
brynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  [s]prynge, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 136/896
bringe, *imper.*
  sittynge, *a. sing.* 22/586
  springe, *obl.* 22/585
bringe, *inf.*
  *boring, *obl.* 97/1015
  *coveryng, *obl.* 14/368
  springe, *inf.* 79/504
  *worching, *obl.* 14/366
brynge, *inf.*
  boylinge, *nom.* 204/488
  bredynge, *obl.* 24/635
  *defervynge, *obl.* 204/485
  *dounging, *obl.* 114/300
  flynge, *inf.* 21/550, 202/425
  *germynynge, *obl.* 128/676
  graffynge, *nom.* 117/369
  growinge, *obl.* 202/424
  *helping, *obl.* 21/551
  legginge, *obl.* 24/634
  pastynynge, *obl.* 29/772
  servynge, *nom.* 113/251
  *spryng, *inf.* 128/677
  springe, *imper.* 99/1071
  sprynge, *subj.* 117/366
  sprynge, *inf.* 103/1175, 112/225, 124/559
  *tyllyng, *obl.* 29/775
burgynynge, *obl.*
  chinge, *inf.* 74/373
  springinge, *obl.* 74/375
cherisshinge, *nom.*
  *slevyng, *obl.* 185/163
  sprynge, *inf.* 185/166
chinge, *inf.*
  burgynynge, *obl.* 74/376
  springinge, *obl.* 74/375
delvynge, *obl.*
  blossomynge, *obl.* 87/736
dichinge, *obl.*
  *pastynyng, *obl.* 46/71
durynge, *obj.*
  sprynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 210/97
flynge, *v.* 2 *s. pres.*
  sprynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 151/55
flynge, *subj.*
  *likyng, *obl.* 132/759
  *spryng, *inf.* 132/761
flynge, *inf.*
  brynge, *inf.* 21/548, 202/422
  growinge, *obl.* 202/424
  *helping, *obl.* 21/551
germynynge, *obl.*
  thinge, *obl.* 126/630
graffynge, *nom.*
  brynge, *inf.* 117/368
  sprynge, *subj.* 117/366
graffinge, *obj.*
  *chillyng, *a. sing* 98/1045
  sprynge, *imper.* 98/1048
growinge, *obl.*
  brynge, *inf.* 202/422
  flynge, *inf.* 202/425
husbondynge, *nom.*
  thynge, *obl.* 6/146
kepynge, *obl.*
  *husbondyng, *obl.* 18/469

[1] Read *benygne*, which will give perfectly good rymes.

legginge, *obl.*
bredynge, *obl.* 24/635
brynge, *inf.* 24/632
mynge, *imper.*
wattrynge, *imp. p.* 119/420
pastynynge, *obl.*
brynge, *inf.* 29/774
*tyllyng, *obl.* 29/175
planntynge, *obl.*
taryinge, *obj.* 112/233
wedynge, *obl.* 112/235
servynge, *nom.*
brynge, *inf.* 113/252
synge, *inf.*
watermynge, *pp.* 94/939
sittynge, *a. sing.*
bringe, *imper.* 22/583
springe, *obl.* 22/585
smellinge, *a. sing.*
wanynge, *obl.* 89/780
sowynge, *nom.*
*pastynyng, *obj.* 151/72
sprynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 151/74
springe, *obl.*
bringe, *imper.* 22/583
sittynge, *a. sing.* 22/586
[s]prynge, 3 *s. pres.*
brynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 136/897
springe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
springe, *inf.* 194/210
tothinge, *obl.* 25/665
sprynge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
durynge, *obj.* 210/98
flynge, *v.* 2 *s. pres.* 151/56
*pastynyng, *obj.* 151/72
sowynge, *nom.* 151/75
springe, *imper.*
brynge, *inf.* 99/1070
sprynge, *imper.*
*chillyng, *a. sing.* 98/1045
graffinge, *obj.* 98/1047
sprynge, *subj.*
brynge, *inf.* 117/368
graffynge, *nom.* 117/369
*tuppyng, *nom.* 145/154
waterynge, *obj.* 109/140
springe, *inf.*
*anything, *obl.* 67/165
bringe, *inf.* 79/503
*slevyng, *obj.* 67/163
springe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 194/209
tillynge, *obj.* 81/560
sprynge, *inf.*
brynge, *imper.* 103/1176
brynge, *inf.* 112/227, 124/560
cherisshinge, *nom.* 185/165
*ryvullyng, *obl.* 196/258
*slevyng, *obl.* 185/163
springinge, *obl.*
burgynynge, *obl.* 74/376
chinge, *inf.* 74/373
taryinge, *obj.*
planntynge, *obl.* 112/236
wedynge, *obl.* 112/235
thinge, *obl.*
germynynge, *obl.* 126/629
thynge, *obl.*
husbondynge, *nom.* 6/147
tillynge, *obj.*
springe, *inf.* 81/559
tothinge, *obl.*
springe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 25/664
uphinge, *inf.*
*connyng, *obj.* 178/214
*gynnyng, *nom.* 178/212
*spryng, *inf.* 178/215
vessellinge, *obl.*
boilynge, *obj.* 118/411
wrynge, *obl.* 118/408
wanynge, *obl.*
smellinge, *a. sing.* 89/778
waterynge, *obj.*
sprynge, *subj.* 109/139
watermynge, *pp.*
synge, *inf.* 94/941
wattrynge, *imp. p.*
mynge, *imper.* 119/419
wedynge, *obl.*
planntynge, *obl.* 112/236
taryinge, *obj.* 112/233
wrynge, *obj.*
bespringe, *inf.* 191/109
*vessellyng, *obl.* 191/110

wrynge, *obl.*
boilynge, *obj.* 118/411
vessellinge, *obl.* 118/410

-inges, -ynges

strynges, *n. pl.*
thinges, *n. pl.* 152/101
thinges, *n. pl.*
strynges, *n. pl.* 152/99

-ingeth (*see* **-engeth**)

springeth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
mengeth, *imper.* 32/878

-ynk (*see* **-inke, -ynke**)

synk, *inf.*
*drinke,[1] *inf.* 191/106
*drynke,[1] *inf.* 105/23
unwynk, *inf.* 105/25
unwynk, *inf.*
*drynke,[1] *inf.* 105/23
synk, *inf.* 105/26

-inke, -ynke (*see* **-ynk**)

brinke, *obl.*
drinke, *inf.* 4/82
synke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 47/90
thinke, *inf.* 4/81
brynke, *obj.*
synke, *subj.* 30/815
brynke, *obl.*
drinke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 10/229
drynke, *inf.* 17/446
synke, *subj.* 17/445
synke, *inf.* 17/449, 176/145
thinke, *inf.* 176/144
drinke, *obj.*
thinke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 194/199
drinke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
brynke, *obl.* 10/241
drinke, *imper.*
swynke, *inf.* 202/439
thinke, *imper.* 202/438
drinke, *inf.*
brinke, *obl.* 4/79
*synk,[1] *inf.* 191/108
synke, *subj.* 2/37
stynke, *subj.* 3/40
thinke, *inf.* 4/81
drynke, *inf.*
brynke, *obl.* 17/446
*synk,[1] *inf.* 105/26
synke, *subj.* 17/443
*unwynk,[1] *inf.* 105/25
synke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
brinke, *obl.* 47/91
synke, *subj.*
brynke, *obj.* 30/813
brynke, *obl.* 17/445
drinke, *inf.* 3/39
drynke, *inf.* 17/446
stynke, *subj.* 3/40
synke, *inf.*
brynke, *obl.* 17/451, 176/142
thinke, *inf.* 176/144
stynke, *subj.*
drinke, *inf.* 3/39
synke, *subj.* 2/37
swynke, *inf.*
drinke, *imper.* 202/436
thinke, *imper.* 202/438
thinke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
drinke, *obj.* 194/197
thinke, *imper.*
drinke, *imper.* 202/436
swynke, *inf.* 202/439
thinke, *inf.*
brinke, *obl.* 4/79
brynke, *obl.* 176/142
drinke, *inf.* 4/82
synke, *inf.* 176/145

-inne, -ynne (*see* **-in, -yne**)

atwynne, *adv.*
withinne, *adv.* 66/136
ynne, *prep.* 214/213

[1] The ryme has been spoiled by the carelessness of the scribe.

begynne, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
synne, *nom.* 213/165
wynne, *imper.* 213/166
begynne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
twynne, *inf.* 174/87
begynne, *subj.*
twynne, *inf.* 132/764
begynne, *inf.*
therynne, *adv.* 170/164
winne, *inf.* 61/4
wynne, *nom.* 61/5
wynne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 108/129
ynne, *prep.*
atwynne, *adv.* 214/211
ynne, *adv.*
pynne, *obj.* 55/316, 97/1017, 115/328, 193/181
skynne, *obl.* 89/792, 97/1020
*wyne, *obl.* 127/658
withinne, *adv.* 34/925
pynne, *obj.*
inne, *adv.* 97/1019
ynne, *adv.* 55/318, 115/329, 193/182
skynne, *obl.* 97/1020
synne, *nom.*
begynne, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 213/163
therin, *prep.* 156/191
thynne, *a. sing.* 156/194
wynne, *imper.* 213/166
synne, *obl.*
gynne, *inf.* 186/218
twynne, *inf.* 7/167
skynne, *obj.*
pynne, *obl.* 22/602
skynne, *obl.*
inne, *adv.* 97/1019
ynne, *adv.* 89/794
pynne, *obj.* 97/1017
therynne, *adv.*
begynne, *inf.* 170/162
thynne, *a. sing.*
synne, *nom.* 156/193
therein, *prep.* 156/191
twynne, *inf.* 142/76
wynne, *inf.* 142/75
twynne, *imper.*
withynne, *adv.* 27/715
twynne, *inf.*
begynne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/85
begynne, *subj.* 132/763
synne, *obl.* 7/168
thynne, *a. sing.* 142/73
wynne, *inf.* 142/75
wynne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
begynne, *inf.* 108/127
wynne, *imper.*
begynne, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 213/163
synne, *nom.* 213/165
wynne, *inf.*
begynne, *inf.* 61/2
thynne, *a. sing.* 142/73
twynne, *inf.* 142/76
wynne, *nom.* 61/5
wynne, *nom.*
begynne, *inf.* 61/2
wynne, *inf.* 61/4
withinne, *adv.*
atwynne, *adv.* 66/134
ynne, *adv.* 34/927
withynne, *adv.*
twynne, *imper.* 27/717

-ynne is (*see* -ynes)

pynne is
*vynes, *n. pl.* 37/1003
*wynes, *n. pl.* 37/1005

-ipe

begripe, *inf.*
dripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/277
ripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/275
dripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
begripe, *inf.* 54/278
ripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/275
gripe, *inf.*
ripe, *a. pl.* 186/190
pipe, *obl.*
ripe, *a. pl.* 57/379
ripe, *a. pl.*
gripe, *inf.* 186/192
pipe, *obl.* 57/381

ripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
begripe, *inf.* 54/278
dripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/277

-ippe

pippe, *obj.*
slippe, *imper.* 22/591
slippe, *imper.*
pippe, *obj.* 22/589

-ire, -yre (*see* -yer)

aspire, *inf.*
empire, *nom.* 206/548
emyspire, *obl.* 206/553
gire, *inf.* 206/551
desire, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
require, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/53, 193/169
yre, *obl.* 106/54
desire, *imper.*
*myer, *obl.* 2/36
desire, *inf.*
revire, *inf.* 53/258
emyspire, *obl.*
aspire, *inf.* 206/550
empire, *nom.* 206/548
gire, *inf.* 206/551
empire, *nom.*
aspire, *inf.* 206/550
emyspire, *obl.* 206/553
enspire, *inf.* 186/213
gire, *inf.* 206/551
enspire, *inf.*
empire, *nom.* 186/211
enfire, *inf.*
yre, *obl.* (iron) 153/121
yre, *obl.* (sorrow) 153/123
gire, *inf.*
aspire, *inf.* 206/550
empire, *nom.* 206/548
emyspire, *obl.* 206/553
yre, *obl.* (iron)
enfire, *inf.* 153/ 124
yre, *obl.* (sorrow) 153/123
yre, *obl.* (sorrow)
desire, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/51
enfire, *inf.* 153/124
require, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/53
yre, *obl.* (iron) 153/121
require, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
desire, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/51, 193/171
yre, *obl.* 106/54
revire, *inf.*
desire, *inf.* 53/259

-ireth

desireth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
ireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 57/361
requireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 52/241, 57/359
ireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
desireth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 57/362
requireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 57/359
requireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
desireth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 52/239, 57/362
ireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 57/361

-is, -ys (*see* -ysse, -us)

amys, *adv.*
is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 127/638
is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
amys, *adv.* 127/640
is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 178/209, 178/210
mys, *inf.* 54/284
mys, *adv.* 112/229, 213/179
this, *pron.* 35/952, 112/228
*thus, *adv.* 213/177
mys, *adv.*
is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 112/226, 213/180
this, *pron.* 112/228
*thus, *adv.* 213/177
mys, *inf.*
is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 54/285
this, *pron.* 54/282
this, *pron.*
is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 35/951, 54/285, 112/226
mys, *inf.* 54/284
*mysse, *nom.* 11/283

-ise, -yse (*see* -ice, -yce)
arise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
wyse, *obl.* 173/64
arise, *inf.*
devyse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/941
gise, *obl.* 87/746, 172/28
gyse, *nom.* 46/68
wyse, *obl.* 46/65, 87/747
aryse, *inf.*
assise, *imper.* 177/180
gise, *nom.* 208/28
gise, *obl.* 177/179
suffice, *inf.* 40/1079
assise, *imper.*
aryse, *inf.* 177/177
gise, *obl.* 177/179
suffice, *inf.* 16/428
avyse, *nom.*
price, *obl.* 5/103
vice, *obl.* 5/100
avyse, *imper.*
servyce, *obj.* 138/953
devise, *imper.*
devyse, *inf.* 199/347
ryse, *subj.* 178/193
suffice, *inf.* 199/345
suffise, *inf.* 178/191
devyse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
arise, *inf.* 35/939
wyse, *obl.* 29/783
devyse, *imper.*
suffice, *subj.* 146/184
devyse, *inf.*
devise, *imper.* 199/348
solempnyse, *inf.* 183/114
suffice, *inf.* 18/476, 74/363, 199/345
suffise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 183/117
wise, *n. pl.* 95/958
wyse, *inf.* 47/78
devyse, *obj.*
gyse, *nom.* 73/347
gyse, *obj.* 92/886
solemnyse, *inf.* 73/345
wyse, *n. pl.* 92/884
divise, *a. sing.*
wyse, *n. pl.* 119/414
gise, *nom.*
aryse, *inf.* 208/27
rise, *subj.* 192/141
suffice, *inf.* 99/1065
gise, *obl.*
arise, *inf.* 87/744, 172/27
aryse, *inf.* 177/177
assise, *imper.* 177/180
wyse, *obl.* 87/747
gyse, *nom.*
arise, *inf.* 46/67
devyse, *obj.* 73/348, 92/887
solemnyse, *inf.* 73/345
suffice, *inf.* 145/151
wyse, *n. pl.* 92/884, 118/405
wyse, *obl.* 46/65
rise, *subj.*
gise, *nom.* 192/143
sise, *obl.* 159/32
wyse, *obl.* 159/30
rise, *inf.*
suffice, *inf.* 187/14
wyse, *obl.* 174/104
ryse, *subj.*
devise, *imper.* 178/194
suffise, *inf.* 178/191
sise, *obl.*
rise, *subj.* 159/33
wyse, *obl.* 159/30
solempnyse, *inf.*
devyse, *inf.* 183/116
devyse, *obj.* 73/348
gyse, *nom.* 73/347
suffise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 183/117
suffise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
devyse, *inf.* 183/116
solempnyse, *inf.* 183/114
suffise, *inf.*
devise, *imper.* 178/194
ryse, *subj.* 178/193
wyse, *inf.*
devyse, *inf.* 47/80
wise, *n. pl.*
devyse, *nom.* 95/959
devyse, *obj.* 92/887
divise, *a. sing.* 119/416
gyse, *nom.* 118/406

gyse, *obj.* 92/886
suffice, *inf.* 127/661
wyse, *obl.*
arise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 173/66
arise, *inf.* 46/67, 87/744
devyse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 29/784
wyse, *obl.*
gise, *obl.* 87/746
gyse, *nom.* 46/68
rise, *subj.* 159/33
rise, *inf.* 174/105
sise, *obl.* 159/32

-ysed (*see* -iced)

devysed, *v.* 1 *s. pt.*
sufficed, *pp.* 61/20

-iseth (*see* -iceth)

aviseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
sufficeth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 140/15

-ise is (*see* -ides, -is is)

gise is
avis is, 36/992
*besides, *adv.* 36/991

-is is (*see* -ides, -ise is)

avis is
*besides, *adv.* 36/991
gise is, 36/989

-ysse (*see* -is)

mysse, *nom.*
*this, *pron.* 11/281

-ist (*see* -iste)

list, 3 *s. pres.*
list, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 52/220
list, *impers. pres.*
list, *impers. pres.* 52/218, 52/220
*triste, *imper.* 69/224
wist, *imper.* 40/1103
wist, *pp.* 40/1104
wist, *imper.*
list, *impers. pres.* 40/1101
wist, *pp.* 40/1104
wist, *pp.*
list, *impers. pres.* 40/1101
wist, *imper.* 40/1103

-iste (*see* -ist)

triste, *imper.*
*list, *impers. pr.* 69/223

-it (*see* -itte)

it, *pron.*
*alitte, *pp.* 100/1105

-ite, -yte

alite, *adv.*
condite, *pp.* 123/526
appetite, *nom.*
delite, *nom.* 57/360
lite, *a. sing.* 22/576
lite, *adv.* 26/688
white, *a. pl.* 22/579, 26/691
astite, *adv.*
delite, *obl.* 16/407
bite, *subj.*
lite, *adv.* 181/58
white, *a. pl.* 181/61
bite, *inf.*
lite, *a. pl.* 42/1157
smyte, *inf.* 42/1160
white, *a. pl.* 26/703
condite, *pp.*
alite, *adv.* 123/528
delite, *nom.*
appetite, *nom.* 57/358
delite, *obl.*
astite, *adv.* 16/409
respite, *inf.* 10/256
white, *a. pl.* 10/257
delite, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
elite, *pp.* 136/872
lite, *a. pl.* 53/253
elite, *pp.*
delite, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 136/870
lite, *a. sing.*
appetite, *nom.* 22/579
quyte, *inf.* 8/196
white, *a. pl.* 22/578, 31/834

lite, *a. pl.*
bite, *inf.* 42/1159
delite, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 53/255
smyte, *inf.* 42/1160, 198/325
lite, *adv.*
appetite, *nom.* 26/690
bite, *subj.* 181/60
white, *a. pl.* 181/61
white, *a. pl.* 26/691
quyte, *inf.*
lite, *a. sing.* 8/195
respite, *inf.*
delite, *obl.* 10/254
white, *a. pl.* 10/257
smyte, *inf.*
bite, *inf.* 42/1159
lite, *a. pl.* 42/1157, 198/323
white, *obj.*
white, *a. pl.* 200/365
white, *a. pl.*
appetite, *nom.* 22/579, 26/690
bite, *subj.* 181/60
bite, *inf.* 26/701
delite, *obl.* 10/254
lite, *a. sing.* 22/576, 31/836
lite, *adv.* 26/688, 181/58
respite, *inf.* 10/256
white, *obj.* 200/367
wite, *inf.* 166/73
wite, *inf.*
white, *a. pl.* 166/71

-ith (*see* -eth)

pith, *obj.*
sith, *adv.* 111/215
with, *prep.* 111/212
sith, *adv.*
pith, *obj.* 111/214
with, *prep.* 111/212
therwith, *adv.*
beth, *subj.* 92/872
seth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 92/873
with, *prep.*
beth, *subj.* 199/353
pith, *obj.* 111/214
sith, *obl.* 111/215

-ithe

aswithe, *adv.*
sithe, *nom.* 126/622
sithe, *nom.*
aswithe, *adv.* 126/623

-itte (*see* -it)

slitte, *pp.*
*it, *pron.* 100/1106
slitte, *obl.*
ypitte, *pp.* 41/1119
ypitte, *pp.*
slitte, *obl.* 41/1120

-ive, -yve

alyve, *adv.*
blyve, *adv.* 169/156
five (v), *a. pl.* 169/158
aryve, *subj.*
olyve, *obl.* 62/44
thryve, *inf.* 62/47
asblyve, *adv.*
five (v), *a. pl.* 60/443, 163/147
upthrive, *imper.* 163/144
upthryve, *inf.* 60/446
blyve, *adv.*
alyve, *adv.* 169/159
fyve, *a. pl.* 10/247, 21/572, 46/57, 78/481, 89/783, 135/842, 139/959, 169/158, 192/137
olyve, *obl.* 21/569, 78/478, 190/86, 190/104
thrive, *inf.* 190/89
thryve, *inf.* 10/249, 192/135
dryve, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
unthryve, *subj.* 122/507
dryve, *imper.*
olyve, *obl.* 18/480
thryve, *inf.* 18/478
dryve, *inf.*
fyve, *a pl.* 189/56
thryve, *inf.* 10/266
fyve, *a. pl.*
alyve, *adv.* 169/159
asblyve, *adv.* 60/445, 163/145

blyve, *adv.* 10/250, 21/571, 46/59, 78/480, 89/784, 135/844, 139/960, 169/156, 192/138
dryve, *inf.* 189/55
olyve, *obl.* 21/569, 78/478
thrive, *inf.* 9/227, 76/441, 206/546
thryve, *inf.* 10/249, 132/784, 192/135, 208/42, 217/287
upthryve, *inf.* 60/446, 163/144
wyve, *inf.* 98/1057
olyve, *obj.*
blyve, *adv.* 78/480
five (v), *a. pl.* 78/481
thrive, *inf.* 76/430, 86/713
thryve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 141/36
olyve, *obl.*
aryve, *subj.* 62/46
blyve, *adv.* 21/571, 190/88, 190/105
dryve, *imper.* 18/481
five (v), *a. pl.* 21/572
thrive, *inf.* 190/89
thryve, *inf.* 18/478, 62/47
thrive, *inf.*
blyve, *adv.* 190/88
fyve, *a. pl.* 9/225, 76/440, 206/545
olyve, *obl.* 190/86
olyve, *obj.* 76/428, 86/714
thryve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
olyve, *obj.* 141/35
thryve, *inf.*
aryve, *subj.* 62/46
blyve, *adv.* 10/250, 192/138
dryve, *imper.* 18/481
dryve, *inf.* 10/265
fyve (v), *a. pl.* 10/247, 132/785, 192/137, 208/41, 217/286
olyve, *obl.* 18/480, 62/44
unthryve, *subj.*
dryve, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 122/505
upthrive, *inf.*
asblyve, *adv.* 60/445, 163/145
five (v), *a. pl.* 60/443, 163/142
wyve, *inf.*
fyve, *a. pl.* 98/1056

-yves

hyves, *n. pl.*
lyves, *n. pl.* 147/200
lyves, *n. pl.*
hyves, *n. pl.* 147/198

-ixe (*see* -ix)

fixe, *pp.*
sixe (VI), *a. pl.* 60/444
sixe (VI), *a. pl.*
fixe, *pp.* 60/442

-o (*see* -oo)

ὦ (omega)
do, *pp.* 178/213
also, *adv.*
do, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1162
do, *pp.* 193/170, 219/347
doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 218/302
doo, *inf.* 10/246, 53/249, 117/372, 126/618
doo, *pp.* 91/839, 173/57, 220/359
foo, *nom.* 6/149, 184/151
froo, *adv.* 53/247
goo, *inf.* 18/463, 42/1153, 126/621, 184/152, 210/78
moo, *adv.* 42/1152, 133/813
no, *a. sing.* 94/929
so, *adv.* 6/152, 219/345
therto, *adv.* 194/215, 220/361
to, *adv.* 94/926
two, *a. pl.* 52/224, 193/172
unto, *prep.* 194/212
Apollo, *n. pr.*
therto, *adv.* 201/409
do, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
also, *adv.* 102/1161
fro, *adv.* 214/199
do, *imper.*
fro, *adv.* 201/403
go, *inf.* 201/404
to, *adv.* 205/519

do, *pp.*
also, *adv.* 193/173, 219/343
go, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/298
ô (omega), 178/211
so, *adv.* 202/420, 216/266, 217/299, 219/345
to, *adv.* 203/469
two, *a. pl.* 193/172
twoo, *a. pl.* 72/321
fordo, *pp.*
two, *a. pl.* 217/288
fro, *adv.*
do, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 214/197
doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 197/296
do, *imper.* 201/401
go, *inf.* 201/404
so, *adv.* 24/655
therto, *adv.* 25/682, 197/298
to, *adv.* 24/656
go, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
do, *pp.* 217/296
so, *adv.* 217/299
go, *subj.*
so, *adv.* 128/678
go, *inf.*
do, *imper.* 201/401
fro, *adv.* 201/403
yo,[1]
tough, *adv.* 15/400
into, *prep.*
doo, *inf.* 24/638
Mago, *n. pr.*
goo, *inf.* 67/186
soo, *adv.* 67/184
no, *a. sing.*
also, *adv.* 94/928
to, *adv.* 94/926
so, *adv.*
also, *adv.* 6/151, 219/348
do, *pp.* 202/419, 216/265, 217/296, 219/347
doo, *imper.* 128/672
doo, *inf.* 74/382, 131/745
foo, *nom.* 6/149
fro, *adv.* 24/653
go, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/298
go, *subj.* 128/679
to, *adv.* 24/656, 131/747
two, *a. pl.* 74/380
to, *prep.*
doo, *inf.* 67/725
doo, *pp.* 153/122
froo, *prep.* 87/723
to, *adv.*
also, *adv.* 94/928
do, *imper.* 205/521
do, *pp.* 203/468
doo, *inf.* 131/745, 155/163
fro, *adv.* 24/653
no, *a. sing.* 94/929
so, *adv.* 24/656, 131/748
soo, *adv.* 155/166
therto, *adv.*
also, *adv.* 194/214, 220/361
Apollo, *n. pr.* 201/407
doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 197/296
doo, *imper.* 80/536, 119/422
doo, *inf.* 27/736, 156/205
doo, *pp.* 100/1099, 198/319, 220/359
fro, *adv.* 25/680, 197/299
froo, *prep.* 119/425
moo, *a. pl.* 80/534
soo, *adv.* 156/207
two, *a. pl.* 108/118, 198/317, 199/337, 205/512
unto, *prep.* 194/212
two, *a. pl.*
also, *adv.* 52/223, 193/173
do, *pp.* 193/170
doo, *inf.* 74/382
doo, *pp.* 198/319
fordo, *pp.* 217/290
froo, *adv.* 64/102
so, *adv.* 74/383
soo, *adv.* 64/100
therto, *adv.* 108/119, 198/320, 199/339, 205/514
ydoo, *imper.* 75/406

[1] ? y[*n*]o (enough, sufficiently), but see Glossary.

unto, *prep.*
also, *adv.* 194/214
doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1164
therto, *adv.* 194/215
wo, *obj.* 102/1167
wo, *obj.*
doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1164
unto, *prep.* 102/1166

-ocked (*see* **-ooked**)

hocked, *a. pl.*
crooked, *a. pl.* 42/1154

-od (*see* **-oode**)

unshod, *a. sing.*
*goode, *a. sing.* 32/861

-ode (*see* **-oode**)

brode, *obl.*
goode, *adv.* 23/616
gode, *obl.*
foode, *obl.* 129/698
goode, *a. pl.* 129/699
shode, *pp.*
goode, *adv.* 20/539
wode, *a. sing.*
bloode, *obj.* 31/844
goode, *a. sing.* 31/842

-ofre (*see* **-offre, -opher**)

ofre, *subj.*
Philosopher, *nom.* 167/93
coffre, *obj.* 167/96

-offre (*see* **-ofre, -opher**)

coffre, *obj.*
Philosopher, *nom.* 167/93
ofre, *subj.* 167/95

-ofte

alofte, *adv.*
softe, *adv.* 19/517
clofte, (? alofte or olofte)
crofte, *obl.* 89/796
softe, *inf.* 89/793
crofte, *obl.*
clofte, (?) 89/795
softe, *inf.* 89/793
lofte, *obl.*
ofte, *adv.* 82/596, 155/183
ofte, *adv.*
lofte, *obl.* 82/598, 155/185
onlofte, *adv.* 38/1039
softe, *a. sing.* 182/90
softe, *a. pl.* 140/22
olofte, *adv.*
softe, *a. pl.* 40/1086, 107/78
onlofte, *adv.*
ofte, *adv.* 38/1037
softe, *adv.*
alofte, *adv.* 19/518
olofte, *adv.* 40/1088, 107/80
softe, *a. sing.*
ofte, *adv.* 182/91
softe, *a. pl.*
ofte, *adv.* 140/21
softe, *inf.*
clofte, (?) 89/795
crofte, *obl.* 89/796

-oye

destroye, *inf.*
ennoye, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 147/211
ennoye, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
destroye, *inf.* 147/210

-oil

cerfoil, *obj.*
quaterfoil, *obj.* 84/656
soil, *obl.* 84/655
foil, *obj.*
oil, *obl.* 145/142
oil, *obl.*
foil, *obj.* 145/144
quaterfoil, *obj.*
cerfoil, *obj.* 84/653
soil, *obl.* 84/655
soil, *obl.*
cerfoil, *obj.* 84/653
quaterfoil, *obj.* 84/856

-oile is (*see* **-oiles**)

foile is
  foiles, *n. pl.* 51/191
  soile is, 51/193
soile is
  foiles, *n. pl.* 51/191
  foile is, 51/194

-oiles (*see* **-oile is**)

foiles, *n. pl.*
  foile is, 51/194
  soile is, 51/193

-oint, -oynt (*see* **-oint is, -oynte**)

disyoint, *subj.*
  *enoynte, *subj.* 32/870
  *point is, 32/872
joynt, *obj.*
  *enoynte, *inf.* 181/55

-ointe, -oynte (*see* **-oint, -oynt, -oint is**)

ennointe, *imper.*
  jointe, *obl.* 134/834, 154/138
  pointe, *obl.* 154/137
enoynte, *subj.*
  *disyoint, *subj.* 32/873
  *point is, 32/872
enoynte, *inf.*
  *joynt, *obj.* 181/56
jointe, *obl.*
  ennointe, *imper.* 134/833, 154/135
  pointe, *obl.* 154/137, 208/44
  pointe, *inf.* 208/46
pointe, *obl.*
  ennointe, *imper.* 154/135
  jointe, *obl.* 154/138, 208/47
  pointe, *inf.* 208/46
  serjointe, *pp.* 117/370
pointe, *inf.*
  jointe, *obl.* 208/47
  pointe, *obl.* 208/44
serjointe, *pp.*
  pointe, *obl.* 117/371

-oint is (*see* **-oint, -oynte**)

point is
  *disyoint, *subj.* 32/873
  *enoynte, *subj.* 32/870

-oken

broken, *pp.*
  loken, *pp.* 163/153
loken, *pp.*
  broken, *pp.* 163/155

-old (*see* **-olde**)

behold, *inf.*
  cold, *obl.* 99/1084
bold, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  *colde, *obl.* 215/224
cold, *obl.*
  behold, *inf.* 99/1085
cold, *a. sing.*
  cold, *a. pl.* 48/130
  hold, *pp.* 48/131
  *holde, *subj.* 121/495
  *holde, *pp.* 52/227
  old, *a. pl.* 56/349
  *witholde, *inf.* 121/492
cold, *a. pl.*
  cold, *a. sing.* 48/128
  hold, *pp.* 48/131
  *holde, *pp.* 86/703
  manyfold, *adv.* 69/234
  wold, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 142/53
hold, *pp.*
  cold, *a. sing.* 48/128
  cold, *a. pl.* 48/130
manyfold, *adv.*
  cold, *a. pl.* 69/232
old, *a. pl.*
  cold, *a. sing.* 56/350
told, *pp.*
  *folde, *obl.* 65/113
wold, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  cold, *a. pl.* 142/51

-olde is (*see* **-oldes**)

molde is
  goldes, *n. pl.* 143/105

-oldes (*see* -olde is)

goldes, *n. pl.*
molde is, 143/106

-olde (*see* -old, -oolde)

beholde, *subj.*
holde, *inf.* 48/107
tolde, *pp.* 48/109
beholde, *inf.*
colde, *nom.* 209/51
holde, *pp.* 209/54
holde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 217/280
holde, *inf.* 137/923
olde, *a. pl.* 137/922
betolde, *pp.*
olde, *a. pl.* 24/657
bolde, *a. sing.*
colde, *a. pl.* 117/380
wolde, *pp.* 117/382
colde, *nom.*
beholde, *inf.* 209/53
holde, *pp.* 209/54
colde, *obj.*
holde, *inf.* 64/80
colde, *obl.*
*bold, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 215/223
holde, *inf.* 3/42, 135/847
moolde, *obl.* 96/996
wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 96/998
colde, *a. sing.*
folde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/535
folde, *imper.* 154/150
folde, *subj.* 81/557
holde, *imper.* 189/76
holde, *pp.* 81/558, 123/533, 144/110
tolde, *pp.* 104/3
wolde, *v. 1 s. pres.* 19/504
wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 77/455, 144/111, 171/7
colde, *a. pl.*
bolde, *a. sing.* 117/383
folde, *imper.* 88/774
folde, *inf.* 180/33
holde, *subj.* 12/297
holde, *inf.* 20/520, 41/1117, 106/77, 124/570, 131/743, 152/89, 164/17, 218/311
holde, *pp.* 5/122, 62/43, 105/45, 162/119, 180/32
olde, *a. sing.* 88/772
overfolde, *pp.* 20/523
sholde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/68
tolde, *pp.* 41/1118
wolde, *pp.* 117/382
wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 11/273, 94/934, 151/67
ytolde, *pp.* 144/134, 152/88
folde, *obl.*
*told, *pp.* 65/115
folde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*
colde, *a. sing.* 206/533
folde, *imper.*
colde, *a. sing.* 154/148
colde, *a. pl.* 88/775
olde, *a. sing.* 88/772
folde, *subj.*
colde, *a. sing.* 81/555
holde, *pp.* 81/558
folde, *inf.*
colde, *a. pl.* 180/30
holde, *subj.* 133/789
holde, *pp.* 133/787, 180/32
holde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*
beholde, *inf.* 217/279
holde, *imper.*
colde, *a. sing.* 189/77
olde, *a. pl.* 130/714
holde, *subj.*
*cold, *a. sing.* 121/494
colde, *a. pl.* 12/295
folde, *inf.* 133/790
holde, *pp.* 133/787
witholde, *inf.* 121/492
holde, *inf.*
beholde, *inf.* 137/920
beholde, *subj.* 48/110
colde, *a. pl.* 20/522, 41/1115, 106/76, 124/568, 131/742, 152/86, 164/15, 218/309
colde, *obj.* 64/78
colde, *obl.* 3/41, 135/848

holde, *inf.* 137/901, 137/902
moolde, *obl.* 69/221, 93/909, 112/231, 210/93
olde, *a. sing.* 101/1119, 137/899
olde, *a. pl.* 131/744, 137/922
olde, *inf.* 137/899
overfolde, *pp.* 20/523
sholde, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 69/219
tolde, *pp.* 41/1118, 48/109
wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 210/96
ytolde, *pp.* 152/88
holde, *pp.*
beholde, *inf.* 209/53
*cold, *a. sing.* 52/225
*cold, *a. pl.* 86/701
colde, *a. sing.* 81/555, 123/535, 144/108
colde, *a. pl.* 5/120, 62/45, 105/43, 162/118, 180/30
colde, *nom.* 209/51
folde, *subj.* 81/557
folde, *inf.* 133/790, 180/33
holde, *subj.* 133/789
olde, *a. sing.* 108/111, 130/703, 183/106
wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 130/705, 144/111
molde, *obl.*
sholde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 174/98
olde, *a. sing.*
colde, *a. pl.* 88/775
folde, *imper.* 88/774
holde, *inf.* 101/1120, 137/901, 137/902
holde, *pp.* 108/112, 130/706, 183/108
wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 130/705
olde, *a. pl.*
beholde, *inf.* 137/920
betolde, *pp.* 24/658
holde, *imper.* 130/715
holde, *inf.* 131/746, 137/923
overfolde, *pp.*
colde, *a. pl.* 20/522
holde, *inf.* 20/520
sholde, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
holde, *inf.* 69/222
sholde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
colde, *a. pl.* 151/65
molde, *obl.* 174/97
moolde, *obj.* 79/519
moolde, *obl.* 69/221
wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 151/67
tolde, *pp.*
beholde, *subj.* 48/110
colde, *a. sing.* 104/1
colde, *a. pl.* 41/1115
holde, *inf.* 41/1117, 48/107
witholde, *inf.*
*cold, *a. sing.* 121/494
holde, *subj.* 121/495
wolde, *v.* 1 *s. pres.*
colde, *a. sing.* 19/503
wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
colde, *obl.* 96/999
colde, *a. sing.* 77/454, 144/108, 171/6
colde, *a. pl.* 11/272, 94/932, 151/65
holde, *inf.* 210/95
holde, *pp.* 130/706, 144/110
moolde, *obl.* 96/996, 210/93
olde, *a. sing.* 130/703
sholde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 151/68
wolde, *pp.*
bolde, *a. sing.* 117/383
colde, *a. pl.* 117/380
ytolde, *pp.*
colde, *a. pl.* 144/133, 152/86
holde, *inf.* 152/89

-ole (*see* -oolle, -ulle)

cole, *inf.*
scole, *nom.* 44/14
scole, *nom.*
cole, *inf.* 44/13
wole, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
woolle, *obl.* 167/79
fulle, *obl.* 167/81

-olle (*see* -ulle)

wolle, *obj.*
fulle, *obl.* 154/140

wolle, *obl.*
fulle, *obl.* 57/376
wolle, *subj.* 57/375
wolle, *subj.*
fulle, *obl.* 57/376
fulle, *a. pl.* 39/1065
pulle, *inf.* 53/252
wolle, *obl.* 57/373

-olve

desolve, *subj.*
devolve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 204/497
devolve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
desolve, *subj.* 204/496
dissolve, *inf.*
resolve, *inf.* 219/344
dissolve, *subj.*
resolve, *inf.* 14/365
resolve, *inf.*
dissolve, *subj.* 14/367
dissolve, *inf.* 219/346

-ome (*see* **-umme**)

some, *nom.*
humme, *subj.* 162/124
summe, *subj.* 162/123

-on (*see* **-one, -oon, -oone, -oun**)

on, *adv.*
*everichone, *pron.* 79/522
*gone, *pp.* 79/523
on, *prep.*
*oon, *a. sing.* 76/421
ablaqueacion, *obj.*
dominacion, *obj.* 188/41
ablaqueacion, *obl.*
excodicacion, *obj.* 44/3
castracion, *nom. sing.*
occupacion, *nom.* 152/94
significacion, *nom. sing.* 162/122
dominacion, *obj.*
ablaqueacion, *obj.* 188/42
elacion, *obl.*
putacion, *obl.* 91/858
region, *obl.* 91/856
Elioselinon, *nom.*
Petroselinon, *nom.* 142/69
yposelinon, *nom.* 142/66
emplastracion, *obj.*
inoculacion, *obj.* 165/45
enoculacion, *nom. sing.*
occupacion, *obj.* 213/164
everichon, *pron.*
*oon, *pron.* 148/228
excodicacion, *obj.*
ablaqueacion, *obl.* 44/1
expu[r]gacion, *obj.*
generacion, *obl.* 138/940
generacion, *obl.*
expu[r]gacion, *obj.* 138/942
germinacion, *obj.*
occacion, *obj.* 207/11
sation, *nom. sing.* 207/9
germynacion, *obl.*
occupacion, *nom.* 113/248
incrementacion, *nom. sing.*
putacion, *nom.* 217/293
inoculacion, *obj.*
emplastracion, *obj.* 165/43
insicion, *obj.*
*emplastracioun, *obj.* 161/91
multiplicacion, *obl.*
procuracion, *obj.* 214/193
Septentrion, *obl.* 175/118
translacion, *nom.* 214/191
occacion, *obj.*
germinacion, *obj.* 207/12
sation, *nom. sing.* 207/9
occupacion, *nom. sing.*
castracion, *nom. sing.* 152/92
germynacion, *obl.* 113/246
pampinacion, *nom. sing.* 171/15
occupacion, *obj.*
enoculacion, *nom. sing.* 213/162
occupacion, *obl.*
pampinacion, *obl.* 150/22
propagacion, *nom. sing.* 189/57
origon, *nom.*
echoon, *a. sing.* 38/1027
noon, *a. sing.* 38/1026
pampinacion, *nom. sing.*
occupacion, *nom. sing.* 171/17

pampinacion, *obl.*
occupacion, *obl.* 150/24
Petroselinon, *nom.*
Elioselinon, *nom.* 142/68
yposelinon, *nom.* 142/66
procuracion, *obj.*
multiplicacion, *obl.* 214/194
translacion, *nom.* 214/191
propagacion, *nom. sing.*
occupacion, *obl.* 189/59
putacion, *obj.*
incrementacion, *nom.* 217/294
putacion, *obl.*
elacion, *obl.* 91/859
region, *obl.* 91/856
region, *obl.*
elacion, *obl.* 91/859
putacion *obl.* 91/858
sation, *nom.*
germinacion, *obj.* 207/12
occacion, *obj.* 207/11
Septentrion, *obl.*
*everichoon, *pron.* 17/458
*ichone, *pron.* 78/493
multiplicacion, *obj.* 175/119
significacion, *nom.*
castracion, *nom.* 162/120
translacion, *nom.*
multiplicacion, *obl.* 214/194
procuracion, *obj.* 214/193
yposelinon, *nom.*
Elioselinon, *nom.* 142/68
Petroselinon, *nom.* 142/69

-ond (*see* **-ande, -ounde**)

hond, *obl.*
*lande, *obj.* 47/79
stond, *inf.* 47/82
lond, *obl.*
stond, *inf.* 14/32
stond, *inf.*
hond, *obl.* 47/81
*lande, *obj.* 47/79
lond, *obl.* 141/30
yfond, *pp.*
*lande, *obl.* 62/23
*understande, *inf.* 62/26

-onde (*see* **-ande, -onnde, -ounde**)

awonde, *obj.*
stonde, *inf.* 123/547
bonde, *obl.*
stonde, *inf.* 131/756
bronde, *obl.*
fonde, *pp.* 88/753
stonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 88/754
stonde, *inf.* 53/248
feconde, *a. pl.*
abounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 219/330
feconde, *inf.*
founde, *pp.* 71/277
wounde, *obj.* 71/278
fonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
londe, *obl.* 114/275
stonde, *inf.* 114/277
fonde, *inf.*
londe, *obl.* 185/167
fonde, *pp.*
bronde, *obl.* 88/751
honde, *nom.* 218/324
honde, *obl.* 14/356, 187/12
*lande, *nom.* 47/100
londe, *inf.* 173/54
londe, *obl.* 1/8, 52/232, 159/28, 191/114, 191/124
londe, *obj.* 83/618, 158/11, 187/9
*stande, *inf.* 47/102
stonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 88/754, 218/327
stonde, *imper.* 131/751, 173/51, 191/21
stonde, *inf.* 83/620, 158/12, 191/116
honde, *nom.*
fonde, *pp.* 218/326
stonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 218/327
honde, *obl.*
fonde, *pp.* 14/357, 187/11
londe, *obj.* 187/9
stonde, *inf.* 79/505
londe, *inf.*
fonde, *pp.* 173/53
stonde, *imper.* 173/51
londe, *nom.*
*stande, *inf.* 67/175

londe, *obj.*
fonde, *inf.* 185/168
fonde, *pp.* 1/10, 52/234, 158/9, 159/27, 187/11
honde, *obl.* 187/12
stonde, *inf.* 29/791, 63/63, 64/84, 66/157, 158/12, 184/150
londe, *obl.*
fonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 114/278
fonde, *pp.* 83/621, 191/117, 191/123
stonde, *imper.* 191/121
stonde, *inf.* 81/581, 83/620, 114/277, 191/116
sonde, *nom.*
stonde, *inf.* 77/448
stonde, *obl.*
stonde, *inf.* 39/1053
stonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bronde, *obl.* 88/751
fonde, *pp.* 88/753, 218/326
honde, *nom.* 218/324
stonde, *imper.*
fonde, *pp.* 131/753, 173/53, 191/123
londe, *inf.* 173/54
londe, *obl.* 191/124
stonde, *subj.*
bonnde, *obl.* 74/368
stonde, *inf.* 74/369
stonde, *inf.*
awonde, *obj.* 123/549
bonde, *obl.* 131/757
bonnde, *obl.* 74/368
bronde, *obl.* 53/246
fonde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 114/278
fonde, *pp.* 83/621, 158/9, 191/117
honde, *obl.* 79/507
londe, *obj.* 83/618, 158/11, 184/148
londe, *obl.* 29/790, 63/62, 66/155, 64/83, 81/580, 114/275, 191/114
sonde, *nom.* 77/447
stonde, *obl.* 39/1051
stonde, *subj.* 74/366
wonde, *obj.*
*lande, *nom.* 123/534
*stande, *inf.* 123/536

-onder (*see* -under)

asonder, *adv.*
sonder, 3 *pl. pres.* 49/145
under, *adv.* 11/267, 30/801, 39/1060, 49/142, 53/273, 92/881, 144/114
sonder, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
asonder, *adv.* 49/144
under, *adv.* 49/142
thonder, *subj.*
under, *adv.* 111/202

-one (*see* -oon, -oone)

alone, *adv.*
doone, *pp.* 215/236
grone, *inf.* 216/255
oone, *obl.* 215/235
allone, *adv.*
everichone, *a. sing.* 44/19
ichone, *pron.* 57/378
*noon, *a. sing.* 44/16
Aquylone, *obl.*
alloone, *adv.* 56/347
done, *pp.* 107/84
noone, *a. pl.* 56/348
corone, *inf.*
fordone, *pp.* 15/381
done, *inf.*
moone, *obl.* 164/6, 172/30, 193/184
sone, *adv.* 172/32
done, *pp.*
Aquilone, *obl.* 107/83
everichone, *a. sing.*
allone, *adv.* 44/18
gone, *pp.* 79/523
*noon, *a. sing.* 44/16
*on, *adv.* 79/520
fordone, *pp.*
corone, *inf.* 15/379
gone, *inf.*
alone, *adv.* 216/253

gone, *pp.*
everichone, *pron.* 79/522
*on, *adv.* 79/520
ichone, *pron.*
allone, *adv.* 57/377
*anoon, *adv.* 35/950
*doon, *inf.* 79/513
goone, *subj.* 35/949
moone, *obl.* 79/516
noone, *a. sing.* 2/29
*Septentrion, *obl.* 78/491
none, *a. pl.*
sone, *adv.* 141/50
ragstone, *obl.*
noone, *a. sing.* 3/63
repone, *impor.*
doone, *inf.* 127/662
everichoone, *pron.* 127/660
sone, *adv.*
done, *inf.* 172/33
moone, *obl.* 85/693, 106/57, 143/93, 166/55, 168/113, 172/30, 182/78, 191/113
sone, *adv.*
none, *a. pl.* 141/49
stone, *nom.*
goone, *inf.* 14/375
*oon, *obl.* 14/376

-ones (*see* **-oones, -onys, -on is, -oone is**)

eftesones, *adv.*
doone is, 115/319
stones, *n. pl.* 62/28
stonys, *n. pl.* 115/317
ones, *adv.*
stoones, *n. pl.* 195/241
stones, *n. pl.*
eftesones, *adv.* 62/27
everichon is, 29/789
flyntstone is, 49/143
ygone is, 29/788

-one is (*see* **-ones, -on is**)

flyntstone is
stones, *nom.* 49/141

ygone is
everichon is, 29/789
stones, *n. pl.* 29/786

-on is (*see* **-ones, -one is**)

everichon is,
stones, *n. pl.* 29/786
ygone is, 29/788

-onys (*see* **-ones, -oone is, -oon is**)

bonys, *n. pl.*
goone is, 213/173
noon is, 213/172
ydoon is, 133/799
nonys, *n. pl.*
goone is, 98/1034
onys, *adv.* 98/1033
onys, *adv.*
nonys, *n. pl.* 98/1031
goone is, 98/1034
stonys, *n. pl.*
doon is, 78/476, 127/665, 150/40
doone is, 108/122, 115/319, 144/120
eftsones, *adv.* 115/320
moone is, 182/98
noon is, 150/39, 150/49
stoon is, 174/80
stoone is, 158/7

-onge (*see* **-onnge, -ounge**)

amonge, *adv.*
dounge, *obl.* 107/103
stronge, *a. sing.* 105/31
stronge, *a. pl.* 107/102
amonge, *prep.*
dounge, *obl.* 67/162
fonge, *inf.* 189/75
longe, *a. sing.* 140/17
longe, *a. pl.* 65/127
stronge, *a.* 189/74, 200/380
wronge, *obj.* 140/19, 200/383
bespronge, *pp.*
longe, *a. pl.* 25/679
clonge, *a. sing.*
dounge, *obl.* 55/317
longe, *adv.* 55/320

donge, *obl.*
longe, *adv.* 144/124
yspronge, *pp.* 144/125
elonge, *subj.*
*lange, *a. pl.* 4/86
*strange, *a. pl.* 4/88
elonge, *inf.*
longe, *adv.* 126/634
longe, *a. pl.* 126/635
flonge, *pp.*
dounge, *obj.* 179/9
wronge, *obj.* 179/12
fonge, *inf.*
amonge, *prep.* 189/72
stronge, *a. sing.* 189/74
stronge, *a. pl.* 167/92
yonge, *a. sing.* 127/639
yonge, *inf.* 127/641
honge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
longe, *a. sing.* 116/343
longe, *a. pl.* 114/282
spronge, *pp.* 114/284
honge, *inf.*
stronge, *a. sing.* 130/719
wronge, *nom.* 212/150
yonge, *a. pl.* 130/717
longe, *inf.*
dounge, *obl.* 87/743
longe, *obl.*
dounge, *obl.* 195/237, 209/72
stronge, *a. pl.* 165/42
wronge, *nom.* 209/75
longe, *a. sing.*
amonge, *prep.* 140/20
dounge, *obl.* 94/925, 96/993, 115/313, 138/947
dounge, *obj.* 192/136
honge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 116/342
longe, *adv.* 16/432
spronge, *inf.* 119/423
spronge, *pp.* 37/1018, 124/573, 143/79, 184/147
stronge, *a. sing.* 16/431
wronge, *adv.* 115/312
wronge, *obj.* 76/434, 140/19
longe, *a. pl.*
amonge, *prep.* 65/129
besponge, *pp.* 25/678
donnge, *obl.* 208/40, 211/107
dounge, *obl.* 84/660
elonge, *inf.* 126/632
honge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 114/285
longe, *adv.* 126/634, 169/153
spronge, *pp.* 114/284, 114/293
stronge, *a. sing.* 208/39
stronge, *a. pl.* 135/863
uphonge, *pp.* 135/855
wronge, *a. sing.* 211/109
yonge, *a. pl.* 84/663, 167/105, 193/164
longe, *adv.*
clonge, *a. sing.* 55/319
donge, *obl.* 144/122
dounge, *obl.* 55/417, 116/330
elonge, *inf.* 126/632
longe, *a. sing.* 16/429
longe, *a. pl.* 126/635, 169/154
longe, *adv.* 118/398, 118/399
spronge, *pp.* 166/54
stronge, *a. sing.* 16/431
stronge, *a. pl.* 83/630, 204/483
wronge, *nom.* 90/817, 166/53, 179/3
wronge, *obj.* 13/339
ywronge, *pp.* 90/814, 144/125
spronge, *inf.*
longe, *a. sing.* 119/421
spronge, *pp.*
dounge, *inf.* 125/582, 180/22
honge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 114/285
longe, *a. sing.* 37/1016, 124/574, 143/81, 184/146
longe, *a. pl.* 114/282, 114/294
longe, *adv.* 166/51
stronge, *a. pl.* 180/35
tonge, *nom.* 166/72
wronge, *nom.* 166/53, 182/104
yonge, *a. pl.* 106/71, 166/74
stronge, *a. pl.*
amonge, *adv.* 107/100, 189/72
donnge, *nom.* 172/41
dounge, *obl.* 107/103

fonge, *inf.* 167/94, 189/75
longe, *obl.* 165/41
longe, *a. pl.* 135/865
longe, *adv.* 83/629, 204/482
spronge, *pp.* 180/34
yonge, *a. pl.* 149/15, 188/43
stronge, *a. sing.*
amonge, *adv.* 105/20, 200/382
donnge, *obl.* 208/40
honge, *inf.* 130/720
longe, *a. pl.* 208/37
longe, *a. sing.* 16/429
longe, *adv.* 16/432
wronge, *obj.* 194/196, 200/383
yonge, *a. pl.* 130/717
tonge, *nom.*
spronge, *pp.* 166/75
yonge, *a. pl.* 166/74
unbiyonge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
donnge, *obl.* 51/212
stronge, *a. sing.* 51/215
umbiyonge, *inf.*
donnge, *obl.* 119/435
uphonge, *pp.*
longe, *a. pl.* 135/854
wronge, *nom.*
donnge, *obl.* 209/72
honge, *inf.* 212/148
longe, *obl.* 209/74
longe, *adv.* 90/816, 166/51, 179/1
spronge, *pp.* 166/54, 182/105
ywronge, *pp.* 90/814
wronge, *obj.*
amonge, *prep.* 140/20, 200/382
dounge, *obj.* 179/9
flonge, *pp.* 179/11
longe, *a. sing.* 76/433, 140/17
longe, *adv.* 13/337
stronge, *a. sing.* 194/195, 200/380
wronge, *a. sing.*
dounge, *obl.* 211/107
longe, *a. pl.* 211/110
wronge, *adv.*
dounge, *obl.* 115/313
longe, *a. sing.* 115/310
wronge, *pp.*
dounge, *obj.* 50/183
yonge, *inf.*
fonge, *inf.* 127/642
yonge, *a. sing.* 127/639
yonge, *a. sing.*
dounge, *obl.* 214/195
fonge, *inf.* 127/642
yonge, *inf.* 127/641
yonge, *a. pl.*
dounge, *nom.* 28/757
dounge, *obl.* 51/198, 84/660
honge, *inf.* 130/720
longe, *a. pl.* 84/662
longe, *a. pl.* 167/104, 193/162
spronge, *pp.* 106/73, 166/75
stronge, *a. sing.* 130/719
stronge, *a. pl.* 149/17, 188/45
strounge, *a. sing.* 51/201
tonge, *nom.* 166/72
yspronge, *pp.* 78/486
yspronge, *pp.*
donge, *obl.* 144/122
dounge, *obl.* 191/119
longe, *adv.* 144/124
yonge, *a. pl.* 78/484
ywronge, *pp.*
longe, *adv.* 90/816
wronge, *nom.* 90/817

-onger (*see* -enger)

stronger, *a. sing.*
*lenger, *adv.* 41/1111
unstronger, *a. pl.* 40/1110
unstronger, *a. pl.*
*lenger, *adv.* 41/1111
stronger, *a. sing.* 41/1108

-onnde (*see* -onde)

bonnde, *obl.*
stonde, *subj.* 74/366
stonde, *inf.* 74/369

-onne (*see* -oune)

begonne, *pp.*
ronne, *pp.* 212/142
sonne, *nom.* 19/492, 212/145
sonne, *obl.* 69/237
wonne, *pp.* 19/494

beronne, *pp.*
konne, *subj.* 208/26
sonne, *obl.* 160/71, 208/23
conne, *subj.*
sonne, *obl.* 13/326
*umvirоune, *pp.* 13/324
fonne, *inf.*
ponne, *obl.* 33/909
konne, *subj.*
beronne, *pp.* 208/25
sonne, *obl.* 208/23
ponne, *obl.*
fonne, *inf.* 33/910
ronne, *inf.*
sonne, *obl.* 71/301
ronne, *pp.*
begonne, *pp.* 212/144
sonne, *nom.* 212/145
sonne, *obl.* 109/160, 169/141, 202/432
tonne, *obj.* 202/429
wonne, *pp.* 162/112
sonne, *nom.*
begonne, *pp.* 19/495, 69/238, 212/144
ronne, *pp.* 212/142
wonne, *pp.* 19/494
sonne, *obj.*
wonne, *pp.* 168/108
sonne, *obl.*
beronne, 160/73, 208/25
conne, *subj.* 13/327
konne, *subj.* 208/26
ronne, *inf.* 71/300
ronne, *pp.* 109/161, 169/143, 202/431
tonne, *obj.* 202/429
*umvirоune, *pp.* 13/324
wonne, *pp.* 123/546, 168/133, 178/203, 216/252
tonne, *obj.*
ronne, *pp.* 202/431
sonne, *obl.* 202/432
tonne, *obl.*
wonne, *pp.* 96/976
wonne, *pp.*
begonne, *pp.* 19/495
ronne, *pp.* 162/111
sonne, *nom.* 19/492
sonne, *obj.* 168/106
sonne, *obl.* 123/545, 168/132, 178/202, 216/251
tonne, *obl.* 96/974

-onnge (*see* -onge, -oung)

donnge, *nom.*
stronge, *a. pl.* 172/42
donnge, *obl.*
longe, *obl.* 209/74
longe, *a. pl.* 208/37, 211/110
stronge, *a. sing.* 208/39
wronge, *nom.* 209/75
wronge, *adj.* 211/109
tonnge, *obl.*
*young, *a. pl.* 26/693

-ons (*see* -oon is)

ons, *obj.*
*oon is, 147/212

-oo (*see* -o)

agoo, *pp.*
goo, *subj.* 39/1073
soo, *adv.* 39/1076
doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
also, *adv.* 218/304
fro, *adv.* 197/299
therto, *adv.* 197/298
unto, *prep.* 102/1166
wo, *obj.* 102/1167
doo, *imper.*
froo, *prep.* 80/553, 119/425
froo, *adv.* 168/131
goo, *imper.* 89/789
goo, *inf.* 146/174, 168/130
inoo, *a. pl.* 80/534
so, *adv.* 128/671
soo, *adv.* 89/788
therto, *adv.* 80/537, 119/424
too, *adv.* 85/668, 146/173
doo, *inf.*
also, *adv.* 10/248, 53/250, 117/374, 126/620
fordoo, *pp.* 195/220

froo, *adv.* 53/247
froo, *prep.* 87/723
goo, *v.* 1 *s. pres.* 157/239
goo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 25/668
goo, *inf.* 132/776
goo, *pp.* 126/621
into, *prep.* 24/640
so, *adv.* 74/383, 131/748
soo, *adv.* 118/389, 155/166, 156/207
therto, *adv.* 27/738, 156/208
to, *adv.* 131/747, 155/165
too, *adv.* 64/92
too, *prep.* 118/390
too, *a. pl.* 74/380

doo, *pp.*
also, *adv.* 91/840, 173/59, 220/362
doo, *pp.* 126/611, 126/613
froo, *adv.* 202/430
goo, *inf.* 126/614
soo, *adv.* 90/822, 169/140
therfroo, *adv.* 104/17
therto, *adv.* 100/1098, 198/320, 220/361
to, *prep.* 153/120
two, *a. pl.* 198/317

foo, *nom.*
also, *adv.* 6/151, 184/149
goo, *inf.* 184/152
so, *adv.* 6/152

fordoo, *inf.*
soo, *adv.* 34/932

fordoo, *pp.*
doo, *inf.* 195/218

froo, *prep.*
doo, *imper.* 80/552

froo, *adv.*
also, *adv.* 53/250
doo, *imper.* 119/422, 168/128
doo, *inf.* 53/249, 87/725
doo, *pp.* 202/428
goo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 147/193
goo, *inf.* 168/130
soo, *adv.* 64/100
therto, *adv.* 119/424
to, *prep.* 87/726
two, *a. pl.* 64/103

goo, *v.* 1 *s. pres.*
doo, *inf.* 157/239

goo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
doo, *inf.* 25/666
froo, *adv.* 147/191

goo, *imper.*
doo, *imper.* 89/786
soo, *adv.* 89/788

goo, *subj.*
agoo, *pp.* 39/1075
soo, *adv.* 39/1076
too, *obl.* 57/364

goo, *inf.*
also, *adv.* 18/465, 42/1150, 184/149, 210/80
doo, *imper.* 146/171, 168/128
doo, *inf.* 132/773
doo, *pp.* 126/611, 126/613
foo, *nom.* 184/151
froo, *adv.* 168/131
Mago, *n. pr.* 67/187
moo, *adv.* 42/1152
therfroo, *adv.* 111/201
too, *prep.* 132/775
too, *adv.* 146/173
ydoo, *pp.* 111/198

goo, *pp.*
also, *adv.* 126/620
doo, *inf.* 126/618

moo, *a. pl.*
doo, *imper.* 80/536
thereto, *prep.* 80/537
twoo, *a. pl.* 72/314

moo, *adv.*
also, *adv.* 42/1150, 133/812
goo, *inf.* 42/1153

soo, *adv.*
agoo, *pp.* 39/1075
doo, *imper.* 89/786
doo, *inf.* 118/387, 155/163, 156/205
doo, *pp.* 90/820, 169/139
fordoo, *inf.* 34/934
froo, *adv.* 64/102

goo, *imper.* 89/789
goo, *subj.* 39/1073
goo, *inf.* 67/186
Mago, *n. pr.* 67/187
therto, *adv.* 156/208
to, *adv.* 155/165
too, *prep.* 118/390
two, *a. pl.* 64/103
therfroo, *adv.*
doo, *pp.* 104/15
goo, *inf.* 111/200
ydoo, *pp.* 111/198
too, *obl.*
goo, *subj.* 57/363
too, *prep.*
doo, *inf.* 118/387, 132/773
goo, *inf.* 132/776
soo, *adv.* 118/389
too, *adv.*
doo, *imper.* 85/666, 146/171
doo, *inf.* 64/94
goo, *inf.* 146/174
twoo, *a. pl.*
do, *pp.* 72/322
moo, *a. pl.* 72/315
ydoo, *pp.*
goo, *inf.* 111/200
therfroo, *adv.* 111/201
two, *a. pl.* 75/405

-ood

flood, *nom.*
good, *a. sing.* 49/147
good, *a. sing.*
flood, *nom.* 49/146

-oode (*see* -od, -ode)

bloode, *nom.*
goode, *a. sing.* 41/1134
bloode, *obj.*
goode, *a. sing.* 31/842, 141/24
stoode, *v.* 3 *s. perf.* 141/27
wode, *a. sing.* 31/845
broode, *obl.*
goode, *a. sing.* 22/577, 26/707
floode, *obl.*
goode, *a. sing.* 28/763, 59/439, 131/732
foode, *obl.*
gode, *obl.* 129/696
goode, *a. pl.* 129/699
goode, *a. sing.*
bloode, *nom.* 41/1133
bloode, *obj.* 31/844, 141/26
broode, *obl.* 22/575
floode, *obl.* 28/762, 59/438, 131/730
obroode, *inf.* 59/436
stoode, *v.* 3 *s. perf.* 141/27
*unshod, *a. sing.* 32/860
wode, *a. sing.* 31/845
woode, *a. sing.* 6/133
goode, *a. pl.*
foode, *obl.* 129/698
gode, *obl.* 129/696
southernwoode, *obl.* 125/596
goode, *adv.*
brode, *obl.* 23/615
broode, *obl.* 26/706
shode, *pp.* 20/538
obroode, *inf.*
floode, *obl.* 59/438
goode, *a. sing.* 59/439
southernwoode, *obl.*
goode, *a. pl.* 125/598
stoode, *v.* 3 *s. perf.*
bloode, *obj.* 141/26
goode, *a. sing.* 141/24
woode, *a. sing.*
goode, *a. sing.* 6/132

-oode is (*see* -oodes)

goode is
woodes, *n. pl.* 43/1169

-oodes (*see* -oode is)

woodes, *n. pl.*
goode is, 43/1168

-ook (*see* -ooke)

stook, *obl.*
*ooke, *obl.* 88/752

-ooke (*see* **-ook**)

ooke, *obl.*
*stook, *obl.* 88/750

-ooked (*see* **-ocked**)

crooked, *a. pl.*
*rocked, *a. pl.* 42/1155

-oolde (*see* **-olde**)

moolde, *obl.*
colde, *obl.* 96/999
holde, *inf.* 69/222, 93/910, 112/230, 210/95
sholde, *v.* 69/219
wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 96/998, 210/96
moolde, *obj.*
sholde, *v.* 79/521

-oolle (*see* **-ole**, **-ulle**)

woolle, *obl.*
*fulle, *obl.* 167/81
*wole, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 167/82

-oom

broom, *obl.*
doom, *obl.* 20/525
doom, *obl.*
broom, *obl.* 20/524

-oon (*see* **-on**, **-oone**, **-one**)

agoon, *inf.*
stoon, *obl.* 156/195
anoon, *adv.*
goon, *inf.* 74/360
*goone, *subj.* 35/949
*ichone, *pron.* 35/947
oon, *a. sing.* 46/62
doon, *inf.*
*ichone, *pron.* 79/515
*moone, *obl.* 79/516, 108/132
echoon, *a. sing.*
noon, *a. sing.* 38/1026
origon, *nom.* 38/1024
everichoon, *pron.*
*Septemtrion, *obl.* 17/456
goon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
oon, *a. sing.* 178/204
goon, *subj.*
*aloone, *adv.* 123/551
*stoone, *obj.* 123/550
goon, *inf.*
anoon, *adv.* 74/358
oon (1), *a. sing.* 147/217
noon, *a. sing.*
*allone, *adv.* 44/18
echoon, *a. sing.* 38/1027
*everichone, *a. sing.* 44/19
*goone, *inf.* 175/129
oon, *adv.* 192/144
origon, *nom.* 38/1024
stoon, *obj.* 192/142
oon, *a. pl.*
goon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 178/206
oon, *pron.*
everichon, *pron.* 148/222
ygoon, *pp.* 126/619
oon, *a. sing.*
anoon, *adv.* 46/63
goon, *inf.* 147/218
*goone, *inf.* 14/375
*on, *prep.* 76/423
*stone, *nom.* 14/373
oon, *adv.*
*goone, *inf.* 17/452
noon, *a. sing.* 192/145
stoon, *obj.* 192/142
*stoone, *obj.* 17/450
oon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
*stoone, *obl.* 27/737
togoon, *inf.* 27/740
stoon, *obl.*
agoon, *inf.* 156/196
stoon, *obj.*
noon, *pron.* 192/145
oon, *pron.* 192/144
togoon, *inf.*
oon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/739
*stoone, *obl.* 27/737
ygoon, *pp.*
oon, *pron.* 126/617

-oone (*see* **-on, -one, -oon, -one**)

alloone, *adv.*
Aquylone, *obl.* 56/345
noone, *a. pl.* 56/348
aloone, *adv.*
doone, *inf.* 89/781
*goon, *subj.* 123/548
moone, *obl.* 89/779
stoone, *obj.* 123/550
anoone, *adv.*
brymstoone, *obl.* 33/902
goone, *inf.* 55/321
brymstoone, *obl.*
anoone, *adv.* 33/903
doone, *inf.*
aloone, *adv.* 89/782
everichoone, *pron.* 127/660
moone, *nom.* 152/97
moone, *obl.* 30/825, 78/482, 89/779, 114/274, 151/64, 152/85, 196/267, 203/464
repone, *imper.* 127/663
soone, *adv.* 203/467
doone, *pp.*
*alone, *adv.* 215/233
moone, *obl.* 75/400, 107/97, 160/60, 160/64
oone, *obl.* 215/235
soone, *adv.* 160/61
everichoone, *pron.*
doone, *inf.* 127/662
moone, *obl.* 82/594
repone, *imper.* 127/663
goone, *subj.*
*anoon, *adv.* 35/950
ichone, *pron.* 35/947
goone, *inf.*
anoone, *adv.* 55/322
*noon, *a. sing.* 175/127
oon, *adv.* 17/453
*oon, *a. sing.* 14/376
stone, *nom.* 14/373
stoone, *obj.* 17/450
ichoone, *pron.*
ydoone, *pp.* 121/485
moone, *nom.* 121/487
moone, *nom.*
doone, *inf.* 152/98
ichoone, *pron.* 121/488
ydoone, *pp.* 121/485
moone, *obl.*
aloone, *adv.* 89/782
done, *inf.* 164/7, 172/33, 193/187
*doon, *inf.* 79/513, 108/133
doone, *inf.* 30/826, 78/483, 89/781, 114/276, 151/66, 152/87, 196/269, 203/466
doone, *pp.* 75/402, 107/98, 160/58, 160/66
everichoone, *pron.* 82/595
ichone, *pron.* 79/515
sone, *adv.* 85/692, 106/59, 143/95, 166/56, 168/115, 172/32, 182/80, 191/115
soone, *adv.* 160/61, 203/467
undoone, *pp.* 173/62
noone, *a. pl.*
alloone, *adv.* 56/347
Aquylone, *obl.* 56/345
ichone, *a. sing.* 2/31
ragstone, *obl.* 3/62
oone, *obl.*
alone, *adv.* 215/233
doone, *pp.* 215/236
overgoone, *inf.*
stoone, *obj.* 54/300
soone, *adv.*
doone, *inf.* 203/466
doone, *pp.* 160/58
moone, *obl.* 160/60, 203/464
stoone, *obj.*
aloone, *adv.* 123/551
*goon, *subj.* 123/548
goone, *inf.* 17/452
*oon, *adv.* 17/453
overgoone, *inf.* 54/301
stoone, *obl.*
*oon, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 27/739
*togoon, *inf.* 27/740
undoone, *pp.*
moone, *obl.* 173/63

ydoone, *pp.*
ichoone, *pron.* 121/488
moone, *nom.* 121/487

-oon is (*see* **-onys, -oonys, -oone is**)

doon is
moonys, *n. pl.* 142/63
noon is, 155/39
stonys, *n. pl.* 78/475, 127/664, 155/37
noon is
bonys, *n. pl.* 213/170
doon is, 150/40
goone is, 213/173
stonys, *n. pl.* 150/37, 150/48
oon is
*ons, *obj.* 147/214
stoon is
stonys, *n. pl.* 174/78
ydoon is
bonys, *n. pl.* 133/798

-oone is (*see* **-ones, -onys, -oon is**)

doone is,
eftsones, *adv.* 115/320
stonys, *n. pl.* 108/120, 115/317, 144/119
goone is
bonys, *n. pl.* 213/170
nonys, *n. pl.* 98/1031
noon is, 213/172
onys, *adv.* 98/1033
moone is
stonys, *n. pl.* 182/97
stoone is
stonys, *n. pl.* 158/6

-oones (*see* **-ones**)

stoones, *n. pl.*
ones, *adv.* 195/239

-oonys (*see* **-oon is**)

moonys, *n. pl.*
doon is, 142/64

-oor (*see* **-ore**)

hoor, *adv.*
*bore, *obj.* 98/1051

-oore

boore, *obl.*
hoore, *a. sing.* 99/1062
stoore, *obl.* 99/1061
hoore, *a. sing.*
boore, *obl.* 99/1059
stoore, *obl.* 99/1061
moore, *a. sing.*
poore, *a. sing.* 177/188
poore, *a. sing.*
moore, *a. sing.* 177/189
stoore, *obl.*
boore, *obl.* 99/1059
hoore, *a. sing.* 99/1062

-oos (*see* **-ose**)

encloos, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
*dispose, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 89/801

-oote (*see* **-ote, -oothe**)

boote, *nom.*
remote, *pp.* 55/313, 150/47
roote, *obl.* 9/237, 55/310, 57/370, 88/762, 141/45, 150/46, 212/135
roote, *obj.* 92/862
roote, *inf.* 141/47, 212/137
boote, *obj.*
roote, *obl.* 87/748, 107/104, 108/107
ymmote, *imper.* 108/109
boote, *obl.*
roote, *obl.* 219/335
boote, *inf.*
roote, *obl.* 125/588
foote, *imper.*
foote, *obl.* 12/316
foote, *obl.*
foote, *imper.* 12/318
roote, *nom.* 30/803
*wrote, *inf.* 130/802

foothoote, *obl.*
hoote, *obl.* 52/226
*wote, 1 *s. pres.* 52/229
hoote, *obl.*
foothoote, *obl.* 52/228
*wote, 1 *s. pres.* 52/229
hoote, *a. pl.*
roote, *obl.* 115/308
roote, *nom.*
foote, *obl.* 30/800
*wrote, *inf.* 30/802
roote, *obj.*
boote, *nom.* 92/864
roote, *inf.* 84/647
roote, *obl.*
boote, *nom.* 9/238, 57/371, 88/763, 141/48, 150/44, 212/138
boote, *obj.* 107/105, 108/110
boote, *obl.* 219/336
boothe, *obj.* 94/943
hoote, *a. pl.* 115/307
remote, *a. sing.* 150/47
roote, *inf.* 85/682, 112/234, 141/47
rote, *inf.* 212/137
soote, *a. sing.* 77/446, 94/942
soote, *a. pl.* 192/147
wrote, *imper.* 77/445
ymmote, *imper.* 108/109
roote, *obl.*
boote, *nom.* 55/312
boote, *obj.* 87/749
boote, *inf.* 125/587
remote, *a. sing.* 55/313
roote, *inf.* 78/489
roote, *inf.*
boote, *nom.* 141/48
roote, *obl.* 78/490, 85/680, 112/232, 141/45
roote, *obj.* 84/645
soote, *a. sing.*
boothe, *obj.* 94/943
roote, *obl.* 77/443, 94/940
wrote, *imper.* 77/445
soote, *a. pl.*
roote, *obl.* 192/146

-oote is (*see* **-ootes**)

boote is
footes, *a. pl.* 163/140
rootes, *n. pl.* 67/181, 101/1114

-ootes (*see* **-oote is, -ote is**)

footes
boote is, *a. pl.* 163/137
rootes, *n. pl.*
boote is, 67/182
boote is, 101/1116
bote is, 34/938

-oothe (*see* **-oote**)

boothe, *obj.*
roote, *obl.* 94/940
soote, *a. sing.* 94/942

-ope.

drope, *obl.*
hope, *nom.* 157/237
hope, *nom.*
drope, *obl.* 157/237

-opher (*see* **-ofre, -offre**)

Philosopher, *nom.*
ofre, *subj.* 167/95
coffre, *obj.* 167/96

-oppe

stoppe, *inf.*
toppe, *obl.* 96/1000
toppe, *obl.*
stoppe, *inf.* 96/1001

-ore (*see* **-oor**)

afore, *adv.*
evermore, *adv.* 139/965
lore, *nom.* 196/266
more, *a. pl.* 139/964
therfore, *adv.* 139/967
alore (? afore)
more, *adv.* 4/78
before, *adv.*
before, *adv.* 25/661
core, *obj.* 205/506
evermore, *adv.* 26/711

lore, *nom.* 105/42
lore, *obl.* 26/712
more, *a. pl.* 189/60, 205/508
more, *adv.* 189/61
bore, *imper.*
store, 190/87
bore, *inf.*
bore, *obl.* 76/416
therefore, *adv.* 195/245
bore, *obl.*
bore, *inf.* 76/414
bore, *obj.*
*hoor, *adv.* 98/1053
core, *obj.*
before, *adv.* 205/509
fore, *adv.* 95/971
more, *a. sing.* 95/970
more, *a. pl.* 205/508
evermore, *adv.*
afore, *adv.* 139/962
before, *adv.* 26/709
lore, *obl.* 26/712
more, *a. pl.* 139/964
sore, *adv.* 106/74
therfore, *adv.* 139/967
tore, *pp.* 106/75
fore, *adv.*
core, *obj.* 95/968
more, *a. sing.* 95/970
lore, *nom.*
afore, *adv.* 196/265
before, *adv.* 105/41
more, *a. sing.* 88/755
lore, *obl.*
before, *adv.* 26/709
evermore, *adv.* 26/711
more, *adv.*
alore (? afore), 4/80
before, *adv.* 189/58
more, *a. pl.* 189/60
more, *a. sing.*
core, *obj.* 95/968
fore, *adv.* 95/971
lore, *nom.* 88/756
sore, *a. pl.* 23/604
therfore, *adv.* 23/606
more, *a. pl.*
afore, *adv.* 139/962
before, *adv.* 189/58, 205/509
core, *obj.* 205/506
evermore, *adv.* 139/965
more, *adv.* 189/61
therfore, *adv.* 139/967
seore, *inf.*
therfore, *adv.* 153/118
sore, *a. pl.*
more, *a. sing.* 23/607
therfore, *adv.* 23/606
sore, *adv.*
evermore, *adv.* 106/72
tore, *pp.* 106/75
store, *obj.*
bore, *imper.* 190/85
therefore, *adv.*
bore, *inf.* 195/244
seore, *inf.* 153/119
therfore, *prep.*
afore, *adv.* 139/962
evermore, *adv.* 139/965
more, *a. sing.* 23/607
more, *a. pl.* 139/964
sore, *a. pl.* 23/604
tore, *pp.*
evermore, *adv.* 106/72
sore, *adv.* 106/74

-ored

bored, *pp.*
scored, *pp.* 126/626
scored, *pp.*
bored, *pp.* 126/624

-orgh

forgh, *obj.*
thorgh, *prep.* 150/36
thorgh, *prep.*
forgh, *obj.* 150/38

-orle (*see* -urle)

thorle, *imper.*
hurle, *inf.* 175/133

-orme

forme, *obl.*
for me, 60/448

-orme is (*see* **-ormys**)

worme is
wormys, *n. pl.* 138/945

-ormys (*see* **-orme is**)

wormys, *n. pl.*
worme is, 138/946

-orn (*see* **-orne**)

aforn, *adv.*
born, *pp.* 162/116
lorn, *pp.* 162/117
scorn, *nom.* 32/868
beforn, *adv.*
lorn, *pp.* 29/796
thorn, *obl.* 29/793
upborn, *pp.* 206/538
born, *pp.*
aforn, *adv.* 162/114
lorn, *pp.* 162/117
lorn, *pp.*
aforn, *adv.* 162/114
beforn, *adv.* 29/795
born, *pp.* 162/116
thorn, *obl.* 29/793
scorn, *nom.*
aforn, *adv.* 32/867
thorn, *obl.*
beforn, *adv.* 29/795
lorn, *pp.* 29/796
upborn, *pp.*
*aforne, *adv.* 148/220
beforn, *adv.* 206/539
*borne, *pp.* 148/222

-orne (*see* **-orn, -ourne, -urne**)

aforne, *adv.*
borne, *pp.* 49/138, 74/734, 148/222
thorne, *obl.* 148/223
torne, *pp.* 49/137
*upborn, *pp.* 148/225
beforne, *adv.*
corne, *obj.* 25/660
corne, *obl.* 99/1079
lorne, *pp.* 25/663, 140/13
thorne, *obl.* 81/571
torne, *pp.* 81/572, 161/81
ylorne, *pp.* 161/182
yshorne, *pp.* 140/12
borne, *inf.*
corne, *obj.* 37/996
lorne, *pp.* 37/999
borne, *pp.*
aforne, *adv.* 49/135, 74/372, 148/220
corne, *obl.* 68/198
lorne, *pp.* 68/201
thorne, *obl.* 148/223
*torn, *pp.* 49/137
*upborn, *pp.* 148/225
corne, *obl.*
beforne, *adv.* 99/1081
borne, *pp.* 68/200
lorne, *pp.* 7/162, 68/201
corne, *obj.*
beforne, *adv.* 25/663
borne, *inf.* 37/998
lorne, *pp.* 25/662, 37/999
lorne, *pp.*
beforne, *adv.* 25/663, 140/10
borne, *inf.* 37/998
borne, *pp.* 68/200
corne, *obj.* 25/660, 37/996
corne, *obl.* 7/164, 68/198
yshorne, *pp.* 140/12
scorne, *n. pl.*
turne, *inf.* 154/146
thorne, *obl.*
aforne, *adv.* 148/220
beforne, *adv.* 81/569
borne, *pp.* 148/222
torne, *pp.* 81/572
*upborn, *pp.* 148/225
torne, *pp.*
aforne, *adv.* 49/135
beforne, *adv.* 81/569, 161/79
borne, *pp.* 49/138

thorne, *obl.* 81/571
ylorne, *pp.* 161/82
yorne, *adv.*
tourne, 17/448
ylorne, *pp.*
beforne, *adv.* 161/79
torne, *pp.* 161/81
yshorne, *pp.*
beforne, *adv.* 140/10
lorne, *pp.* 140/13

-orne is (*see* **-ornys**)

borne is
hornys, *n. pl.* 125/597
horne is, 125/600
corne is
bifornys, 159/43
horne is
hornys, *n. pl.* 125/597
borne is, 125/599

-ornes

bycornes, *n. pl.*
thornes, *n. pl.* 42/1162
thornes, *n. pl.*
bycornes, *n. pl.* 42/1161

-ornys (*see* **-orne is**)

bifornys, *adv.*
corne is, 159/45
hornys, *n. pl.*
borne is, 125/599
horne is, 125/600

-ose (*see* **-oos**)

chose, *pp.*
dispose, *inf.* 78/492
pose, *obj.* 78/495
close, *imper.*
disclose, *inf.* 56/331
repose, *imper.* 56/334
close, *inf.*
unclose, *inf.* 157/218
complose, *pp.*
nebulose, *a. sing.* 175/114
ose, *subj.* 175/116
dispose, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
*encloos, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 89/799
dispose, *imper.*
rose, *obl.* 156/204, 203/456
dispose, *inf.*
chose, *pp.* 78/494
close, *imper.* 56/333
pose, *obj.* 78/495
repose, *imper.* 56/334
lapidose, *a. pl.*
vermyculose, *a. sing.* 215/227
nebulose, *a. sing.*
complose, *pp.* 175/117
ose, *inf.* 175/116
oilderose, *obj.*
rose, *obl.* 156/211
ose, *inf.*
complose, *pp.* 175/117
nebulose, *a. sing.* 175/114
pose, *obj.*
chose, *pp.* 78/494
dispose, *inf.* 78/492
repose, *imper.*
close, *imper.* 56/333
disclose, *inf.* 56/331
rose, *obl.*
dispose, *imper.* 156/206, 203/458
oilderose, *obj.* 156/213
unclose, *inf.*
close, *inf.* 157/220
vermyculose, *a. sing.*
lapidose, *a. pl.* 215/225

-oste

coste, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
thoste, *obj.* 39/1077
thoste, *obj.*
coste, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 39/1078

-ote (*see* **-oote**)

dote, *inf.*
rote, *inf.* 28/750
frote, *imper.*
rote, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 33/886
throte, *obl.* 132/767

remote, *a. sing.*
boote, *nom.* 55/312, 150/44
roote, *obl.* 55/310, 150/46
rote, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
frote, *imper.* 33/883
rote, *inf.*
boote, *nom.* 212/138.
dote, *inf.* 28/752
roote, *obl.* 212/135
throte, *obl.*
frote, *imper.* 132/765
wrote, *v.* 1 *s. pres.*
foothoote, *obl.* 52/228
hoote, *obl.* 52/226
wrote, *imper.*
roote, *obl.* 77/443
soote, *a. sing.* 77/446
wrote, *inf.*
foote, *obl.* 30/800
roote, *nom.* 30/805
ymmote, *imper.*
boote, *obj.* 108/110
roote, *obl.* 108/107

-ote is (*see* **-ootes**)

bote is
rootes, *n. pl.* 34/937

-oth

broth, *obj.*
seefroth, *nom.* 116/335
seefroth, *nom.*
broth, *obj.* 116/336

-othe

bothe, *adv.*
unclothe, *inf.* 167/90
bothe, *a. pl.*
lothe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 83/612
lothe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
bothe, *a. pl.* 83/610
unclothe, *inf.*
bothe, *adv.* 167/91

-other

Brother, *nom.*
other, *pron.* 117/384
brother, *obj.*
other, *pron.* 154/153, 210/104
other, *pron.*
Brother, *nom.* 117/385
brother, *obj.* 154/154, 210/105

-oubte (*see* **-oute**)

doubte, *obj.*
route, *obl.* 52/222
stoute, *a. pl.* 52/221

-ouell (*see* **-oule**)

shouell, *obj.*
*defoule, *imper.* 31/838
*oule, *obj.* 31/835

-ough

bough, *nom.*
plough, *obl.* 182/95
ynough, *adv.* 182/96
bough, *obj.*
slough, *obl.* 125/605
bough, *obl.*
ynough, *adv.* 75/413, 144/127
frough, *a. sing.*
tough, *adv.* 85/672
plough, *obl.*
bough, *nom.* 182/93
sough, *obl.* 19/515
tough, *a. sing.* 45/23, 50/173
ynough, *adv.* 19/516, 45/25, 50/170, 182/96
sough, *obl.*
plough, *obl.* 19/513
ynough, *adv.* 19/516
slough, *obl.*
bough, *obj.* 125/603
tough, *a. sing.*
plough, *obl.* 45/26, 50/172
ynough, *adv.* 45/25, 50/170
tough, *adv.*
frough, *a. sing.* 85/671
yo, *adv.* 15/402

ynough, *adv.*
bough, *nom.* 182/93
bough, *obl.* 75/412, 144/126
plough, *obl.* 19/513, 45/26, 50/172, 182/95
sough, *obl.* 19/515
tough, *a. sing.* 45/23, 50/173

-ought

besought, *pp.*
wrought, *pp.* 41/1107
bethought, *pp.*
brought, *pp.* 40/1083
wrought, *pp.* 40/1082
bought, *pp.*
nought, *obl.* 128/689
brought, *pp.*
bethought, *pp.* 40/1080
nought, *nom.* 26/696
sought, *pp.* 87/740
wrought, *pp.* 40/1082, 87/739
nought, *nom.*
brought, *pp.* 26/694
nought, *obl.*
bought, *pp.* 128/687
sought, *pp.* 88/766
wrought, *pp.* 49/155
sought, *pp.*
brought, *pp.* 87/737
nought, *obl.* 88/764
wrought, *pp.* 87/739
ywrought, *pp.* 82/589
wrought, *pp.*
besought, *pp.* 41/1109
bethought, *pp.* 40/1080
brought, *pp.* 40/1083, 87/737
nought, *obl.* 49/157
sought, *pp.* 87/740
ywrought, *pp.*
sought, *pp.* 82/591

-oule (*see* **-ouell**)

defoule, *imper.*
oule, *obj.* 31/835
*shouell, *obj.* 31/837
oule, *obj.*
*shouell, *obj.* 31/837
defoule, *imper.* 31/838

-oun (*see* **-on, -oune**)

castracioun, *nom.*
operacioun, *nom.* 162/115
correctioun, *obl.*
protectioun, *nom.* 139/936
emplastracioun, *obj.*
*insicion, *obj.* 161/90
jubilacioun, *obj.*
salvacioun, *obj.* 139/968
operacioun, *nom.*
castracioun, *nom.* 162/113
protectioun, *nom.*
correctioun, *obl.* 139/961
salvacioun, *obj.*
jubilacioun, *obj.* 139/966
septemtrioun, *obl.*
*doune, *adv.* 49/161

-ounde (*see* **-onde, -unde**)

abounde, *a. sing.*
rounde, *a. sing.* 98/1052
rounde, *a. pl.* 133/792
sounde, *a. pl.* 98/1055
abounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
feconde, *a. pl.* 219/332
fecounde, *a. pl.* 86/707
*infecunde, *a. pl.* 25/667
rounde, *a. pl.* 25/670
rounde, *adv.* 104/10
abounde, *subj.*
fecounde, *a. sing.* 4/77
wounde, *obl.* 188/49
abounde, *inf.*
enrounde, *inf.* 147/209
fecounde, *a. pl.* 63/57, 71/285
founde, *pp.* 173/68
grounde, *obl.* 73/341, 147/208, 165/37, 173/65
infounde, *imper.* 220/363
rounde, *a. sing.* 165/39, 203/454
secounde, *a. sing.* 71/282, 73/340, 93/911

bounde, *pp.*
grounde, *pp.* 163/137
infounde, *imper.* 163/138
confounde, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
grounde, *obl.* 107/86
wounde, *obl.* 107/88
confounde, *subj.*
grounde, *obl.* 51/1132
ygrounde, *pp.* 41/1129
confounde, *inf.*
grounde, *pp.* 90/813
grounde, *obl.* 73/335, 105/36
contounde, *imper.*
grounde, *pp.* 220/367
enrounde, *imper.*
grounde, *obl.* 56/344
enrounde, *inf.*
abounde, *inf.* 147/206
grounde, *obl.* 147/208
grounde, *pp.* 22/593
pounde, *n. pl.* 145/147
wounde, *obl.* 22/592
fecounde, *a. sing.*
abounde, *subj.* 4/76
fecounde, *a. pl.*
abounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 86/706
abounde, *imper.* 63/59
abounde, *inf.* 71/284
infounde, *imper.* 97/1021, 122/510
secounde, *a. sing.* 71/282
founde, *imper.*
grounde, *pp.* 42/1135
founde, *pp.*
abounde, *inf.* 173/67
fecounde, *inf.* 71/275
grounde, *pp.* 36/981
grounde, *obl.* 89/790, 153/115, 173/65, 210/90
wounde, *obj.* 71/278
grounde, *pp.*
bounde, *pp.* 163/135
confounde, *inf.* 90/815
contounde, *imper.* 220/365
enrounde, *inf.* 22/590
founde, *imper.* 42/1137
founde, *pp.* 36/983
infounde, *imper.* 163/138, 205/518
secounde, *a. sing.* 205/511
wounde, *obl.* 22/592
grounde, *obl.*
abounde, *inf.* 73/338, 147/206, 165/40, 173/67
confounde, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 107/89
confounde, *subj.* 41/1131
confounde, *inf.* 73/336, 105/38
enrounde, *imper.* 56/346
enrounde, *inf.* 147/209
founde, *pp.* 89/791, 153/113, 173/68, 210/91
grounde, *obl.* 34/917
rounde, *a. sing.* 70/264, 174/96
rounde, *adv.* 69/230, 165/39
secounde, *a. sing.* 73/340
stounde, *obl.* 180/44
unbounde, *adv.* 158/21
wounde, *obj.* 70/263
wounde, *obl.* 70/258, 102/1154, 107/88
ygrounde, *pp.* 41/1129, 174/95, 180/47
ywounde, *pp.* 68/216
infounde, *imper.*
abounde, *inf.* 220/364
bounde, *pp.* 163/135
fecounde, *a. pl.* 97/1022, 122/511
grounde, *pp.* 163/137
infounde, *inf.*
grounde, *pp.* 205/517
sounde, *a. pl.* 211/112
jocounde, *a. sing.*
redounde, *inf.* 205/504
pounde, *n. pl.*
enfounde, *inf.* 145/148
pounde, *obj.*
sounde, *adv.* 183/122
pounde, *obl.*
sounde, 118/413
redounde, *inf.*
jocounde, *a. sing.* 205/503
rounde, *a. sing.*
abounde, *a. sing.* 98/1054
abounde, *inf.* 203/455

grounde, *obl.* 70/261, 174/93
sounde, *a. pl.* 98/1055
wounde, *obj.* 70/263
ygrounde, *pp.* 174/95

rounde, *a. pl.*
abounde, *a. sing.* 133/791
abounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 25/669
*infecunde, *a. pl.* 25/667

rounde, *adv.*
abounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 104/8
abounde, *inf.* 165/40
grounde, *obl.* 69/231, 165/37

secounde, *a. sing.*
abounde, *inf.* 71/284, 73/338, 93/913
fecounde, *a. pl.* 71/285
grounde, *obl.* 73/341

sounde, *a. pl.*
abounde, *a. sing.* 98/1054
infounde, *inf.* 211/111
rounde, *a. sing.* 98/1052

sounde, *adv.*
pounde, *obl.* 118/412
pounde, *obj.* 183/120

stounde, *obl.*
grounde, *obl.* 180/46
ygrounde, *pp.* 180/47

unbounde, *adv.*
grounde, *obl.* 158/20

wounde, *obj.*
feconde, *inf.* 71/275
founde, *pp.* 71/277
grounde, *obl.* 70/261
rounde, *a. sing.* 70/264
yfounde, *pp.* 153/126

wounde, *obl.*
abounde, *subj.* 188/48
confounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 107/89
enrounde, *inf.* 22/590
grounde, *pp.* 22/593
grounde, *obl.* 70/259, 102/1155, 107/86

yfounde, *pp.*
wounde, *obj.* 153/125

ygrounde, *pp.*
confounde, *subj.* 41/1131
grounde, *obl.* 41/1132, 174/93, 180/46
rounde, *a. sing.* 174/96
stounde, *obl.* 180/44

ywounde, *pp.*
grounde, *obl.* 68/217

-oune (*see* **-onne, -oun**)

doune, *adv.*
*septemtrioun, *obl.* 49/160

umvironne, *pp*
*sonne, *obl.* 13/326
*conne, *subj.* 13/327

-oung (*see* **-onnge**)

young, *a. pl.*
*tonnge, *obl.* 26/692

-ounge (*see* **-onge**)

dounge, *inf.*
spronge, *pp.* 125/584 180/24,

dounge, *nom.*
yonge, *a. pl.* 28/759

dounge, *obj.*
amonge, *adv.* 107/100
flonge, *pp.* 179/11
longe, *a. sing.* 192/134
stronge, *a. pl.* 107/102
wronge, *obj.* 179/12
wronge, *pp.* 50/185

dounge, *obl.*
amonge, *prep.* 67/164
clonge, *a. sing.* 55/319
longe, *obl.* 195/238
longe, *inf.* 87/745
longe, *a. sing.* 94/927, 96/994, 115/310, 138/949
longe, *a. pl.* 84/662
longe, *adv.* 55/320, 116/332
stronge, *a. sing.* 51/201, 51/215
umbiyonge, *v.* 3 *pl. sing.* 51/214
umbiyonge, *inf.* 119/437
wronge, *adv.* 115/312
yonge, *a. sing.* 214/196

yonge, *a. pl.* 51/200, 84/663
ysprongе, *pp.* 191/118
strounge, *a. sing.*
dounge, *obl.* 51/198, 51/212
umbiyonge, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 51/214
yonge, *a. pl.* 51/200

-ount

grount, *obl.*
sount, *a. sing.* 176/154
sount, *a. sing.*
grount, *obl.* 176/153

-our

flour, *obj.*
humour, *obl.* 191/129
flour, *obl.*
licour, *obl.* 33/897
humour, *obl.*
flour, *obj.* 191/127
licour, *obl.*
flour, *obl.* 33/899

-oure

beshoure, *subj.*
floure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 149/9
houre, *nom.* 149/11
coloure, *nom.*
socoure, *inf.* 91/836
coloure, *obl.*
soure, *a. pl.* 128/682
Floure, *nom.*
honoure, *nom.* 163/148
floure, *obj.*
floure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 152/78
floure, *obl.*
houre, *nom.* 81/568
floure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
beshoure, *subj.* 149/12
floure, *obj.* 152/80
honoure, *obl.* 54/298
houre, *nom.* 149/11
socoure, *imper.* 54/299
houre, *nom.*
beshoure, *subj.* 149/12
floure, *obl.* 81/570
floure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 149/9
houre, *obl.*
laboure, *obl.* 1/14
licoure, *obl.* 178/200
soure, *a. sing.* 178/198
honoure, *nom.*
floure, *nom.* 163/150
honoure, *obl.*
floure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/296
socoure, *imper.* 54/299
laboure, *obl.*
houre, *obl.* 1/13
licoure, *obl.*
houre, *obl.* 178/201
soure, *a. sing.* 178/198
myrroure, *obl.*
socoure, *imper.* 36/978
terroure, *obj.* 36/977
odoure, *obl.*
socoure, *inf.* 138/948
soure, *a. pl.* 138/950
soure, *a. sing.*
houre, *obl.* 178/201
licoure, *obl.* 178/200
soure, *a. pl.*
odoure, *obl.* 138/951
socoure, *inf.* 138/948
socoure, *imper.*
floure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/296
honoure, *obl.* 54/298
myrroure, *obl.* 36/975
terroure, *obj.* 36/977
socoure, *inf.*
coloure, *nom.* 91/834
odoure, *obl.* 138/951
soure, *a. pl.* 138/950
soure, *a. pl.*
coloure, *obl.* 128/680
terroure, *obj.*
myrroure, *obl.* 36/975
socoure, *imper.* 36/978

-oured

coloured, *pp.*
discloured, *pp.* 134/816
socoured, *pp.* 197/280
discloured, *pp.*
coloured, *pp.* 134/814

socoured, *pp.*
coloured, *pp.* 197/279

-oure is (*see* -oures)

floure is
floures, *n. pl.* 37/1017
socoure is,[1] 37/1019
honoure is
houres, *n. pl.* 10/244
socoure is [1]
floures, *n. pl.* 37/1017
floure is, 37/1020

-oures (*see* -oure is)

floures, *n. pl.*
socoure is,[1] 37/1019
floure is, 37/1020
houres, *n. pl.*
honoure is, 10/245

-ourme

confourme, *imper.*
fourme, *nom.* 157/231
fourme, *nom.*
confourme, *imper.* 157/230
fourme, *imper.*
refourme, *inf.* 83/637
refourme, *inf.*
fourme, *imper.* 83/636

-ourmed

confourmed, *pp.*
fourmed, *pp.* 121/482
fourmed, *pp.*
confourmed, *pp.* 121/483

-ourne (*see* -orne)

tourne
yorne, *adv.* 17/447

-ous

argillous, *a. sing.*
glareous, *a. sing.* 121/497
glareous, *a. sing.*
argillous, *a. sing.* 121/496

-oute (*see* -oubte)

aboute, *adv.*
aroute, *adv.* 94/944
doute, *nom.* 30/805, 36/973, 76/420
doute, *obl.* 116/353
doute, *inf.* 55/302
oute, *adv.* 31/852
route, *obj.* 31/851
spoute, *inf.* 40/1097
stoute, *a. pl.* 23/630
withoute, *adv.* 33/888, 74/367, 92/869
withoute, *prep.* 40/1094
aboute, *prep.*
oute, *adv.* 83/623
aroute, *adv.*
aboute, *adv.* 94/945
doute, *nom.*
aboute, *adv.* 30/804, 36/972, 76/419
oute, *adv.* 156/209
doute, *obl.*
aboute, *adv.* 116/351
doute, *inf.*
aboute, *adv.* 55/304
oute, *adv.*
aboute, *adv.* 31/849
aboute, *prep.* 83/622
doute, *nom.* 156/210
route, *obj.* 31/851
route, *obj.*
aboute, *adv.* 31/849
oute, *adv.* 31/852
route, *obl.*
doubte, *obj.* 52/219
stoute, *a. pl.* 52/221
spoute, *inf.*
aboute, *adv.* 40/1096
withoute, *prep.* 40/1094
stoute, *a. pl.*
aboute, *adv.* 23/629
doute, *obj.* 52/219
route, *obl.* 52/222

[1] *Printed* socond is.

withoute, *adv.*
aboute, *adv.* 33/889, 74/36, 92/871
withoute, *prep.*
aboute, *adv.* 40/1096
spoute, *inf.* 40/1097

-outh

mouth, *obl.*
south, *obl.* 209/62
south, *obj.*
mouth, *obl.* 209/63

-outhe

couthe, *a. pl.*
mouthe, *obj.* 39/1062
southe, *obl.* 39/1059
mouthe, *obj.*
couthe, *a. pl.* 39/1061
southe, *obl.* 39/1059
southe, *obl.*
couthe, *a. pl.* 39/1061
mouthe, *obj.* 39/1062

-ove

above, *adv.*
love, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 8/197, 56/337, 83/611, 165/29
remove, *inf.* 83/614
hove, *inf.*
shove, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 36/976
love, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
above, 8/199, 56/339, 83/613, 165/31
remove, *inf.* 83/614
remove, *inf.*
above, *adv.* 83/613
love, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 83/611
shove, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
hove, *inf.* 36/974

-oved

admoved, *pp.*
moved, *pp.* 11/274
moved, *pp.*
admoved, *pp.* 11/276

-oves

droves, *obj.*
groves, *n. pl.* 134/827
groves, *n. pl.*
droves, *obj.* 134/826

-owe

alowe, *imper.*
growe, *inf.* 71/281
avowe, *inf.*
overflowe, *inf.* 42/1143
plowe, *inf.* 42/1146
bestowe, *imper.*
growe, *inf.* 45/39
lowe, *adv.* 160/68
sowe, *inf.* 45/37, 209/71
sowe, *pp.* 160/65
blowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
slowe, *a. pl.* 82/607
sowe, *inf.* 82/604
blowe, *subj.*
sowe, *pp.* 187/1
bowe, *obl.*
growe, *inf.* 76/424
trowe, *inf.* 76/425
enowe, *adv.*
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 6/128
mowe, *subj.* 6/131
flowe, *inf.*
growe, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 195/223
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
enowe, *adv.* 6/130
flowe, *inf.* 195/224
knowe, *inf.* 80/530
mowe, *subj.* 6/131
sowe, *imper.* 80/538, 193/186
sowe, *inf.* 10/260, 80/527, 80/545, 114/286, 165/32
sowe, *pp.* 81/576, 122/503, 187/10, 193/185
strowe, *inf.* 165/33
throwe, *imper.* 85/689
throwe, *inf.* 81/579
ynowe, *adv.* 130/729
growe, *subj.*
lowe, *adv.* 108/130
sowe, *inf.* 114/295

sowe, *pp.* 108/128
ynowe, *adv.* 23/617
growe, *inf.*
alowe, *imper.* 71/283
bestowe, *imper.* 45/40
bowe, *obl.* 76/422
knowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 7/166
lowe, *adv.* 141/37, 183/107, 212/153
mowe, *subj.* 51/199
overthrowe, *subj.* 149/20
owe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 149/5
plowe, *imper.* 217/281
plowe, *inf.* 45/22
rowe, *nom.* 168/111
sowe, *v.* 3. *pl. pres.* 97/1029
sowe, *imper.* 80/547, 84/657
sowe, *subj.* 62/48
sowe, *inf.* 45/37, 110/174, 140/9, 142/59, 213/186, 216/267
sowe, *pp.* 7/163, 62/22, 79/510, 84/646, 106/50, 106/63, 114/280, 128/686, 143/101, 149/2, 165/27, 172/29, 181/67, 184/135, 187/15, 213/176
strowe, *imper.* 213/187
throwe, *imper.* 143/90, 143/104, 180/43
throwe, *pp.* 142/61, 181/68, 183/109, 184/138, 192/151
trowe, *inf.* 76/425
ysowe, *pp.* 54/286, 86/699, 120/456, 143/87, 184/155, 192/149
ythrowe, *imper.* 84/649
growe, *pp.*
overthrowe, *inf.* 164/10
ynowe, *adv.* 52/231
howe, *adv.*
nowe, *adv.* 98/1038, 106/64
prowe, *nom.* 98/1040
knowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
growe, *inf.* 7/165
sowe, *pp.* 7/163
knowe, *inf.*
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 80/529
sowe, *inf.* 80/527
lowe, *adv.*
bestowe, *imper.* 160/67
growe, *subj.* 108/131
growe, *inf.* 141/39, 183/110, 212/154
sowe, *pp.* 108/128, 160/65
throwe, *pp.* 183/109
mowe, *subj.*
enowe, *adv.* 6/130
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 6/128
growe, *inf.* 51/197
nowe, *adv.*
howe, *adv.* 98/1041, 106/66
prowe, *nom.* 98/1040
overblowe, *pp.*
sowe, *inf.* 30/306
overflowe, *inf.*
avowe, *inf.* 42/1145
plowe, *inf.* 42/1146
overgrowe, *pp.*
rowe, *a. sing.* 150/31
sowe, *inf.* 9/218
overthrowe, *subj.*
growe, *inf.* 149/21
overthrowe, *inf.*
growe, *pp.* 164/8
owe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
growe, *inf.* 149/4
sowe, *pp.* 149/2
plowe, *imper.*
growe, *inf.* 217/283
plowe, *inf.*
avowe, *inf.* 42/1145
growe, *inf.* 45/24
overflowe, *inf.* 42/1143
rowe, *a. pl.* 160/53
rowe, *inf.* 160/54
prowe, *nom.*
howe, *adv.* 98/1041
nowe, *adv.* 98/1038
rowe, *nom.*
growe, *inf.* 168/112
rowe, *a. sing.*
overgrowe, *pp.* 150/29
rowe, *a. pl.*
plowe, *inf.* 160/51
rowe, *inf.* 160/54

rowe, *inf.*
plowe, *inf.* 160/51
rowe, *a. pl.* 160/53
sowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
growe, *inf.* 97/1028
sowe, *imper.*
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 80/539, 193/183
growe, *inf.* 80/549, 84/658
sowe, *pp.* 193/185
throwe, *inf.* 180/36
sowe, *subj.*
growe, *inf.* 62/49
sowe, *inf.*
bestowe, *imper.* 45/40, 209/73
blowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 82/606
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 10/262, 80/529, 80/546, 114/287, 165/30
growe, *subj.* 114/297
growe, *inf.* 45/39, 110/175, 140/11, 142/62, 213/184, 216/269
knowe, *inf.* 80/530
overblowe, *pp.* 30/808
overgrowe, *pp.* 9/220
slowe, *a. pl.* 82/607
strowe, *imper.* 213/187
throwe, *inf.* 7/175
throwe, *pp.* 142/61, 179/20
sowe, *pp.*
bestowe, *imper.* 160/67
blowe, *subj.* 187/3
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 122/504, 165/30, 187/8, 193/183, 81/578
growe, *subj.* 108/131
growe, *inf.* 7/165, 62/24, 79/511, 84/648, 106/52, 106/62, 114/279, 128/685, 143/103, 149/4, 165/28, 172/31, 181/65, 184/137, 187/17, 213/178
knowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 7/166
lowe, *adv.* 108/130, 166/68
owe, *v.* 3 *pr. pl.* 149/5
sowe, *imper.* 193/186
sowe, *inf.* 165/32
strowe, *inf.* 207/3
throwe, *imper.* 143/104, 179/10
throwe, *inf.* 45/45, 81/579, 184/143
throwe, *pp.* 181/68, 184/134, 191/126
ungrowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 98/1046
ythrowe, *imper.* 84/649
slowe, *a. pl.*
blowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 82/606
sowe, *inf.* 82/604
strowe, *imper.*
growe, *inf.* 213/184
sowe, *inf.* 213/186
strowe, *inf.*
sowe, *pp.* 207/1
throwe, *imper.*
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 85/687
growe, *inf.* 143/89, 143/103, 180/45
sowe, *pp.* 143/101, 179/8
ysowe, *pp.* 148/87
throwe, *inf.*
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 81/578
sowe, *imper.* 180/38
sowe, *inf.* 7/155
sowe, *pp.* 45/43, 81/576, 184/141
throwe, *pp.*
growe, *inf.* 142/62, 181/65, 183/110, 184/137, 192/152
lowe, *adv.* 183/107
sowe, *inf.* 142/59, 179/21
sowe, *pp.* 181/67, 184/135, 191/125
ysowe, *pp.* 192/149
trowe, *inf.*
bowe, *obl.* 76/422
growe, *inf.* 76/424
ungrowe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
sowe, *pp.* 98/1044
ynowe, *adv.*
growe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 130/728
growe, *subj.* 23/619
growe, *pp.* 52/230

ysowe, *pp.*
growe, *inf.* 54/287, 86/700, 120/458, 143/89, 184/157, 192/152
throwe, *imper.* 143/90
throwe, *pp.* 192/151
ythrowe, *imper.*
growe, *inf.* 84/648
sowe, *pp.* 84/646

-owed

alowed, *pp.*
plowed, *pp.* 47/83
plowed, *pp.*
alowed, *pp.* 47/84

-oweth

soweth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
throweth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 32/855
throweth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
soweth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 32/857

-u (*see* **-eu**)

superflu, *a. pl.*
greu, *v.* 3 *pl. pt.* 168/119

-uce

juce, *obl.*
letuce, *obl.* 51/204
letuce, *obl.*
juce, *obl.* 51/206

-ucke

crucke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
plucke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 51/209
plucke, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
crucke, 51/210

-ude

altitude, *obl.*
longitude, *obj.* 167/80
conclude, *subj.*
rude, *a. pl.* 176/146
conclude, *inf.*
latitude, *obl.* 176/135
rude, *a. pl.* 176/137
crassitude, *obl.*
longitude, *obj.* 119/431
rude, *a. pl.* 119/432
delude, *subj.*
multitude, *nom.* 147/203
disclude, *inf.*
magnitude, *obl.* 152/83
enclude, *imper.*
latitude, *obl.* 174/92
magnitude, *obl.* 39/1066
reclude, *imper.* 39/1069
enclude, *inf.*
exclude, *inf.* 95/966
magnitude, *obl.* 117/358, 161/80
teneritude, *nom.* 154/157
exclude, *imper.*
magnitude, *nom.* 134/815
similitude, *obl.* 134/818
exclude, *inf.*
enclude, *inf.* 95/965
include, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1145
similitude, *obj.* 102/1143
include, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
exclude, *inf.* 102/1146
similitude, *obj.* 102/1143
latitude, *obl.*
conclude, *inf.* 176/138
enclude, *imper.* 174/94
rude, *a. pl.* 176/137
longitude, *obj.*
altitude, *obl.* 167/78
crassitude, *obl.* 119/429
rude, *a. pl.* 119/432
magnitude, *nom.*
exclude, *imper.* 134/817
similitude, *obl.* 134/818
magnitude, *obl.*
enclude, *imper.* 39/1068
enclude, *inf.* 117/360, 161/78
reclude, *imper.* 39/1069
magnitude, *obj.*
disclude, *inf.* 152/84
multitude, *nom.*
delude, *subj.* 147/204
reclude, *imper.*
enclude, *imper.* 39/1068
magnitude, *obl.* 39/1066
rude, *a. pl.*
conclude, *subj.* 176/147
conclude, *inf.* 176/138

crassitude, *obl.* 119/429
latitude, *obl.* 176/135
longitude, *obj.* 119/431
similitude, *obl.*
exclude, *imper.* 134/817
magnitude, *nom.* 134/815
similitude, *obj.*
exclude, *inf.* 102/1146
include, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1145
teneritude, *nom.*
enclude, *inf.* 154/155

-ue (*see* -ewe)

pursue, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
eschewe, *inf.* 34/923

-ued

hued, *pp.*
hued, *pp.* 133/808, 133/811
skued, *pp.* 133/810
skued, *pp.*
hued, *pp.* 133/808, 133/811

-uge

huge, *adv.*
ruge, *n. pl.* 130/704
ruge, *n. pl.*
huge, *adv.* 130/702

-ulle (*see* -ole, -olle)

fulle, *a. pl.*
wolle, *subj.* 29/1067
fulle, *adv.*
pulle, *inf.* 93/896
wole, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 167/82
wolle, *obl.* 57/373, 167/79
wolle, *obj.* 154/139
wolle, *subj.* 57/375
pulle, *inf.*
fulle, *adv.* 93/895
wolle, *subj.* 53/251

-uls

huls, *inf.*
puls, *obl.* 160/55
puls, *obl.*
huls, *inf.* 160/56

-ume

assume, *imper.*
consume, *subj.* 198/314
consume, *subj.*
assume, *imper.* 198/315

-umme (*see* -ome)

gumme, *obj.*
summe, *a. pl.* 215/244
humme, *subj.*
*some, *nom.* 162/121
summe, *subj.* 162/123
summe, *subj.*
humme, *subj.* 162/124
*some, *nom.* 162/121
summe, *a. pl.*
gumme, *obj.* 215/245

-unde (*see* -ounde)

infecunde, *a. pl.*
*abounde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 25/669
*rounde, *a. pl.* 25/670

-under (*see* -onder)

under, *adv.*
asonder, *adv.* 11/269, 39/1058, 49/144, 53/272, 92/882, 144/116
sonder, *adv.* 30/799
sonder, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 49/145
thonder, *subj.* 111/203

-ure

admysure, *obl.*
cure, *obj.* 136/876
assure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
cure, *obj.* 146/188
pasture, *obl.* 146/187
assure, *inf.*
dure, *inf.* 95/947
geniture, *nom.* 136/889
mesure, *obl.* 9/212
sure, *a. sing.* 95/949
ure, *obl.* 9/215
culture, *obj.*
cure, *obj.* 84/654
nature, *obl.* 2/20
sure, *a. sing.* 124/577

cure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  cure, *nom.* 198/311
cure, *inf.*
  lesure, *obl.* 134/825
  nature, *obl.* 91/842, 134/822, 193/176
  sure, *a. sing.* 212/136
  sure, *a. pl.* 11/286
  ure, *inf.* 91/845
cure, *nom.*
  cure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 198/309
cure, *obl.*
  endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 58/387
  endure, *inf.* 87/730
  lesure, *obl.* 87/733
  mesure, *obl.* 21/558
  obscure, *a. sing.* 21/555
  sure, *a. sing.* 58/389
cure, *obj.*
  admyssure, *obl.* 136/875
  assure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/185
  culture, *obj.* 84/652
  nature, *obl.* 5/106, 29/778
  pasture, *obl.* 146/187
  pure, *a. sing.* 190/97
  pure, *a. pl.* 134/840
  sure, *a. pl.* 120/449
curvature, *nom.*
  sure, *a. sing.* 208/35
dure, *a. sing.*
  thure, *obl.* 201/412
dure, *inf.*
  assure, *inf.* 95/950
  pure, *a. sing.* 124/571
  sure, *a. sing.* 95/949
  sure, *a. pl.* 124/572
dure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  impure, *a. sing.* 12/303
  sure, *a. sing.* 12/305
endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
  cure, *obl.* 58/390
  measure, *obj.* 55/326
  pure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/327
  sure, *a. sing.* 58/389
  sure, *a. pl.* 212/157
endure, *subj.*
  nature, *obl.* 3/44
  pure, *a. pl.* 3/47
endure, *inf.*
  cure, *obl.* 87/732
  feture, *obj.* 131/731, 166/70
  lesure, *obl.* 87/733
  mature, *a. sing.* 163/134
  mesure, *obl.* 63/53
  nature, *obj.* 63/51, 131/733
  pure, *a. sing.* 37/995
  pure, *a. pl.* 197/301
  sure, *adv.* 122/525
feture, *obj.*
  endure, *inf.* 131/734
  nature, *obl.* 131/733
feture, *obl.*
  endure, *inf.* 166/69
geniture, *nom.*
  assure, *inf.* 136/890
impure, *a. sing.*
  dure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 12/306
  sure, *a. sing.* 12/305
lesure, *obl.*
  cure, *obl.* 87/732, 134/824
  endure, *inf.* 87/730
  nature, *nom.* 134/822
mature, *a. sing.*
  endure, *inf.* 163/136
mature, *a. pl.*
  pure,[1] *a. pl.* 90/830
  sure, *a. pl.* 90/831
mesure, *nom.*
  sure, *a. pl.* 159/38
mesure, *obj.*
  endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/324
  pure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/327
  sure, *a. pl.* 178/192
mesure, *obl.*
  assure, *inf.* 9/214
  cure, *obl.* 21/557
  endure, *inf.* 63/54
  mysseaventure, *nom.* 12/312

[1] *Printed* peres.

nature, *obl.* 103/1171
nature, *obj.* 63/51
obscure, *a. sing.* 21/555
recure, *subj.* 12/313
undure, *obl.* 103/1174
ure, *obl.* 9/215
mysseaventure, *nom.*
mesure, *obl.* 12/310
recure, *subj.* 12/313
nature, *nom.*
cure, *inf.* 134/824
lesure, *obl.* 134/825
pure, *inf.* 219/350
sure, *a. sing.* 197/294
nature, *obj.*
endure, *inf.* 63/54
mesure, *obl.* 63/53
sure, *a. sing.* 200/374
nature, *obl.*
culture, *obj.* 2/21
cure, *obl.* 5/108, 29/780
cure, *inf.* 91/844, 193/178
endure, *subj.* 3/46
endure, *inf.* 131/734
feture, *obj.* 131/731
mesure, *obl.* 103/1173
pure, *a. pl.* 3/47
undure, *obl.* 103/1174
ure, *inf.* 91/845
obscure, *a. sing.*
cure, *obl.* 21/557
mesure, *obl.* 21/558
sure, *a. pl.* 186/196
pasture, *obl.*
assure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/185
cure, *obj.* 146/188
pure, *a. sing.*
cure, *obj.* 190/98
dure, *inf.* 124/569
endure, *inf.* 37/997
sure, *a. pl.* 124/572
pure, *a. pl.*
cure, *obj.* 134/841
endure, *subj.* 3/46
endure, *inf.* 197/300
mature,[1] *a. pl.* 90/828
nature, *obl.* 3/44
sure,[1] *a. pl.* 90/831
pure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/324
mesure, *obj.* 55/326
pure, *inf.*
nature, *nom.* 219/349
ympure, *a. sing.* 201/402
purpure, *a. sing.*
sure, *a. sing.* 133/806
recure, *subj.*
mesure, *obl.* 12/310
mysseaventure, *nom.* 12/312
structure, *obl.*
sure, *a. sing.* 176/136
sure, *a. sing.*
assure, *inf.* 95/950
culture, *obj.* 124/575
cure, *obl.* 58/390
cure, *inf.* 212/134
curvature, *nom.* 208/34
dure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 12/306
dure, *inf.* 95/947
endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 58/387
impure, *a. sing.* 12/303
nature, *nom.* 197/293
nature, *obj.* 200/372
purpure, *a. sing.* 133/805
structure, *obl.* 176/134
sure, *a. pl.*
cure, *obj.* 120/451
cure, *inf.* 11/287
dure, *inf.* 124/569
endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 212/155
mature, *a. pl.* 90/828
mesure, *nom.* 159/36
mesure, *obj.* 178/190
obscure, *a. sing.* 186/195
pure, *a. sing.* 124/571
pure,[1] *a. pl.* 90/830
sure, *adv.*
endure, *inf.* 122/524

[1] *Printed* peres.

thure, *obl.*
dure, *a. sing.* 201/413
undure, *obl.*
mesure, *obl.* 103/1173
nature, *obl.* 103/1171
ure, *obl.*
assure, *obl.* 9/214
mesure, *obl.* 9/212
ure, *inf.*
cure, *inf.* 91/844
nature, *obl.* 91/842
ympure, *a. sing.*
pure, *inf.* 201/400

-ured

endured, *pp.*
pured, *pp.* 220/360
pured, *pp.*
endured, *pp.* 220/358

-urle (*see* **-orle**)

hurle, *inf.*
thorle, *imper.* 175/132

-urne (*see* **-orne**)

turne, *inf.*
scorne, *n. pl.* 154/147

-us

Apuleius, *n. pr.*
thus, *adv.* 34/920
Radius, *n. pr.*
thus, *adv.* 77/459
us, *pron.* 77/460
thus, *adv.*
Apuleius, *n. pr.* 34/918
Radius, *nom. pr.* 77/457
us, *pron.* 77/460
us, *pron.*
Radius, *n. pr.* 77/457
thus, *adv.* 77/459

-use

excluse, *pp.*
refuse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/277
use, *inf.* 217/275
excuse, *inf.*
excuse, *imper.* 215/229
refuse, *imper.* 215/228
excuse, *imper.*
excuse, *inf.* 215/226
refuse, *imper.* 215/228
infuse, *pp.*
use, *inf.* 198/322
recluse, *obj.*
use, *inf.* 218/307
refuse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*
excluse, *pp.* 217/278
use, *inf.* 217/275
refuse, *imper.*
excuse, *imper.* 215/229
excuse, *inf.* 215/226
refuse, *inf.*
use, *inf.* 201/398
use, *inf.*
excluse, *pp.* 217/278
infuse, *pp.* 198/321
recluse, *obj.* 218/308
refuse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/277
refuse, *inf.* 201/399

-used

excused, *pp.*
used, *pp.* 16/421
used, *pp.*
excused, *pp.* 16/423

-useth

enfuseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
useth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 181/50
useth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*
enfuseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 181/52

-utte

cutte, *imper.*
putte, *inf.* 56/353
putte, *inf.*
cutte, *imper.* 56/351

NOTE ON THE RYME INDEX.

The Ryme Index to "Palladius on Husbondrie" here printed was originally begun by the late Rev. Barton Lodge, the Editor of the text. But little, however, was completed at the time of his death, and the work was then taken up by Mr. Henry Cromie, already well known for his Chaucer ryme index. Unfortunately, in the summer of last year, his health gave way, and he was in consequence compelled to give up literary work for a time, and the task was passed over to me. Mr. Cromie had, however, before his illness, prepared a considerable portion of the work for the press, and my share was proportionately lightened, being confined to the arranging of some of the later slips under their proper heads and the seeing the sheets through the press.

In carrying out the notice printed at the beginning of the ryme index as to incorrect or apparently incorrect rymes, the scribe's spelling was taken as the criterion. Experience, however, has convinced me that this was a mistake, for his extreme carelessness and his inconsistency in the use of the final *-e*[1] have completely spoilt many rymes

[1] At the same time it is only fair to the scribe to draw attention to Mr. Lodge's note at the beginning of the text, as it is quite possible that the curls or flourishes which he has disregarded in printing the text, may really have been "marks of contraction," and have represented, in some cases at least, a final *-e*. Moreover, it will be seen from Mr. Lodge's *Corrigenda* that the omission of the final *-e* is in many cases the fault of neither the author nor the scribe. The existence of this list of corrections was unfortunately not known to me until the greater number of the sheets of the Ryme Index had passed through the press, and its discovery necessitates some alterations in the Index which will be found pointed out at the end of Mr. Lodge's list.

which, as the author himself wrote them, were in all probability perfect. Most of these have been pointed out in the footnotes.

A few notes on Mr. Lodge's Introduction, etc., mainly by Mr. Henry Nicol, are here subjoined.

INTRODUCTION.

Page xii. *Boon*, bones, is not an *-n* plural. *Eyon* is an *-n* plural, not an *-er-en*.

The instances cited of supposed plurals of nouns in *-e* appear to be all singulars; it is a point of syntax, not inflexion.

Page xiii. There is no omission of *of* in the phrases given; as Professor Zupitza has pointed out in Sir Guy; they are remains of the old genitive construction, of which numerous instances might be adduced.

Page xiv. Adjective with *-es* in the plural. This appears very doubtful; *clennes* is not the plural of *clean*, but the noun *cleanness*. See Chaucer, Prologue, 505; the *Catholicon Anglicum* gives "Clennes; *honestas, puritas*," etc. *Eschew* is itself a very good adjective; O. French *eschiu*, "*Eschevé;* eschewed, shunned, avoided."—Cotgrave.

Page xv. *Bette* and *mo* are distinct from *better* and *more* in Old English.

Page xvii. *-liche* is not the original form of *-ly;* they are independent outcomes of *-līce*.

Page xviii. It is not that *to* has been "omitted before the infinitive," but *to* not inserted.

"*To* redundant before the imperative:" this seems doubtful, may it not be the intensitive use of the prefix *to*? See the note to 4/74.

Page xix. Nominative absolute. Is it the nominative? The first of the examples appears doubtful: "lycoure shed" may be the objective after the verb up-drie. In the fourth, *thaire* may, as elsewhere, mean *where*.

Mr. Lodge has entirely omitted to point out that the translator's English is full of Latin constructions; and that in consequence the word-order, etc., are frequently quite unnatural. A large proportion, too, of the words are Latin.

NOTES.

Page 221: 2/23. *Wholesome* was so spelt because people pronounced it with *wh-*, a *w* having developed from the labial vowel, as in *whore*, etc. It afterwards went into *h* as it did in *who*, *whoop*, etc.

Page 222: 15/400. "In . . . . standard speech the final guttural was no doubt silent." Just the speech in which we know, from the 16th century grammarians, that it was not silent.

15/402. "Yo;" query if not a scribal error for *yno*, sufficiently.

18/463. *Grece* (plural of *gre*, a step) is in Richardson, with several examples. *Greece* in Bacon is one.

Page 223: 50/172. "It would seem as if the pronunciation . . . . varied with the spelling." Rather the spelling varies with the pronunciation.

Page 225: 69/236. Mr. Nicol proposes to read "maketh the" (thrive) for "ains the."

Page 226: 84/656. *Synk* for *cinc* (*cinq* is a false modern French spelling) is no more grotesque than *search* for *cercher*.

Page 228: 121/472. (*Nach-*)*ahmen* comes from O. French *aesmer* (whence English *aim*); and is not old Teutonic at all. What *harme* here does mean it seems impossible to say; probably there is some error on the part of the scribe.

Page 229: 153/129. It seems more probable that the *first*, not the *second*, syllable of the last word of the line is wanting. Query read *temperate* for *ther ate*?

GLOSSARY.

Atteroppes, read Attercoppes.

Browsty: reference should be 219/344.

Burgyne: reference should be 55/307.
Cannibe: reference is wrong.
Caprify, read Caprifie: reference should be 125/592.
Cave upon: *dele* the comma between these words.
Chaunging: the reference is wrong; read 7/163.
Cloft, 89/795: omitted: probably an error for *alofte* or *olofte*.
Couthe, could: *dele* the *could:* the reference should be 39/1061.
Entere: reference should be 11/279.
Ereither: for 397/75, read 75/397.
Foolde: references should be 37/1021, 88/770.
Medessyng, read Medissyng: reference should be 29/797.
Pastyne, 210/86: read Pastyn.
P'ymnent, read P'mynent.
Portulake, Lat. *pursulain*. The English is *purslain*, Lat. *portulaca*.
Pike, 186/194: *dele*.
Stanry, 86/701: read Stannry, 86/708.
Sterve is O. E. *steorfan* (cognate with G. *sterben*).
Stulpes: the reference should be 32/1054.
Teete, read Tecte.
There, thereas: in second line omit *thou*.
Tort: reference should be 107/83; add 159/33.

S. J. H.

CORRIGENDA.

The Editor laments to find so many instances of incorrectness—

"quas aut incuria fudit
Aut humana parum cavit natura."

He can only point them out, and beg the benignant reader to amend them with his pen. Many of them relate to the final *e*.—B. L.

2/23, *read* hoole, stande.
2/29, ,, depe are noone.
2/31, ,, wele.
3/40, ,, smelle.
3/53, ,, swelle.
3/56, ,, doubte.
3/62, ,, and.
3/63, ,, noone.
5/105, ,, espie.
5/111, ,, therfore.
7/153, ,, sayen.
8/184, ,, uppe.
8/189, ,, tourne.
8/193, ,, lande.
8/200, ,, lande.
9/235, the 2nd "seed" should have the final *e*.
9/236, *read* greyne.
10/254, ,, maner.
10/260, ,, trymenstre.
11/281, ,, beye.
11/291, ,, fresshe.
12/303, ,, wilt.
12/314, *read* atte.
12/315, ,, grounde.
13/335, ,, tymbre.
13/338, ,, weel or.
14/366, ,, sette.
15/400, ,, ygrounde.
17/446, ,, lete.
20/525, ,, goode.
20/528, ,, eschewe.
20/532, ,, turne oute
21/562, ,, faate.
22/577, ,, askes.
22/594, ,, grounde.
25/678, ,, bespronge.
27/723, ,, maner.
29/771, ,, helpe.
29/775, ,, tyllinge.
29/786, ,, walle.
30/826, ,, doone.
31/837, ,, shouell.
34/937, ,, hertes horne.
34/938, ,, lilee.
35/944, ,, soure.

36/973, *read* wreke.
37/1009, ,, yerde.
37/1012, ,, of *instead of* or.
37/1021, ,, terebyncte.
38/1026, ,, noon.
38/1043, ,, titimalle.
40/1094, ,, seetes.
40/1130, ,, sufflsantly bigge.
43/1170, ,, imus.
44/5, ,, alle.
44/7, ,, alle.
45/33, ,, nowe.
45/35, ,, assaileth.
46/65, ,, so.
47/81, ,, thenne.
47/97, ,, breres.
48/114, so in MS., but qu.? discusseth?=*divide*. Imperative.
48/115, *read* twyes.
49/146, ,, swete.
49/149, ,, wrecched.
49/152, ,, sleck.
52/219, ,, houre.
52/234, ,, tempur.
54/288, ,, moone.
54/291, ,, atwene.
54/300, ,, stoone.
55/311, ,, water.
55/329, ,, propre.
56/349, side-note *read* or.
57/371, *read* copron.
59/414, ,, nowe.
59/417, ,, therin.
59/435, ,, nowe.
61/19, ,, an.
62/42, ,, feire.
63/64, *read* saie.
64/104, ,, doune.
65/110, *insert at beginning* "The same."
65/112, *read in* wynde.
65/132, ,, in an acre.
65/162, *space for a word should have been left before* "besinesse," *probably* "better."
67/177, *read* lite.
67/188, ,, ende.
68/195, ,, maner.
71/292, ,, ramal.
72/308, ,, kerve.
73/347, ,, And.
74/370, ,, yshave *for* "& shave."
75/386, *read* And.
76/437, ,, cley and mose.
78/476, ,, settyng.
78/479, side-note, *read* no plants.
79/513, *read* eree.
80/538, ,, lilly.
81/556, ,, benygne.
81/559, ,, is goode to sowe.
86/702, ,, warme.
86/704, ,, ther.
87/730, ,, swete.
88/750, ,, lete.
89/782, ,, puld.
89/789, *remove comma to next word.*
89/790, *read* contynuelly.
90/829, *before* hem *insert* trede.
92/870, *read* "scrape" *in both places.*

92/882, *read* faire *instead of* save.
97/1005, ,, Moche.
97/1015, ,, boringe.
98/1037, ,, out.
98/1057, ,, vive.
101/1114, ,, halde.
102/1149, ,, of *instead of* as.
104/1, ,, atte.
106/61, ,, luke water.
109/157, ,, hem *after* touche.
110/164, ,, grene.
111/206, ,, benygne.
116/337, ,, the trunke.
116/355, ,, firthe.
117/370, ,, seyointe, *i.e.* sejunctæ.
117/378, ,, in this *instead of* [this or
119/441, ,, handes.
120/445, ,, ytild *instead of* and tild.
120/446, ,, enclose.
120/454, ,, so be *instead of* so that.
122/509, ,, yit.
122/521, ,, graffed.
124/570, ,, is holde.
127/665, ,, brynnyng.
133/786, ,, other.
133/792, ,, buttockes.
134/826, ,, droves.
134/839, a whole line omitted. See Note.
135/845, *read* Prikker, *i.e.* Rider.
136/883, ,, malincoly.
136/888, ,, remove comma after nare.
136/897, *read* colours.
140/9, ,, atte.
141/45, ,, thi.
142/65, ,, kyndes.
142/69, in side-note, petroselinon.
145/153, *read* commyxt.
146/177, remove stop at end.
146/181, *read* sewe.
147/205, ,, slee.
149/5, ,, owe *instead of* are.
149/13, ,, wende.
149/21, ,, matier.
150/25, ,, noo.
150/38, ,, ayeine.
150/46, ,, stocke.
152/103, ,, this.
152/104, ,, enlyne.
153/128, ,, lupynys.
155/166, ,, *dele semicolon.*
156/199, ,, and.
157/237, ,, drope.
160/71, ,, stondyng.
162/119, ,, shepe.
162/126, ,, drie *instead of* done.
163/127, ,, sifte.
163/136, ,, ooen.
163/141, ,, xxii.
163/144, ,, chaire.
163/148, ,, ymne.
166/51, ,, wattred.
168/119, ,, ikeste.
170/165, ,, yit.
170/168, ,, prince I mene.
171/7, ,, vynes roote.
172/46, ,, besinesse.
176/134, ,, uppe.

176/138, *read* rounde.
179/1, *remove comma.*
179/2, *read* humoure.
180/22, ,, atte.
180/34, *remove comma to* "come," *in next line.*
181/50, *read* wilde.
182/87, ,, pike.
182/102, ,, lenghte.
185/163, ,, Feveryere.
185/183, in side-note *read* diamoron.
186/197, ,, devite, &c.
186/215, ,, Him.
188/28, ,, graffes.
191/128, ,, fedde.
191/130, *insert comma at end.*
192/152, *read* Nowe eke.
194/194, *read* ther rise.
196/254, *remove comma to after* herbe.
196/258, *read* ryvullynge.
196/261, ,, and.
197/275, *place comma at* "afferme."
197/280, *read* socoured.
201/387, ,, cors.
203/469, ,, parte.
204/488, ,, nys.
206/539, ,, beforn.
208/26, ,, ther on.
209/65, ,, wol.
212/154, ,, stocke.
213/177, ,, this.
216/271, *full stop after* "wepe."
219/333, *read* Feveryere.

Other readings which Mr. Skeat, in the *Academy*, has specified as probable errors, are printed as in the MS., e.g. *oons*, 114/293; *ons*, 147/214; *thens*, 30/818; *een*, 129/677; *colours*, 133/804.

Consequent on the above the following corrections should be made in the Ryme Index:—

Page 260, l. 17, the footnote refers to the heading **ayne is.**
,, 266, col. 2, *dele heading* **-and.**
,, 267, col. 1, ll. 23–37, *for* land *read* lande.
,, 272, col. 2, *under* **-aunce** *add to* abundaunce, fecundaunce, *obl.* 134/838; pleasaunce, *obl.* 134/836.
,, 273, col. 1, l. 4, *to* fecundaunce *add* abundaunce, *obj.* 134/839.
,, 273, col. 1, l. 10, *to* pleasaunce *add* abundaunce, *obj.* 134/839.

Page 286, col. 1, under heading **-een** *for* atween *read* atwene, *dele the asterisks, and transfer to p.* 298, *col.* 2, *under the heading* **-ene.**

,, 290, col. 1, *dele all under heading* **-eir.**

,, 290, col. 2, l. 4, *for* feir *read* feire; *dele* *.

,, 290, col. 2, l. 8, *under* feire, *a. pl., add* appeire, *inf.* 62/41.

,, 295, col. 2, *dele all under heading* **-end.**

,, 296, col. 2, l. 29, *for* end *read* ende; *dele* *.

,, 297, col. 1, l. 13, *add* descende, *inf.* 67/189.

,, 322, col. 2, l. 11, *add* multiplice, (*sic*) 162/125.

,, 327, col. 1, *under heading* **-igne**, *dele* **-ynge**, *and add under* benygne, *a. sing.*, assigne, *inf.* 81/554; vyne, *obl.* 71/299.

,, 334, col. 1, *under* **-ing**, l. 4, *for* boring *read* boringe, *dele the asterisk from* bringe, *and transfer to p.* 335 under **-inge.**

,, 334, col. 2, *for* ryvullyng *read* ryvullynge, *dele asterisk from* sprynge, *and transfer to p.* 336, *col.* 1.

,, 334, col. 2, *for* tyllyng *read* tyllynge, *dele the asterisks and transfer to p.* 336, *col.* 2.

,, 332, col. 1, *under* lupyne, *obl., dele* fyne is, *and* wynys *and* footnote 1.

,, 333, col. 2, ll. 6 and 24, *for* lupyne *read* lupynys.

,, 333, col. 2, *under heading* **-ynys**, *for* lupyne *read* lupynys, *and add* lupynys, *obl.*, fyne is, 153/131, wynys, *n. pl.* 153/130, *and dele* footnote 3.

,, 339, col. 2, *under* **-is**, *for* thus *read* this; *dele* *.

,, 346, col. 1, *last line but one, for* serjointe *read* seyointe.

STEPHEN AUSTIN AND SONS, PRINTERS, HERTFORD.

The Publications for 1870–7 (*One Guinea each year*) *are* :—

40. English Gilds, their Statutes and Customs, 1389 A.D. Ed. Toulmin Smith, and Miss L. T. Smith, with an Essay, on 'Gilds and Trades-Unions,' by Dr. Lujo Brentano. 21*s*. 1870
41. William Lauder's Minor Poems. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq. 3*s*. 1870
42. Bernardus De Cura Rei Familiaris, &c. Ed. by J. R. Lumby, M.A. 2*s*. 1870
43. Ratis Raving, and other Moral and Religious Pieces. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 3*s*. 1870

44. The Alliterative Romance of Joseph of Arimathie, from the Vernon MS.; with Wynkyn de Worde's and Pynson's Lives of Joseph; ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 5*s*. 1871
45. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, with Eng. transl., and the Lat. origl., by H. Sweet, Esq., of Balliol College, Oxford. Part I. 10*s*. 1871
46. Legends of the Holy Rood, Symbols of the Passion and Cross Poems, in Old English. Edited by the Rev. Richard Morris, LL.D. 10*s*. 1871
47. Sir David Lyndesay's Works. Part V. Ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 3*s*. 1871
48. The Times' Whistle, and other Poems, by R.C., 1616, ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6*s*. 1871

49. An Old English Miscellany, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, and Religious Poems of the 13th Cent., ed. from MSS. by Rev. Dr. Morris. 10*s*. 1872
50. West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care. Ed. H. Sweet, M.A. Part II. 10*s*. 1872
51. The Lifade of St. Juliana, ed. by T. O. Cockayne and E. Brock. 2*s*. 1872
52. Palladius on Husbondrie, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.), ed. Rev. B. Lodge, M.A. Part I. 10*s*. 1872

53. Old English Homilies, Series II., and three Hymns to the Virgin and God, 13th-century, with the music to two of them, in old and modern notation; ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 8*s*. 1873
54. The Vision of Piers Plowman, Text C.: Richard the Redeless (by William, the author of the *Vision*); and The Crowned King; ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18*s*. 1873
55. Generydes, a Romance, ab. 1440 A.D., ed. W. Aldis Wright, Esq. Part I. 8*s*. 1873

56. The Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy, in alliterative verse; ed. D. Donaldson, and Rev. G. A. Panton. Part II. 10*s*. 6*d*. 1874
57. The Early English Version of the "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, edited by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I. with 2 photolithographic facsimiles. 10*s*. 6*d*. 1874
58. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I. 8*s*. 1874

59. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. Morris. Part II. 15*s*. 1875
60. Meditacyuns on the Soper of Our Lorde (perhaps by Robert of Brunne), edited from the MSS. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 2*s*. 6*d*. 1875
61. The Romance and Prophicies of Thomas of Erceldoune, printed from five MSS.; edited by Dr. James A. H. Murray. 10*s*. 6*d*. 1875

62. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. Morris. Part III. 15*s*. 1876
63. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. Morris. Part II. 4*s*. 1876
64. Thynne's Emblemes and Epigrams, A.D. 1600, ed. by F. J. Furnivall. 4*s*. 1876
65. Be Domes Dæge, etc. Ed. J. R. Lumby, B.D. 2*s*. 1876

66. The "Cursor Mundi." in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. Morris. Part IV. with 2 Autotypes. 10*s*. 1877
67. Notes on Piers Plowman, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 21*s*. 1877

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1867–1873 (*One Guinea each year*) *are* :—

I. William of Palerne. Re-edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 13*s*. 1867
II. Early English Pronunciation; with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part I. 10*s*. 1867

III. Caxton's Book of Curtesye, in Three Versions. Ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5*s*. 1868
IV. Havelok the Dane. Re-edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat. 10*s*. 1868
V. Chaucer's Boethius. Edited from the two best MSS. by Rev. Dr. Morris. 12*s*. 1868
VI. Chevelere Assigne. Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. Gibbs, Esq. 3*s*. 1868

VII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part II. 10*s*. 1869
VIII. Queene Elizabethes Achademy, etc. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. With Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. Rossetti, and Dr. E. Oswald. 13*s*. 1869
IX. Awdeley's Fraternitye of Vacabondes, Harman's Caveat, etc. Edited by E. Viles and F. J. Furnivall. 7*s*. 6*d*. 1869

X. Boorde's Introduction of Knowledge, 1547, and Dyetary of Helth, 1542; Barnes in Defence of the Berde, 1542-3. Ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 18*s*. 1870
XI. Barbour's Bruce, Part I. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12*s*. 1870

XII. England in Henry VIII.'s Time: a Dialog[illegible] between Cardinal Pole and Lupset, by Thomas Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Ed. J. M. Cowper, Esq. Part II. 12*s*. (Part I. is No. XXXII., 1878, 8*s*.) 1871
XIII. A Supplicacyon of the Beggers, by Sir [illegible]n Fish, 1528-9 A.D., ed. F. J. Furnivall; with A Supplicacyon to our moste Soueraign Lorde; A Supplication of the Poore Commons; and The Decaye of England by the Great Multitude of Sheep, ed. J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6*s*. 1871
XIV. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part III. 10*s*. 1871

XV. Robert Cr[illegible] 1550-[illegible]owley's Thirty-one Epigrams, Voyce of the Last Trumpet, Way to Wealth, etc. 1872
XVI. Chau[illegible]1 A.D., edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12*s*. 1872
XVII. Th[illegible]er's Treatise on the Astrolabe. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6*s*. 1872
Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with an Appendix of four contemporary English [illegible]acts (1542-48), edited by Dr. J. A. H. Murray. Part I. 10*s*. 1872
XVIII. [illegible] 1873
XIX. [illegible]he Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., ed. Dr. Murray. Part II. 8*s*. 1873
[illegible]our Ladyes Myrroure, A.D. 1530, ed. Rev. J. H. Blunt, M.A. 24*s*.

Early English Text Society.

The Subscription, which constitutes membership, is £1 1*s.* a year [and £1 1*s.* (Large Paper, £2 12*s.* 6*d.*) additional for the EXTRA SERIES], due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid either to the Society's Account at the Head Office of the Union Bank, Princes Street, London, E.C., or by Cheque or Money-Order (made payable at the Chief Office, London) to the Hon. Secretary, W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Stroud Green, Finsbury Park, London, N., and crosst 'Union Bank.' (United-States Subscribers must pay for duty and carriage to the States 3*s.* a year extra for the Original Series, and 2*s.* a year for the Extra Series.) The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists.

ORIGINAL SERIES.

The Publications for 1879 *will be chosen from :—*

71. THE LAY FOLK'S MASS-BOOK, four Texts, ed. by the Rev. Canon Simmons. 15*s.*
72. PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.). Part II. Ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 5*s.*

SELECT ENGLISH WORKS OF WYCLIF, ed. F. D. Matthew, Esq. [*In the Press.*
MERLIN, Part IV., containing Preface, Index, and Glossary. Edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq.
THE BLICKLING HOMILIES, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III.

Preparing :—

CATHOLICON ANGLICUM, ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A., Introduction by H. B. Wheatley. [*In the Press*
BEOWULF, the unique MS. autotyped and transliterated, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat.
KING ALFRED'S OROSIUS, from Lord Tollemache's 9th century MS., ed. H. Sweet, M.A.
PIERS PLOWMAN: Notes, Glossary, etc. Part II. Ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat.
METRICAL PSALMS, ab. 1360 AD., ed. John Wood.
GAWAYNE POEMS, ed. F. J. Vipan, M.A.
WILLIAM OF NASSINGTON'S MIRROR OF LIFE, ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A.
ALL THE EARLY ENGLISH VERSE LIVES OF SAINTS, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann.
PILGRIMAGE OF THE LYFE OF MANHODE, in the Northern Dialect, ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A.
ANGLO-SAXON AND EARLY ENGLISH PSALTERS, ed. W. Aldis Wright and J. Wood.
ANGLO-SAXON METRICAL LIVES OF SAINTS, in MS. Cot. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A.
EARLY ENGLISH HOMILIES, 13th century, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.
THE RULE OF ST. BENET: 5 Texts, Anglo-Saxon, Early English, Caxton, etc., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.
CURSOR MUNDI. Part V. Introduction, Notes, and Glossary, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.
GOSPEL OF NICODEMUS, ed. Prof. Wülcker.
ALAIN CHARTIER'S QUADRILOGUS, englisht, ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A.

The Publications for 1878 (*One Guinea*) *are:* —

68. THE "CURSOR MUNDI," in 4 Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part V. 25*s.*
69. ADAM DAVIE'S 5 DREAMS ABOUT EDWARD II., etc., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5*s.*
70. GENERYDES, a Romance, ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part II. 4*s.*

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1879 *will be chosen from :—*

XXXIII. GESTA ROMANORUM (englisht ab. 1440), ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15*s.*
XXXIV. THE CHARLEMAGNE ROMANCES:—1. SIR FERUMBRAS, from the Ashm. MS. 33, ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15*s.*
ANOTHER ALLITERATIVE ROMANCE OF ALEXANDER, ed. Rev. Prof. W. W. Skeat, M.A., and J. H. Hessels.
BARBOUR'S BRUCE, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. Part IV.

Preparing :—

THE TAILL OF RAUF COLYEAR, ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. CHARLEMAGNE ROMANCES, ed. S. J. Herrtage.
SIR BEVIS OF HAMTON, ed. Dr. E. Kölbing. IPOMYDON, ed. J. Wood.
GUY OF WARWICK (14th cent. or Auchinleck MS., version), ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray and Prof. Zupitza. Part I.
ROBERT OF BRUNNE'S HANDLYNG SYNNE, A.D., 1303, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A.
LONELICH'S HOLY GRAIL, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. Part V.

The Publications for the years 1874—1878 (*One Guinea each year*) *are :—*

XX. LONELICH'S HISTORY OF THE HOLY GRAIL (ab. 1450 A.D.), from the French of Sires Robiers de Borron, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. Part I. 8*s.* 1874
XXI. BARBOUR'S BRUCE, Part II., ed. Rev. W. Skeat, M.A. 4*s.* 1874
XXII. HENRY BRINKLOW'S COMPLAYNT OF RODERYCK MORS (ab. 1542); and THE LAMENTACION OF A CHRISTIAN AGAINST THE CITIE OF LONDON, made by Roderigo Mors, A.D. 1545. Edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 9*s.* 1874
XXIII. EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part IV. 10*s.* 1874

XXIV. LONELICH'S HISTORY OF THE HOLY [illegible]L, ed. F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. Part II. 10*s.* 1875
XXV. GUY OF WARWICK, 15th century Ver[illegible], ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 20*s.* 1875

XXVI. GUY OF WARWICK, 15th century Version, [illegible] Prof. Zupitza. Part II. 14*s.* 1876
XXVII. THE ENGLISH WORKS OF JOHN FISHER, [illegible] of Rochester (died 1535), edited by Prof. J. E. B. Mayor, M.A. Part I., the Text. 16*s.* 1876

XXVIII. LONELICH'S HOLY GRAIL, ed. F. J. Furniv[illegible] Part III. 10*s.* 1877
XXIX. BARBOUR'S BRUCE. Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 21*s.* 1877

XXX. LONELICH'S HOLY GRAIL, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. Part IV. 15*s.* 1878
XXXI. THE ALLITERATIVE ROMANCE OF ALEXANDER AND DINDIMUS, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6*s.* 1878
XXXII STARKEY'S "ENGLAND IN HENRY VIII.'s TIME." Part I. STARKEY'S LIFE AND LETTERS, ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 8*s.* 1878

LONDON: N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 53, MOHRENSTRASSE.

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

AUG 29 1963 H

00-0[illegible]10

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

AUG 29 1963 H

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

AUG 29 1963 H

00 0[illegible]10

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

AUG 29 1963 H

00-0[illegible]10

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

AUG 29 1963 H

00 0[illegible]10